

Chapter 1501 - First Place

Chapter 1501: First Place

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Damn it. How can I possibly fight Chu Siyuan? That Princess Luosha is just trying to use me to check Chu Siyuan. I can’t believe anything Princess Luosha says.”

Qiu Yu was pissed, but sadly, he didn’t have a choice but to fight Chu Siyuan.

He couldn’t go back to Kunlun’s Field anymore, so he couldn’t lose the support of Princess Luosha.

...

Princess Luosha threw out the Merits Record Wall, which flew in the sky like a stone mountain.

Zhang Ruochen rushed toward the Merits Record Wall and jumped up.

He immediately felt a great danger going after him, so he took out the Monument Shield to ward it off.

Boom!

A saint sword hit the Monument Shield, forming circles of energy ripples, knocking Zhang Ruochen away.

The saint sword flew back to Sword Master Dongliu’s hand.

There was a boat engulfed in flames under Sword Master Dongliu’s feet. He was wearing iron armor, and his eyes were gleaming.

That boat was made of the wood of a saint tree which was a supreme saint. If the inscriptions in the boat were triggered, the boat would become a large ship with great defense power.

There was a teenager sitting at the end of the boat, glowing with saint light. His eyes were blood-red.

He was the priest of Hell Blade Field, Xue Lingfeng.

Zhang Ruochen stood on a branch of the Divine Phoenix Tree and said, "Why are you here?"

"We're, of course, here to seize the Merits Record Wall. We don't want Hell Blade Field to be ranked last, and we can probably get first place in the Saints Merits Battle."

Sword Master Dongliu said, "Fang Yi and Yue Kong are leading a large group of saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field to fight the Luosha armies. We're only here for the Merits Record Wall and Ice and Fire Phoenix inheritance."

Xue Lingfeng smiled. "Thanks for the message, by the way, otherwise we wouldn't have known the Luosha race deployed three million marquises to Zuling Field. However, the Merits Record Wall will decide the fate of Hell Blade Field, so we have to fight for it."

"You shouldn't have come here. You might both get killed."
"Zhang Ruochen looked up and saw the Merits Record Wall falling into the ocean. He then rushed forward like a trace of light.

Whoosh!

Sword Master Dongliu performed human sword, flew out of the boat and rushed to stop Zhang Ruochen.

Meanwhile, Xue Lingfeng rushed to the Merits Record Wall.

Bang Bang!

This wasn't the first time Zhang Ruochen fought Sword Master Dongliu, so they both knew each other's skills and moves.

Two sword shadows kept clashing with each other, raising the waves on Cold Ocean. Thousands of traces of sword Qi filled the ocean.

Zhang Ruochen exchanged more than two hundred moves in three seconds.

“I’ll take your Sword Technique of Time again, Zhang Ruochen.”

Sword Master Dongliu was defeated by Sword Technique of Time last time, so he’d been thinking about a way to crack it.”

He eventually found out there were only two ways to deal with it.

The first method was to get out of the time domain before Zhang Ruochen performed Sword Technique of Time.

The second method was to strike first to prevent Zhang Ruochen from performing it.

Sword Technique of Time was flawless, but Zhang Ruochen wasn’t.

“I’ll have my chance.”

Zhang Ruochen looked to Xue Lingfeng, and he saw that Xue Lingfeng didn’t get the Merits Record Wall, as he’d encountered a powerful enemy.

His enemy looked familiar. It seemed he was from Tianmu Field.

Obviously, all the Shatuo Seven Fields sent at least one top-tier being to seize the Merits Record Wall and Ice and Phoenix Inheritance while they were fighting Luosha armies.

Where did the other great beings go?

Zhang Ruochen reckoned the great beings from Great Devil Ten Square Field and Eight Ministry Field sent their great beings to the Phoenix Nest as they were the strongest ones. As for Hell Blade Field, Kunlun’s Field, and Tianmu Field, they were relatively weak, so they wanted to get to the top in the Saint Merits Battle, so they would go for the Merits Record Wall first.

Sword Master Dongliu’s cultivation had improved again, as he was very close to a half-step saint king now. He managed to

hold off Zhang Ruochen for a long time, giving Xue Lingfeng enough time to seize the Merits Record Wall.

“There must be other great beings from the Luosha race coming. I need to finish the fight quickly.” Zhang Ruochen took out the Buddha sarira and put his palm on it. And then, tens of thousands of Buddha characters gushed out of the sarira, forming a golden dragon that was more than a thousand feet long.

The original power of the supreme saint merged with the golden dragon.

Sword Master Dongliu stepped back hundreds of feet. He held the sword above his head, and then, the phantom of a supreme saint emerged at the tip of the sword. Its original power gushed out.

That saint sword was also a supreme saint ancient weapon.

Boom!

The golden dragon and the phantom of the supreme saint clashed with each other, and they neutralized each other's power.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen performed Time Technique of Sword, hitting toward the heart of Sword Master Dongliu like a trace of light.

“No...”

Right after Sword Master Dongliu realized what happened, he felt a cold power piercing through his body.

It was Zhang Ruochen's Abyss Ancient Sword.

Even though Sword Master Dongliu's original body was a human being, he was still injured. He was knocked more than ten miles away by the sword's power.

“I was defeated... Again...”

Sword Master Dongliu found it difficult to accept his defeat. He was the great talent who had never been defeated in Purple Mansion, yet he was crushed after coming to the merits battle, first by Princess Luosha, then by Zhang Ruochen twice.

It was a huge blow to his confidence.

Zhang Ruochen said while glaring at Sword Master Dongliu, “Both Time Technique of Sword and Zhang Ruochen are flawless. If you want to defeat me, finish Sword Eight first.”

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen then rushed to where Xue Lingfeng and Li Mu were fighting. The Merits Record Wall was floating above the battlefield, and a wind was preventing it from falling.

Li Mu was a half-step saint from Tianmu Field. He was stronger than Mad Man.

Zhang Ruochen stopped when he was only three miles away. He mobilized his saint Qi and grabbed forward, trying to seize the Merits Record Wall using spatial twist.

Xue Lingfeng and Li Mu stopped fighting, attacking Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He had to stop trying to get the Merits Record Wall and performed space power to crush the space around Xue Lingfeng and Li Mu.

They weren't able to fight against the space power, so they had to try to dodge the crumbling space.

“Come.”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Merits Record Wall, and then, he took out the bottle which contained lots of Luosha fragmented souls to turn them into merits.

“Don't you dare, Zhang Ruochen.”

Xue Lingfeng took out a five-foot fan, triggering the ten thousand inscriptions on the iron. He flapped the fan, and then, wind blades flew out.

Li Mu performed a saint spell, forming a phantom of a black snake. Suddenly, the sky above Pluto Winter Cold Ocean turned dark.

Sword Master Dongliu wielded his saint sword, triggering its original power.

The three great beings attacked Zhang Ruochen at the same time to stop Zhang Ruochen from exchanging merits. Once he succeeded, Guanghan Field would top the list, then Zhang Ruochen would destroy the Merits Record Wall, which meant there would be no chance for them to change anything in the Saint Merits Battle.

Zhang Ruochen opened almost all of his one-hundred and forty-four apertures, and saint Qi gushed out, holding Buddha sarira. The golden Buddha light emanated from the sarira, covering the Merits Record Wall.

Guanghan's Field's merits kept surging.

However, the defense formed by the sarira was being crushed by the three great beings, so time was precious now. Even a breath of time could decide how things ended.

The supreme saints, half saints and billions of other creatures in Guanghan Field were the most anxious.

They could see the danger Zhang Ruochen was facing, and they could see their merits changing.

“Quick! Quicker!”

“Why do I feel like the merits are increasing so slowly?”

“Please hold them off, Zhang Ruochen!”

...

Even the supreme saints were holding their breath, as they couldn't be more worried.

After a short while, the merits of Guanghan Field surpassed those of Great Devil Ten Square Field, getting to the first place.

All the creatures in Guanghan Field yelled in excitement. Some of them were shouting Zhang Ruochen's name, some were tearing about on the streets, and some crushed the tables in restaurants.

They were acting manically because of how exhilarated they were.

The supreme saints from Guanghan Field also guffawed.

As long as Guanghan Field could top the Saints Merits Battle, it wouldn't be rendered the next battlefield, which meant they would survive longer.

Zhang Ruochen was relieved and smiled. He then raised his head and saw that the defense golden light only had one last layer.

He then performed spatial move and vanished with Buddha sarira.

The attacks of Sword Master Dongliu, Xue Lingfeng, and Li Mu all hit the Merits Record Wall, making deafening sounds.

Chapter 1502 - Rules of Merits Godly Palace

Chapter 1502: Rules of Merits Godly Palace

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Whoosh!

Three traces of godly light pierced through the clouds and fell on the Merit Record Wall, covering it completely.

The attack power from the three power beings was all warded off, and they didn't even manage to touch the wall.

Sword Saint Dongliu, Xue Lingfeng, and Li Mu were all relieved as the Merits Record Wall was still intact.

But then, they all looked confused, as they wondered where the godly light came from.

The one who had wielded that trace of light must have been a being who had a way stronger cultivation than saints, or Gods.

Zhang Ruochen was also dazed. He looked up at the sky to look for an answer.

Bang!

The Merits Record Wall fell on Pluto Ice Cold Ocean, but instead of sinking in, it was floating on the ocean. Three-colored godly light flowed on the wall.

Supreme Saint Manjian yelled at the sky, "Who interfered with the Saints Merits Battle!?"

The supreme saints from Guanghan Field were all infuriated as they found that the trace of godly light came from Merits

Record Palace. Obviously, someone prominent from Heaven World protected the Merits Record Wall.

A cluster of three-colored godly cloud showed up, and terrific godly might came out of the cloud.

A rumbling sound came out of the godly cloud. “There’re two days before the Saints Merits Battle is over, and before that, nobody can destroy the Merits Record Wall.”

Even the supreme saints felt pressured facing the godly might.

However, they had to step forward for the fate of Guanghai Field.

There were lots of restrictions on Gods in Heaven World. As long as they had the righteousness, supreme saints didn’t need to be afraid of Gods at all.

One of the three prominent beings from Guanghai Field, Emperor Jimie, walked out of the palace and looked at the godly cloud. “No creatures are allowed to interfere with the Merits Record Wall, not even Gods.”

The God said, “This is different. What’s the point of a Saints Battle if all the participants only think about destroying the Merits Record Wall instead of the evil races from hell?”

Emperor Jimie said, “Since you know it’s different this time, you should’ve ended it instead of letting the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields fight more than three million Luosha marquises. How many do you reckon will survive this?”

“Merits Godly Palace has its rules. The battle must last for three months, not one day more, not one day less.”

And then, the godly cloud disappeared before Emperor Jimie could argue against it again.

Emperor Jimie clenched his fist, making a cracking sound. He was so furious that he wanted to burn everything around him to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen put his life at risk so many times to help Guanghai Field get to first place in the Saints Merits Battle, yet his efforts might have been in vain because of the interference of Merits Godly Palace.

There were still two days until the Saints Merits Battle ended, so it was almost impossible to guard the wall for two days.

“If I become a God one day, I’ll definitely slay his godly soul,” Emperor Jimie aid.

Wu Zu said, “Moon Goddess and Tree God are coming back soon. They’ll appeal to the Merits Godly Palace after that.”

Supreme Saints Nine Spirits said, “What Merits Godly Palace did was indeed unfair. They changed the rules when they wanted but didn’t allow the battle to be over. When the Gods from the Shatuo Seven Fields come back, they’ll not let it slide easily.”

...

Zuling Field, Pluto Ice Cold Ocean.

Nobody knew what had happened exactly, but they knew that it was impossible to destroy the last Merits Record Wall, which meant they might still stand a chance.

Sword Master Dongliu, Xue Lingfeng, and Li Mu all looked pleased.

Just as they were about to seize the Merits Record Wall, a laughing sound came from afar, and the sound waves made the water in Pluto Winter Ocean tumble.

“Interesting. How interesting. Looks like the Gods from Heaven World don’t want this battle to end.”

Lord Lingquan showed up on a Xuanwu Shell, followed by more than ten first marquises. They were all smiling while engulfed in belligerence.

Everyone who was present realized the danger upon seeing the great beings from the Luosha race.

Sword Master Dongliu took a look at Zhang Ruochen and Li Mu. “Let’s fight the Luosha race first before fighting for the Merits Record Wall. How about that?”

“Sure thing,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Li Mu also nodded.

Although they were all powerful beings, they couldn't rival more than ten first marquises individually. The only way to level the playing field was to team up.

Lord Lingquan took out a purple stone and pinched it. "No need to fight for anything. None of you are going to survive today."

Godly inscriptions showed up on Lord Lingquan's skin, making both his defense and attack power stronger.

Boom!

Lord Lingquan dashed forward from the Xuanwu Shell like an artillery bomb, and he wielded his fist against the boat that Sword Saint Dongliu and Xue Lingfeng were on.

His fist mark turned into a purple cloud.

Sword Master Dongliu's eyes glinted fiercely, and his sword intent exploded. His sword clashed with Lord Lingquan's fist like a trace of light

Bang!

Sword light was dispelled while Sword Master Dongliu bounced back to the boat. His hand that was holding the sword was shaking and bleeding.

As for Lord Lingquan's fist, it wasn't wounded at all.

Sword Master Dongliu had utilized all his strength, yet he couldn't hurt Lord Lingquan even a little bit.

"Lord Lingquan has a supreme complete body constitution, and there're godly inscriptions on his skin, making his body invincible. The purple godly stone can improve his attack power. Even a first-step saint king pales compared to him."

Sword Master Dongliu then mobilized his saint Qi with Xue Lingfeng and infused it into the boat they were sailing on.

The boat got larger and larger, and it turned into a giant ship that was a thousand feet long eventually. Inscriptions emerged on the ship, turning into a defense light screen, which protected Sword Master Dongliu and Xue Lingfeng.

Lord Lingquan landed back on the Xuanwu Shell and sneered, “You warded off my full-strength strike, impressive. If you defect to me, you’ll be highly valued in the future.”

“Defecting to the Luosha race? Are you kidding me?”

Sword Master Dongliu and Xue Lingfeng sailed the ship against Xuanwu Shell.

Marquis Crow, Marquis Blood Rain, Marquis Xiebai, Marquis Qizhen, and Marquis Thousand Feathers supported a shield that was made of the bones of a supreme saint, activating its original power and warding off the shock of that giant ship.

Zhang Ruochen saw the exchange between Sword Master Dongliu and Lord Lingquan, and he whispered, “He managed to hurt Sword Master Dongliu with one strike. Lord Lingquan must’ve become a half-step saint king already.”

Lord Lingquan was only a pinnacle absolute saint when he was fighting Nine Heavenly Maiden.

However, Lord Lingquan was way more powerful than before, so much so that even ordinary first-step saint kings might be killed by him.

Only first-step saint kings like Chu Siyuan and Yue Kong could suppress him.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen felt that he was being targeted. He looked to Xuanwu Shell, and he saw four first marquises dashing toward him.

He recognized two of them, both of whom were the most powerful first marquises under Lord Lingquan.

Marquis Xianling and Marquis Chengxuan.

Marquis Xianling was a Luosha girl whose mind power had reached level fifty-five.

As for Marquis Chengxuan, he could rival a first-step saint king.

They, assisted by another two powerful first marquises, were powerful enough to strike and kill a first-step saint king.

Marquis Xianling stood at a distance instead of getting close to Zhang Ruochen. She said, “Zhang Ruochen, you’re going to die today.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Even Princess Luosha wouldn’t say something so arrogant. Do you really think you can defeat me?”

“You’ve overestimated yourself. Her highness didn’t kill you because she still needed your help. Otherwise, you would’ve been long gone,” Marquis Chengxuan said.

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Marquis Chengxuan, and in the next moment, he was already right in front of Marquis Chengxuan. He then wielded a space crack.

Marquis Chengxuan was shocked, and he immediately moved to his right to dodge the space crack.

Crack!

Even so, Marquis Chengxuan’s left arm was cut off, and his left shoulder started to bleed like hell.

Before Marquis Chengxuan could form his arm again, Zhang Ruochen wielded his arm against Marquis Chengxuan’s neck, cutting his head off.

Everything happened so fast that even a real first-step marquis wouldn’t have been able to ward it off, not to mention Marquis Chengxuan.

However, Marquis Chengxuan was only severely injured. He immediately tried to run away to gather with the other three marquises.

“How tenacious.”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit confused, so he slapped toward Marquis Chengxuan’s head, but there was no lower abdomen or saint source in it.

Chapter 1503 - Murderous Intent Rising

Chapter 1503: Murderous Intent Rising

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Blinding saintly light shined from Marquis Chengxuan's navel. Then a mouth with sharp teeth appeared.

"My Sea of Qi is in my heart. I won't die even without a head."

Just then, he took out a battle map and laid it open before him. He pressed a hand onto it and forced out a beam of evil Qi.

Roar!

The map was activated instantly. A beast covered in chains charged out. The beast was more than 30 feet long and had menacing features. Its aura was comparable to a first-step Saint King.

"Attack and help the Young Lord kill Zhang Ruochen."

Marquis Chengxuan landed on the beast's head. He grabbed the Zhentian Spear, a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon, and activated its full power. A dark red circle of Holy Qi poured out of him.

On the other end, Marquis Qianjue and Marquis Wukun both activated their True Shadows. They charged at Zhang Ruochen from opposite directions.

One could only form the True Shadow after reaching the Absolute Saint Realm.

The True Shadow consisted of the most extreme Rules of Saintly Way. It harmonized with the world and could manipulate a part of the world's power. In other words, an Absolute Saint's combat power would increase greatly after activating the True Shadow.

This was one reason why a True Saint could never fight against an Absolute Saint.

Zhang Ruochen struck with his Abyss Ancient Sword, blocking Marquis Chengxuan and his beast from afar. At the same time, a fist print appeared on his arms. He performed the Luo Water Fist Technique.

“Blue Water and Clouds.”

The thousand-year Pluto Ice in the sea was affected by the fist technique and rose up loudly. It transformed into two dozen-mile-long rivers and spun around Zhang Ruochen.

The Luo Water Fist Technique was most suitable to be performed near water. Borrowing from the natural advantage could unleash the most power.

Zhang Ruochen had once stayed by the Luo Waterside for an entire year. In addition to drinking wine, he'd also studied the Luo Water Fist Technique. Now, he'd cultivated the technique to the ninth level.

Zhang Ruochen punched with both fists. The fist prints flew out with the two rivers, crashing against the power from Marquis Qianjue and Wukun.

Boom.

Boom.

The two first marquises were sent flying. Countless defensive runes on them cracked open.

The Thousand-year Nether Winter Snow had landed on them. Instantly, their bodies froze and turned numb. Their flesh stiffened and even the circulation of the Sha Qi inside of them slowed.

“Now is the best chance to kill them.”

Zhang Ruochen unleashed two long spatial cracks at Marquis Qianjue and Wukun.

“How dare you!”

Marquis Chengxuan roared and two thick chains flew from under the evil beast. They wrapped around the two first marquises and pulled them onto the beast’s back, saving their lives.

The two spatial cracks swallowed a great amount of the Thousand-year Nether Winter Snow before closing slowly. The space recovered once again.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed. He started practicing the fist technique on the water again. “Twenty-seventh move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Green Sea Waves.”

Affected by the fist technique, waves crashed on the sea surface. A wave more than 100 feet high rose up like a mountain and crashed down at the evil beast.

Even with Marquis Chengxuan, Qianjue and Wukun’s cultivations, they still felt a little unsteady, like the sky was about to fall down.

“Zhang Ruochen is indeed a powerful guy. His combat power is too strong.” Marquis Qianjue was stunned.

Just then, Marquise Xianling held a saintly cane and flew into the sky. With her strong Spiritual Power, she actually manipulated the Thousand-year Nether Winter Snow too.

Boom!

Two waves crashed together, unleashing a huge boom. Then they both collapsed at the same time.

The three first marquises on the beast’s back all let out relieved sighs.

Before them, only white vapor remained. It looked like fog covered the entire surface. They couldn’t see where Zhang Ruochen was hiding.

Marquis Chengxuan huffed coldly. “Zhang Ruochen, you aren’t a match for us four first marquises. If I were you, I

would escape immediately—”

Kaboom!

Before he could finish, a huge fist print flew out of the vapor. The Thousand-year Nether Winter Snow within a dozen miles was shaking.

This fist print was even stronger than the last.

Marquis Chengxuan was very experienced, so he didn't get intimidated. He activated more evil Sha Qi into the battle map.

Sizzle.

Huge flames actually spread from the scroll. A blazing sun flew out and crashed against the fist print.

The cold and hot forces collided, dissipating at the same time.

However, before they could react, Zhang Ruochen had already used the Spatial Move and appeared on the beast's back.

Divine Fire Jingmie poured out of the 14 apertures on his hands. It transformed into a cloud of fire that enveloped the three first marquises.

Marquis Qianjue and Wukun reacted a bit slowly. Some strands of Divine Fire Jingmie landed on them and they instantly started burning.

“Oh, no. It's Divine Fire Jingmie...”

“Ah... That damn Zhang Ruochen...”

They couldn't extinguish Divine Fire Jingmie at all. It was about to burn them to ashes.

Even a first marquis would be unable to keep calm at this point. They were extremely terrified.

Marquis Wukun jumped off from the beast and landed in the icy water with a plop. He wanted to use the Thousand-year Nether Winter Snow to extinguish the Divine Fire Jingmie.

Marquis Qianjue was slightly more reasonable. He knew that jumping into the nether water also meant death, so he decided to risk it all and charged toward Zhang Ruochen. His eyes were fierce. “If I die, then everyone dies!”

He cast a secret spell and his aura shot up. He activated the last of his power, unleashing his strongest attack.

“It’s so boring to die with you.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. He pushed out with both hands, activating spatial power and casting the Spatial Twist. Marquis Qianjue had been charging at him, but after the spatial structure changed, Marquis Qianjue went for Marquise Xianling who was hovering in the air.

“Zhang Ruochen, you bastard.”

Marquise Xianling’s beautiful face became extremely twisted.

She knew that Marquis Qianjue’s final attack would definitely be terrifying. Even a first step Saint King could get killed.

She hurriedly activated her Spiritual Power and unleashed a defensive attack. At the same time, she activated all her defensive runes.

Layers of Holy Qi shields poured out of her.

Kaboom.

Marquis Qianjue’s final burst of strength shattered the many shields, mangling her body. She fell from the sky.

Just as she was about to fall into the water, wings sprouted from Marquise Xianling’s back. She flew up with difficulty and escaped, landing on the shell of the Xuanwu.

She spat out a mouthful of blood and sat down weakly.

When Zhang Ruochen had attacked with the Divine Fire Jingmie earlier, Marquis Chengxuan had reacted the most quickly. He immediately activated a defensive rune and escaped. He’d actually avoided the fire and saved his life.

As for Marquis Wukun, who’d jumped into the water, he’d indeed extinguished the fire on him, but his body had been frozen stiff. He couldn’t move and sank to the bottom.

One of the Holy Carnivorous Flower’s roots flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s back. It stabbed into the Thousand-year Nether Winter Water, wrapped around Marquis Qianjue, and dragged him out.

Poof.

Zhang Ruochen sent out the Abyss Ancient Sword and stabbed Marquis Wukun's Sea of Qi. His skull shattered. This powerful first marquis still died in the end.

In the distance, Lord Lingquan had just broken through Sword Master Dongliu and Xue Lingfeng's ship. He stood on the deck and sent the two flying. But before he could even rejoice, he saw this bloody scene.

How long had it been?

Of the four first marquises, two were dead and two were heavily injured.

Lord Lingquan bared his white teeth and sneered. "Marquis Xiebai, Qianyu, Kuya, Xueyu, Qizhen, you all take care of these two. I will go kill Zhang Ruochen personally."

The defense of the ship had already been broken. Sword Master Dongliu and Xue Lingfeng were heavily injured too. They could only stand at the end of the ship, holding on with difficulty.

To Lord Lingquan, the five first marquises could definitely take out these two.

Now, he finally had the time to do battle with Zhang Ruochen.

If he could kill Zhang Ruochen, then he would have a complete victory. With this achievement, Princess Luosha would definitely be impressed. Thinking of this, Lord Lingquan couldn't help but smile cruelly.

"Zhang Ruochen, no matter how strange your time and spatial powers are, don't even think about escaping from me."

Lord Lingquan struck with the purple stone. Pushed by the evil sha Qi, the stone kept spinning and became bigger and bigger. Finally, it turned into a divine purple mountain and stood atop the Nether Winter Sea.

That moment, Zhang Ruochen could feel clearly that the surrounding space was locked.

“Disabling your Spatial Way is like breaking an arm. I heard that your time sword technique is very powerful. How about you let me see?”

Lord Lingquan flew to the top of the mountain and sneered at Zhang Ruochen.

He also had the Supreme Complete Body Constitution, along with the support of the divine patterns. He also had a treasure like the purple mountain and, most importantly, his cultivation was much higher than Zhang Ruochen.

Faced with an opponent like this, Zhang Ruochen naturally felt a lot of pressure.

Of course, he wasn't afraid. If he really had no choice, he could use the divine weapon.

“Not many can escape from the time sword technique,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Whoosh!

Demonic Sound's beautiful figure walked out of Zhang Ruochen's spine. She stood up tall but seemed very charming. A mesmerizing fragrance came from her snow-white skin. In an instant, the fragrance spread across the entire sea.

Chapter 1504 - Sword Way Xuangang

Chapter 1504: Sword Way Xuangang

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There was hallucinogenic poison in the flowers. If an ordinary saint inhaled it, he would immediately start to hallucinate and wouldn't be able to get out.

Lord Lingquan inhaled some of the flower fragrance, and everything in front of him looked dim. He thought that he saw Princess Luosha.

'Princess Luosha' walked toward Lord Lingquan and pointed at his forehead.

"Danger!" Lord Lingquan opened his eyes wide, and evil light gushed out.

'Princess Luosha' turned back into Demonic Sound.

Demonic Sound's finger turned into a demonic thorn, which was about to pierce Lord Lingquan's forehead.

Just as the demonic thorn was about to touch Lord Lingquan's forehead, mysterious godly inscriptions emerged on his skin, warding off the demonic thorn.

"Go to hell!"

Lord Lingquan slapped Demonic Sound with earth-shattering power.

The hair of Demonic Sound turned into a hundred thousand purple vines, spinning around her body and turning into a giant ball. Lord Lingquan hit the ball, crushing most of the vines.

Demonic Sound was muffled and bounced away until she was several miles away.

Zhang Ruochen rushed toward Lord Lingquan and performed Nine-life Sword Technique using the Abyss Ancient Sword against Lord Lingquan.

Lord Lingquan didn't have time to dodge it. However, he was still very calm. He yelled, then godly inscriptions emerged on his back.

Boom!

The Abyss Ancient Sword broke the armor on Lord Lingquan's back and clashed with the godly inscriptions.

The Abyss Ancient Sword was made of godly steel. Even if it wasn't a high-grade ten thousand patterns saint weapon, it was much sharper than saint swords.

The sword was about to cut Lord Lingquan's body in half.

Lord Lingquan felt the pain on his back, and he was worried that the godly inscriptions weren't able to ward the Abyss Ancient Sword off, so he clapped his hands and mobilized the evil sha Qi in his body.

Whoosh!

A crimson formation mark rushed out of his back, knocking Zhang Ruochen away.

Lord Lingquan immediately turned around and formed a sun mark and a moon mark on his palms, wielding them against Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen immediately used his sword to resist them, and a sword Qi godly bell that was seventy feet tall was formed.

Boom!

A sun and a moon hit the sword Qi godly bell, annihilating it.

The power was irresistible, which knocked Zhang Ruochen several miles away.

Zhang Ruochen felt excruciating pain after balancing himself as if all his bones were going to break.

He now knew why Sword Master Dongliu didn't even manage to touch Lord Qingquan even with his power.

Lord Lingquan was indeed unbelievably great at defense, as even the Abyss Ancient Sword couldn't break his body.

Perhaps only space crack and space crumble could pose a threat to him.

Lord Lingquan seemed to have expected that, so he used his purple godly mountain to freeze the space so that Zhang Ruochen couldn't use the power of space.

“Even the nine heavenly maidens merged together might not be able to rival Lord Lingquan. Only Chu Siyuan, who has become a saint king, can accomplish that.”

Zhang Ruochen looked to the ocean to look for Chu Siyuan, but he was nowhere to be found.

“I know I can't count on that old guy. Can't believe he just disappeared before such a crucial moment.” Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

Lord Lingquan didn't have the disdain like before anymore and he got more and more serious.

Lord Lingquan had figured out the true power of Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound after that exchange, and he concluded that both of them were a huge threat to him.

Especially Zhang Ruochen, who had forced him to activate the formation marks on his back.

That formation mark was bestowed upon him by a God, which was his greatest defense skill, but he could only use it ten times. They were practically his ten lives.

Every time he used the skill, he practically lost a life.

He had to use it just now because Demonic Sound confused him using her fragrance for a short second, which gave Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound the element of surprise.

And now, Lord Lingquan was completely conscious, which meant Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound wouldn't have a chance like that anymore.

In the distance, Sword Master Dongliu, Xue Lingfeng, and Li Mu were all in grave danger as they were encircled by eight first marquises.

Zhang Ruochen looked at them and thought, They are not going to hold it anymore. When those eight first marquises come against me, I'll be the one in great danger.

Zhang Ruochen then shifted to the Merits Record Wall, where two first marquises were standing. There was a crimson evil sha Qi whirlpool above them.

Lord Lingquan used the Merits Record Wall as bait to force Zhang Ruochen and the others to stay and fight. If they chose to run away now, they would be practically giving up the Merits Record Wall.

There were two first marquises standing on the Merits Record Wall, so it was obviously not possible to seize the Merits Record Wall in a short time, which meant Lord Lingquan and those first marquises could successfully encircle anyone who tried to get the wall.

Lord Lingquan saw through Zhang Ruochen, and he laughed. "There's nothing you can do to survive, unless you give up the Merits Record Wall."

Zhang Ruochen transmitted his voice to Demonic Sound. "How long will it take you to take those first marquises down?"

"If it is just to get the Merits Record Wall, I only need fifteen minutes, but I'll need more time to kill them," Demonic Sound said.

"Okay. I'll stall Lord Lingquan for fifteen minutes."

Zhang Ruochen activated his Hundred Saints Blood Armor, and blood-red scales permeated and covered his entire body. The Abyss Ancient Sword also released great black light, turning the space around him dark.

Demonic Sound knew that time was ticking, so she rushed toward the Merits Record Wall.

Lord Lingquan said, “How naïve are you, Zhang Ruochen? If I could really be stalled by a pinnacle true saint like you, I’d become a joke to the entire Luosha race.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Fifteen minutes? Even an hour, or a day... I’ll do everything I can to check you.”

“No point wasting time talking. Let’s fight, then we’ll see how it ends... Umm? A great being?” Lord Lingquan could feel a sword way ripple, and then he looked to the top of the purple godly mountain.

An elder was standing at the top of the purple godly mountain. His skin was wrinkled, and his hair had almost completely fallen out.

However, an elder like that made Lord Lingquan feel danger.

“Sword Saint Jiuyou,” Zhang Ruochen mumbled.

Not long ago, Sword Saint Jiuyou had trespassed on the time formation by accident and lost most of his life. He was nearing death.

It seemed that Sword Saint Jiuyou didn’t fear death. He smiled. “Zhang Ruochen, you’re someone who can negotiate with a God. Why were you so humble? Let me teach you how to talk! Even if I weren’t his match, I would tell him that I could slay him in fifteen minutes.”

Right after he finished talking, Sword Saint Jiuyou suddenly looked fierce.

Whoosh!

Sword Saint Jiuyou rushed out like a trace of sword light which was a hundred times faster than sound. Sword Qi slashed the water down there.

Lord Lingquan raised his right hand and performed a great saint spell. Behind Lord Lingquan’s back, an absolute and true shadow formed that was thousands of feet tall.

Lord Lingquan was serious about Sword Saint Jiuyou, as he was showing his absolute and true shadow.

Boom!

A trace of sword light pierced through the palm phantom and hit Lord Lingquan.

Lord Lingquan looked shocked as the godly inscriptions on his palm were pierced through by the sword light.

“How? Sword Way Xuangang.”

Lord Lingquan’s palm bled a bit.

It wasn’t sword Qi or Sword Intent of Sword that Sword Saint Jiuyou had just used. It was Sword Way Xuangang, or ‘Sword Gang.’

Sword Qi, Sword Intent of Sword and Sword Way Xuangang were three different levels.

Any sword warrior could refine sword Qi.

As for Sword Intent of Sword, only sword saints could perform it, which would greatly increase the power of a sword saint, and the defense skills of saints were useless in front of sword saints.

As for Sword Way Xuangang, only those who had completed Sword Eight could form it, and if a sword warrior’s cultivation was great enough, Sword Way Xuangang could destroy a planet.

A half-step saint king managed to refine Sword Gang?

Lord Lingquan was astounded, as it was even rare even for saint kings to refine Sword Gang.

Chapter 1505 - Time Sword Technique, Kills Each Time

Chapter 1505: Time Sword Technique, Kills Each Time

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

However, the more shocked one was Sword Saint Jiuyou.

He attacked with all his might, even using the Sword Way Xuangang, but was still stopped by Lord Lingquan. The Sword Way Xuangang only passed through the divine patterns on Lord Lingquan's palm and didn't injure him greatly.

This kind of defensive ability was very frightening.

“You must die.”

The Evil Sha Qi inside Lord Lingquan's body surged like a dozen rivers. They boomed and the divine patterns on his skin showed even more blindingly.

His other hand clenched into a fist and punched Sword Saint Jiuyou's stomach.

Whoosh!

Nine saint swords flew out of Sword Saint Jiuyou's forehead.

The nine swords had different colors and connected into a nine-colored sword snake. It clashed with Lord Lingquan's fist.

Boom!

The next moment, Sword Saint Jiuyou was sent flying by the fist print.

The nine swords also flew out and stabbed into the water around Sword Saint Jiyou, but Sword Qi still poured out of them. It represented his undying sword intent.

Blood trickled out of the corner of his lips. He was clearly hurt badly.

The two were both half-step Saint Kings. However, Lord Lingquan had the Supreme Complete Body Constitution. Sword Saint Jiuyou would never be able to compete with him on this.

Further, Lord Lingquan had the support of the divine patterns. This increased their gap. Even though Sword Saint Jiuyou had completed Sword Eight, he still couldn't make up for the difference.

Lord Lingquan raised his right hand and looked at the two-inch-long gash on his palm. He felt pain coming from the injury.

Earlier, Sword Saint Jiuyou's strike had destroyed the divine patterns on his palm and even left a beam of Sword Xuangang in his body. This made it difficult for the injuries to heal.

The Sword Xuangang was also spreading toward his wrist and arm.

Dammit. Lord Lingquan swore silently.

Sword Saint Jiuyou wiped away the blood on his mouth. He still had a smile. "Not bad. You're pretty strong."

Lord Lingquan took out a bronze glove and put it on his hand. He stared down at Sword Saint Jiuyou and Zhang Ruochen. "You two aren't bad. Fight me together!"

"Zhang Ruochen isn't needed," Sword Saint Jiuyou said. "I can take you down by myself."

Lord Lingquan showed disdain. "You don't know your own strength," he said in a low voice. "You're indeed advanced in the Sword Way, but I hit you with the Chaotic Six Kill Fist. You must be quite hurt. If you continue, I'll pound you into mangled flesh."

Zhang Ruochen could tell that Sword Saint Jiuyou wasn't actually that crazy. He wanted to use the fight with someone as strong as Lord Lingquan to keep pushing himself and search for the chance to break into the Saint King Realm.

Back then, Sword Saint Jiuyou had challenged Sword Saint Xuanji with the same goal.

Unfortunately, Sword Saint Xuanji had been poisoned by Pluto, so he couldn't unleash his full power. The battle had ended as soon as it started. Sword Saint Jiuyou had failed in reaching the Saint King Realm during that battle.

Sword Saint Jiuyou naturally knew that there was a big gap between them. If they kept fighting, the final result might really be as Lord Lingquan said. He would be killed and turned into a pile of mangled flesh.

However, he had no choice. He could only risk his life for a battle.

If he couldn't reach the Saint King Realm, he would still die.

Instead of waiting to die from old age, he'd rather have a great fight before death.

Zhang Ruochen realized Sword Saint Jiuyou's goal, so he didn't interfere. Instead, he retreated quickly. He prepared to work with Demonic Sound and fight quickly to steal the Merits Record Wall.

“Go.”

In the distance, Sword Saint Dongliu, Xue Lingfeng, and Li Mu glanced at Lord Lingquan and Sword Saint Jiuyou. Then they activated a shuttle-shaped Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon together.

The three flew onto the shuttle cloud and fled 100 times faster than the speed of sound.

The three escaped because they were too heavily hurt and had no other choice.

However, the bigger reason was that they could see that continuing to fight with the eight first marquises was no doubt helping Zhang Ruochen steal the Merits Record Wall.

They were smart. They wouldn't do things to help someone else.

The Merits Record Wall falling into Lord Lingquan's hands was actually better than being in Zhang Ruochen's hands.

“Those three...”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit helpless, but his eyes sharpened.

After Sword Master Dongliu, Xue Lingfeng, and Li Mu escaped, no one continued to hold back the eight first marquises. They formed a circle and charged toward the Merits Record Wall.

“Zhang Ruochen, your companions have already run. Aren't you going to run?”

Marquis Xiebai laughed loudly. In an instant, he was within 100 feet of Zhang Ruochen. The other seven first marquises clearly saw Zhang Ruochen as their top enemy and gathered toward him too.

Zhang Ruochen was naturally happy to see this. As long as he could make all eight stay here, Demonic Sound should be able to steal the Merits Record Wall quickly.

“You think you can force me to run?”

Zhang Ruochen stood in place. He stepped on a tree branch and stood unmoving like an ancient tree.

Marquise Qianyu was a Luosha female who cultivated the martial way. She wore a white feathered robe. Blade-like feathers flowed around her feet, transforming into a flood of feathers.

When the feathers flew, they clanged like swords.

“Sword Master Dongliu, Xue Lingfeng, and Li Mu are three top figures and they're still no match for us,” Marquise Qianyu said. “You think you can last for 15 minutes by yourself?”

“I'll flatten him in the span of three breaths,” Marquis Xueyu said.

The eight first marquises circulated their Holy Qi at the same time. Some cast spells while others activated their weapons.

However, Zhang Ruochen acted before them. His first attack target was the strongest of the eight—Marquis Xiebai.

“So fast.”

Marquis Xiebai only felt a figure flash and Zhang Ruochen was already within five feet of him. The heavy black sword in his hands came down with thunderous wind.

Marquis Xiebai could only push up the shield made out of Supreme Saint bones to stop the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Thud!

It felt like a metal mountain had crashed into the shield. His fingers were almost broken and his body flew back uncontrollably.

After that strike, Zhang Ruochen peered behind him.

He saw that Marquis Xueyu had already come within 20 feet of him to help Marquis Xiebai.

“That’s the distance.”

The time prints around Zhang Ruochen all started shaking. They gathered toward him like specks of light.

“Zi Sword.”

This was the third level of the time sword technique. It was one of the Twelve Hours Sword Technique.

At that moment, time stopped.

Zhang Ruochen attacked. Marquis Xueyu was stabbed through by the Ancient Abyss Sword before he could react. At the same time, Divine Fire Jingmie poured out of Zhang Ruochen’s hands. It rushed into Marquis Xueyu’s body along the blade.

“Ah... Is this the time sword technique...”

Marquis Xueyu’s face twisted and he yelled.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t answer. What was the point in talking to a dead person?

Boom.

Sword Qi flew out of the Abyss Ancient Sword and tore apart Marquis Xueyu's body.

A moment later, the fragments were burned to dust by the Divine Fire Jingmie.

A first marquis' vitality was indeed strong, but no matter how strong, they were all dead when faced with Divine Fire Jingmie.

The remaining seven first marquises all gasped, clearly intimidated by the time sword technique.

They were all first marquises. Marquis Xueyu's end might be their end as well. The time sword technique and Divine Fire Jingmie were too terrifying. How could they block it without the divine patterns?

Zhang Ruochen stood in the middle of the seven first marquises. "Who would like to die next?" he said indifferently.

Marquis Xiebai's eyes were serious but still composed. "Don't be afraid, everyone. Even the time sword technique requires time to perform. The Divine Fire Jingmie isn't completely unstoppable either. Earlier, didn't Marquis Chengxuan survive the Divine Fire Jingmie? We seven first marquises...perform one attack each and we'll kill him."

Zhang Ruochen took out the Buddha's sarira. Activating its origin power, he struck it at Marquis Xiebai.

Marquis Xiebai's hands pressed on the Supreme Saint bone shield and activated a shred of Supreme Saint power. Next, the projection of a Supreme Saint rushed out.

Kaboom.

The sarira shattered the projection and crashed into the Supreme Saint bone shield. Marquis Xiebai was sent flying. This time, he spat out blood and bloody cracks appeared on his arms.

The other six first marquises all attacked with spells and weapons, besieging Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was very decisive. Ignoring the six first marquises, he transformed into a streak of light and attacked Marquis Xiebai with Sword Seven.

Boom!

After this collision, the Supreme Saint bone shield flew out of Marquis Xiebai's hands. His arms were practically disabled.

Marquis Xiebai was terrified. Unable to care about anything else, he used an escape technique and fled twice as fast as usual. He just wanted to get as far away from Zhang Ruochen as possible.

“Wu Sword.”

Before he could reach 20 feet away, time stopped again.

Poof.

Sword light passed through Marquis Xiebai's back, leaving a basin-sized hole. Slivers of Divine Fire Jingmie spread out from the edges of the hole, burning Marquis Xiebai's body.

Enduring the great pain, Marquis Xiebai yelled, “Zhang Ruochen, I will die with you!”

Boom.

Just as Marquis Xiebai was going to deactivate his saintly source, Zhang Ruochen attacked with another time sword technique. He stabbed Marquis Xiebai's Sea of Qi sooner and the saintly source flew out of the body.

Yet another first marquis had fallen.

Chapter 1506 - Jiuyou Became A Saint King

Chapter 1506: Jiuyou Became A Saint King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Sword Master Dongliu, Xue Lingfeng, and Li Mu were standing at the periphery of Pluto Winter Cold Ocean, and they were all dazed by the fight.

Li Mu said, “He’s killed four first marquises. Those first marquises are so unlucky to encounter Zhang Ruochen.”

Li Mu was one of the top three great beings in Tianmu Field. However, he only managed to severely injure two first marquises. He’d never killed a first marquis yet.

For one thing, first marquises were very powerful, and they even had the ability to survive first-step saint kings.

For the other, first marquises were very sturdy. Unless their lower abdomen was pierced through, or their saint sources were taken away, or their bodies were crushed into pieces, they could still survive.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen had Sword Technique of Time and Divine Fire Jingmie, so those first marquises couldn’t escape him at all, and besides, their life forces couldn’t be more fragile when it came to Divine Fire Jingmie.

Sword Master Dongliu said, “Zhang Ruochen would never use Sword Technique of Time easily. When he performs it, it’s the time for him to kill his enemy.

Xue Lingfeng said, “Perhaps he worries that his enemies might find a way to deal with it if he performs it too often.

There're many restrictions when it comes to Sword Technique of Time. Dongliu, you're the only one who fought Sword Technique of Time twice and survived, and you're one of the best sword warriors among your peers. Do you have any methods to counteract Sword Technique of Time?"

Sword Master Dongliu said, "Perhaps there're some ways to counteract it, but Zhang Ruochen never performs Sword Technique of Time when you're prepared. He'll do it when you're nervous so that he can kill you with one strike.

"Which means unless you're way more powerful than Zhang Ruochen, you'll still be killed even if you know how to crack Sword Technique of Time."

Sword Master Dongliu left out something, which was that the reason he survived Technique of Time both times was that Zhang Ruochen had spared his life on purpose. Otherwise, he would've been dead.

However, Sword Master Dongliu didn't understand why Zhang Ruochen didn't choose to kill him.

Perhaps it was because there weren't any real grudges between the two of them.

Even if they fought against each other multiple times, it was because they came from two different fields and had to fight for their mother fields.

Or because Zhang Ruochen spared his life to deal with Luosha great beings.

"We'll only stand a chance of getting the Merits Record Wall if our power gets back to the pinnacle level."

Sword Master Dongliu, Xue Lingfeng, and Li Mu stopped talking. Instead, they swallowed healing pills and tried to heal themselves.

Zhang Ruochen had killed Marquis Blood Rain and Marquis Xiebai, which intimidated the other six first marquises, forcing Marquis Chengxuan and Marquis Xianling to join the fight again.

Everyone who could become a first marquis was incredible. They all realized what Zhang Ruochen was really aiming for, so they all gathered together toward the Merits Record Wall.

Demonic Sound suppressed two first marquises by herself and severely injured one of them.

However, those two first marquises were strong enough to prevent Demonic Sound from getting the Merits Records Wall.

Zhang Ruochen got to the Merits Record Wall before the first marquises did and wielded Divine Fire Jingmie.

The Divine Fire Jingmie formed a fiery cloud.

One of the first marquis was shocked seeing the blue fiery cloud dashing toward him. He still remembered how the other first marquises were burned to death.

He immediately tried to dodge it.

Whoosh!

A trace of black sword light pierced through the forehead of that first marquis, and suddenly, half of his head was crushed.

At the next moment, Zhang Ruochen stepped on his shoulders and landed on top of the Merits Record Wall.

Bong!

That first marquis fell into Pluto Winter Cold Ocean. No one could tell whether he survived it or not.

Marquis Chengxuan, Marquis Xianling and the other marquises saw it when they arrived.

“Marquis Juqing!”

Marquis Thousand Feather yelled and mobilized all his feathers, which went into Pluto Ice Cold Ocean, trying to save Marquis Juqing.

Although Marquis Juqing’s head was crushed by Zhang Ruochen, Marquis Thousand Feather knew that his lower abdomen wasn’t in his head.

Zhang Ruochen waved his arms, and a cluster of golden light flew out.

That was the Buddha sarira.

Bang Bang!

Those feathers were all crushed into ashes by the sarira.

“Careful! Zhang Ruochen wants to use Marquis Juqing as bait to lure us there.”

Other first marquises wielded their saint weapons, clashing with the Buddha Emperor sarira to save Marquis Thousand Feather.

Zhang Ruochen took back his Buddha Emperor sarira and held it in his hand, glancing at all the first marquises.

Whoosh!

Demonic Sound flew toward Zhang Ruochen and landed behind him, staring at them with a smile.

It seemed that they were being encircled. However, the nine first marquises who were encircling them looked more solemn.

Zhang Ruochen had already killed four first marquises and knocked a fifth one into the ocean. They were all scared by that.

Zhang Ruochen fought almost ten first marquises by himself, yet nobody could even touch him. Nobody would believe this.

Those first marquises all thought they could crush Zhang Ruochen, yet they found out that the enemy was way stronger than they'd thought.

Lord Lingquan was furious seeing that. He yelled, “Useless. He's nothing but a human true saint, and you can't even fight against him? How did you become first marquises in the first place?”

Just when Lord Lingquan wanted to go fight Zhang Ruochen himself, he was stopped by Sword Saint Jiuyou.

Sword Saint Jiuyou was severely injured after fighting Lord Lingquan for such a long time. He was bleeding like hell, and his bones cracked, yet he was still as vigorous as before.

“Damn you. Hunshi Six-Killing Fist, Heavenly Kill.”

Lord Lingquan was furious. If it weren't for Sword Saint Jiuyou, Zhang Ruochen would've never killed two first marquises.

'Heavenly Kill' was the most powerful move of Hunshi Six-Killing Fist, which mobilized all the fist rules in Lord Lingquan's body. Even the saint Qi in heaven and earth gathered toward him.

Boom!

Lord Lingquan performed a fist technique, and the fist force shook the ocean and the sky.

Even Zhang Ruochen, Demonic Sound, and the nine first marquises couldn't help looking at the fist force, as they felt that it was almost touching him.

They couldn't even imagine the pressure Sword Saint Jiuyou was going through as he fought Lord Lingquan.

"Heavenly Kill is the head of Six Killings, and it has the power of a middle-class saint spell. Perhaps Lord Lingquan can kill me with one strike." Marquis Qianyu admired him.

Any girl would admire someone like Lord Lingquan, who was invincible on the battlefield.

"That fist..."

Zhang Ruochen looked solemn, as he was sure that Sword Saint Jiuyou wasn't able to ward it off.

Was he going to die?

As for Sword Saint Jiuyou, it seemed that he didn't know he was going to die soon. He went manic and yelled, "Haha! Kill! Kill! Kill!"

Sword Saint Jiuyou flew along the ocean, and there were nine saint swords with sword way forces that made the water tumble.

His body and the nine swords merged together, flying toward Lord Lingquan.

Every time he yelled 'kill,' his force would grow stronger.

When he yelled 'kill' the ninth time, Sword Saint Jiuyou's body made a huge cracking sound, and his speed and forces surged.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "Now it's getting interesting."

Bang!

Lord Lingquan performed Heavenly Killing Fist Print, yet it was pierced through instantly by Sword Saint Jiuyou.

"He's made a breakthrough?"

Lord Lingquan immediately spread his arms and activated the formation godly print on his back.

Whoosh!

The circular formation mark rushed out of Lord Lingquan's chest and hit the Sword Way Xuangang wielded by Sword Saint Jiuyou.

Bang!

Lord Lingquan bounced to more than twenty miles away. Even with the protection of the formation, his blood Qi was still knocked to chaos while his organs hurt.

He was sure that he wouldn't be able to ward it off without the formation.

All the nine first marquises surrounding the Merits Record Wall were all shocked that the human elder became a saint king during the battle.

"Go!"

Lord Lingquan gave an order and rushed to the Xuanwu Shell, riding it toward the Phoenix Nest.

The other nine first marquises all realized that Sword Saint Jiuyou, who had become a saint king, wasn't someone they could match, so they all rushed onto the Xuanwu Shell toward the Phoenix Nest with Lord Lingquan.

"They didn't even want their purple godly mountain?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, but after shooting a glance at Sword Saint Jiuyou, he suddenly had some ominous

presentiment, so he immediately rushed toward the Merits Record Wall with Demonic Sound.

“Leave the Merits Record Wall behind.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou took the purple godly mountain and chased Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1507 - The Sound Of Time

Chapter 1507: The Sound Of Time

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen had already destroyed the spatial formation around the Phoenix Nest, so the space wasn't as weak as before. Instead, because Supreme Saints had cultivated here before, the space was extraordinarily stable.

The Phoenix Nest was probably the location with the most stable space in the entire Zuling Field.

Lord Lingquan and the nine first marquises ran in a hurry. Not only did they not take away the divine purple mountain, they didn't even save Marquis Juqing who'd fallen into the Thousand-year Nether Winter Snow, leaving him to his own devices.

They stood on the Xuanwu shell. After entering the seven-colored light area, Zhang Ruochen's vision was obstructed. He couldn't see them clearly anymore.

The seven-colored light shining from the Phoenix Nest was three miles long and very misty. It looked beautiful from afar.

Zhang Ruochen arrived three miles away from the Phoenix Nest. Looking up, he saw that this nest was actually taller than a mountain. The seven-colored light that shone from it was condensed and a shred of Supreme Saint power actually radiated from the light.

The Ice Fire Phoenix's nest is definitely extraordinary, Zhang Ruochen thought. I'm afraid there is great danger inside.

Princess Luosha was extremely powerful, but after going in for so long, she still hadn't come out. This was enough to show that both the inheritance of the Ice Fire Phoenix and Godly Star Soul were extremely hard to find. One might even run into a death trial.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and filled it with Thousand-year Nether Winter Snow. Then he charged into the seven-colored light.

A bit of the Thousand-year Nether Winter Snow could freeze a first marquis, slowing their circulation of Evil Sha Qi. If he poured out this cauldron without warning, probably even someone like Lord Lingquan would be weakened for a while.

Using the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron to carry Thousand-year Nether Winter Snow was indeed over the top, but he had no other way.

Qing Mo's divine relic made all the Saints of Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field jealous, leading to fierce competition. It was evident that treasures like divine relics were very valuable in other fields.

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was even more precious than Qing Mo's silver kitchen knife. If it was exposed, Zhang Ruochen would definitely gain even more enemies.

After all, the cultivators of the Heaven World could all see the battle in Zuling Field through the projection. Anything related to gods would even tempt Supreme Saints in the Heaven World.

Plus, with Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation, his power after using the Buddha's sarira might not be much weaker than when using the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Thus, he wouldn't reveal this trump card unless there was no other choice.

After entering the seven-colored light zone, Zhang Ruochen wanted to put the Merits Record Wall underfoot into his spatial ring. He discovered that the divine light from the wall actually resisted the spatial ring. He couldn't put it in.

Then he tried using the Mercury Gourd and Time and Space Crystal, but he failed both times.

“A god’s tactics are indeed powerful. It seems like I can’t destroy the Merits Record Wall even if I rip apart the space. I’ll have to bring it along no matter where I go now.”

Zhang Ruochen shrugged, feeling helpless.

The Merits Record Wall was 33 feet tall and very big, like a small mountain. It would be difficult to cover their traces when traveling with it.

Demonic Sound’s eyes turned to the Phoenix Nest before them.

The huge nest, more than 10,000 meters long, was made out of seven-colored vines. These vines didn’t seem to be wood. They shone with colorful light as if made out of metal.

Some of the vines were as thin as hair and floated on the water. Others were shockingly thick—more than ten meters wide.

Zhang Ruochen was also attracted. He sensed strong wood elemental Qi radiating from the vines. Clearly, the seven-colored vines weren’t ordinary items.

“Honghua Vines,” Demonic Sound said.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t as knowledgeable in the plant world as Demonic Sound. Feeling curious, he asked, “What are Honghua Vines?”

“In legends,” Demonic Sound said, “after a Saint Monk with high cultivation passed away, a strange rainbow phenomenon would appear. The land of the death would also turn into seven-colored dirt. A being had once seen a seven-colored vine on a rainbow planet. The branches of the vine spread across the entire star, shining with saintly seven-colored light. After that, the legend of Honghua Vines was created. Honghua means ‘rainbow.’”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the Phoenix Nest before him. “A Saint Monk dies, Honghua Vines are born. Death and life

happen simultaneously on the rainbow land. Is this a continuation of life?”

Demonic Sound shook her head. “No one knows... However, Honghua Vines are treasures too. A three-foot-long vine as thick as your finger would cost at least ten saint stones to buy. As for the price in the Heaven World, I wouldn’t know. It should be rare, so it wouldn’t be cheap.”

“Oh?”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised and asked, “What are Honghua Vines used for that they can be sold for such a high price?”

“The fragrance after burning them can help cultivators study the Rules of Saintly Way.”

“A Supreme Saint phoenix’s nest is indeed filled with treasures. There are many Honghua Vines here. We must take some.”

Golden dragon wings rushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s back and he flew up to take some of the Honghua Vines from the nest. But when his fingers were still a few meters away, strange formation runes actually appeared on the vines.

Thud!

As if attacked by thunder, Zhang Ruochen was forced to fly back. He landed back on the Merits Record Wall.

Even with his boxing glove, his fingers still stung. However, Zhang Ruochen didn’t feel depressed. “As expected, it’s not that easy,” he murmured to himself.

“Are the formation runes carved on the vines powerful?” Demonic Sound asked.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “It’s made by a Supreme Saint. How can it not be powerful?”

Zhang Ruochen’s knowledge in formations wasn’t as strong as Princess Luosha, so he didn’t dare to make boastful claims. No matter how low the Ice Fire Phoenix’s attainment in formations were, it could still easily crush Saints.

After investigating, Zhang Ruochen discovered nine entrances to the Phoenix Nest. They were in different directions.

The nine entrances were all open and one could come and go at will.

Zhang Ruochen chose the biggest entrance for no reason other than it was the only one big enough for the Merits Record Wall.

Zhang Ruochen explored in the front while Demonic Sound followed behind. She used a vine to drag the Merits Record Wall.

There was a seven-colored world inside the Phoenix Nest. The Saintly Qi here was very strong. The inside was much larger than it appeared. Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound walked for a dozen miles without running into or seeing anything. It was very strange.

“Is the Phoenix Nest really only 10,000 meters long?”
Demonic Sound couldn’t help but ask.

Zhang Ruochen was very calm. “The Ice Fire Phoenix was very advanced in time and spatial way. Its nest is a spatial formation. It used the formation to create a space. Ha, it’s this tactic again.”

Zhang Ruochen had already seen this tactic in the outermost 33 saint mountains. The Ice Fire Phoenix had used a saint jade to create one black and one white world. He and Princess Luosha had almost gotten stuck inside forever.

The Phoenix Nest’s space was even more advanced and steady. If it continued to evolve, it could become a small world.

Of course, the current seven-colored space here was still incomplete and had many flaws. Life couldn’t develop here.

After walking around 500 miles, Zhang Ruochen suddenly stopped. He picked up a 1.3-foot-long Honghua Vine. The formation runes had already been wiped.

Eyes narrowing, he looked around. “Princess Luosha must’ve left this Honghua Vine here.”

“Why?” Demonic Sound asked.

“Only she is advanced enough in formations to damage the formation runes in the nest. If I’m not wrong, she should’ve taken a lot of Honghua Vines.”

Zhang Ruochen collected the vine. Then he took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and forged on cautiously.

After another 100 miles, he heard water.

How could the Phoenix Nest have water?

Could it be the sound of the Nether Winter Sea outside?

It didn’t sound like seawater to Zhang Ruochen. It was more like a creek, so he sped up and walked forward.

Finding the source of the water sound, Zhang Ruochen had an incredulous expression. He laughed out loud. “How can this be?”

A crude circular stone, like a giant millstone, lay slanted on a tall platform.

The center of the “millstone” had a crude stone stick. It was like a primitive stone tool that had been passed down for generations.

The sound of a creek came from the stick and “millstone.” It was very strange.

Demonic Sound caught up from behind. Seeing this scene, she opened her red lips in disbelief. “The sound of water comes from the stone. The sound is so clear too. This is impossible.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes shone with intelligent light. “It might not be the sound of water,” he said meaningfully. “It may be the sound of time.”

“Time has a sound too?”

Demonic Sound thought that Zhang Ruochen must be crazy. How could time have sound?

“Time is like water, flowing constantly. We are in the water and can only go with the flow to the future. We are in the

present, but we don't know that the present is the future of the past.”

Zhang Ruochen pointed at the “millstone.” “Do you know about sundials?” he asked.

“Of course,” Demonic Sound said. “Sundials are a tool to calculate time from some human civilizations. It uses the direction of the sun's shadow to calculate time and divide it into hours. Do you think this is a sundial... It looks like it, but it's too crude.”

Demonic Sound stared closely. She discovered that the circular “millstone” indeed had some ancient words and tick marks. However, because too much time had passed, the patterns were very blurry. One wouldn't catch them without looking closely.

Zhang Ruochen held his chin and murmured to himself, “I think it's a time treasure.”

He'd seen many spatial treasures, but he only had a few time treasures. However, even the power contained in a time treasure could only change the flow of time inside.

It was his first time seeing a pure time treasure.

Chapter 1508 - Absolute Saint

Chapter 1508: Absolute Saint

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Time valuable?”

Demonic Sound’s eyes gleamed, and she couldn’t help walking toward it.

It was a legendary time valuable. Everyone wanted to obtain it.

Zhang Ruochen held her and said, “Stop walking forward. The flow of time must be very quick here, which is why we can hear the water-flowing sound. Don’t you remember many monks were killed by the time formation when we were fighting for the Merits Record Wall?”

Demonic Sound was dazed. She stopped and asked, “Is there time formation around here?”

Zhang Ruochen opened his heavenly eyes, and he saw the time marks around the sundial, and all the time marks were still very active.

The power of time here was more terrific than the time formation.

Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound might’ve aged to death before they could even get close to the sundial.

“Anywhere less twelve hundred feet away from the sundial is forbidden to us,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Demonic Sound said, “You also practice time way, my lord. Even you can’t suppress the power of time here? That sundial is obviously an incredible ancient weapon. If you’re not getting it, you might regret it forever.”

There was no way Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to get the sundial.

However, he knew much better than Demonic Sound how terrifying the sundial was, so he couldn’t be more intimidated by it.

“I’ll try.”

Zhang Ruochen carefully stepped forward and stopped when he was only twelve hundred feet away from the sundial.

After he took another step forward, time mark spots flew out of the sundial.

Every time mark spot could strip a creature of more than ten years of their lives, and if someone was hit by a great many spots, he or she might age to death immediately.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen performed Sword Technique of Time to knock the time mark light spots away, however, those light spots kept coming at him, and he couldn’t ward all of them off.

After five seconds, Zhang Ruochen was hit by three time mark light spots, losing fifty years of his life.

Zhang Ruochen had to retreat. He said, “Impressive, this is impressive. The third-level power of Sword Technique of Time is nothing compared to the sundial. I’ll only stand a chance if I can finish refining the fourth level, Zhoutian Sword Technique.”

Zhoutian Sword Technique was way more intricate than Twelve Hours Sword Technique. It’d take him forever to finish practicing it.

It wasn’t possible for him to take the sundial away.

However, this was the best place for him to comprehend the time way. Perhaps he could seize this chance to refine time

rules so that he could become an absolute saint.

Zhang Ruochen gave Demonic Sound an instruction, asking her to guard him. And then, he walked to only twelve hundred feet away from the sundial, sat down, and listened to the flow of time.

The flow of time contained time way, and it wasn't every day that he could hear it.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen seemed to have recalled something. He took out a Honghua Vine that was six inches long from his space ring and put it on the ground. Suddenly, a ball of flames showed up around his fingers.

“Can Red Flower Vine really help monks comprehend saintly way rules?”

Zhang Ruochen was also curious, so he wanted to seize this chance to try it.

The Honghua Vine looked like a seven-color diffuser, and it gave out very dim fragrance, permeating the space.

Zhang Ruochen became much more shrewd when he inhaled that as the flow of the water stream was clearer to him. He could better distinguish the norms and meters of the sound.

“It's indeed helpful. My senses and comprehension were both improved. It's an incredible object indeed.” Zhang Ruochen was pleased.

However, the Honghua Vine was an assistive object after all. He needed to comprehend time way himself.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and listened to the sound closely. Soon, he reached the mysterious realm.

It seemed that he was sitting at the top of the stream, and the water was flowing under him. He then reached out his hand and tried to carry the water, yet the water flowed through his palm.

There seemed to be tens of millions of holes on his palm, and there was no way he could carry the water.

“Is that time? I can't even capture it.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped trying to catch the time. He concentrated on listening to the sound of water and feeling the melodies of the water as if he had merged with the stream.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly woke up, and he found that he had sunk into the brook almost completely.

But then, he rejoiced.

“I understand now. I need to merge with time first if I want to control it.”

Zhang Ruochen kept sinking, and the water drowned his mouth, his nose, and then his ears, eyes, and forehead...

The time mark light spots around the sundial echoed with the power around Zhang Ruochen, flying toward him.

Those light spots flew into Zhang Ruochen's forehead and into his lower abdomen, integrating with the time rule in Heaven Pass River.

The time rule became more and more solid, giving out blazing light.

After merging with sixty-three time mark light spots, the time rule finally evolved, reaching ‘absolute and true’ level.

Bang!

A rumbling sound came out of Zhang Ruochen's body.

The saint Qi flowed several times faster in his meridians and saint meridians, absorbing the heaven and earth saint Qi around him. The saint Qi in the seven-colored saint Qi kept rushing into Zhang Ruochen's forehead like water.

“Congratulations on becoming an absolute saint, my lord. Nobody can rival you in the Merits Battle anymore.” Demonic Sound congratulated Zhang Ruochen, making a bow.

Zhang Ruochen stood up and spread his arms, and then, saintly way rules gushed out of his body, and behind him formed a golden phantom which was thousands of feet tall.

It was the Absolute and True Phantom.

Triggering Absolute and True Phantom meant that he could trigger the rules of heaven and earth, and he was able to mobilize part of the power of the heaven and earth.

“Absolute and True Phantom is indeed extraordinary.”

Zhang Ruochen pushed his hands forward, and then, the space made a cracking sound.

After flaunting it for a while, Zhang Ruochen put back his Absolute and True Phantom.

“My life expectancy grows a thousand years.”

Zhang Ruochen had strong enough mind power to deduce his life expectancy. Because of his sanctified body and God’s destiny, Zhang Ruochen knew that his life expectancy was way higher than normal saints, as he could live for more than a thousand years.

But now, he figured that he could live for more than two thousand years.

In Kunlun’s Field, even ninth-step saint kings would find it impossible to live for two thousand years.

In Heaven World, the refining environment was way better than that of Kunlun’s Field, however, human saints still found it very difficult to live past one thousand years. Only seventh-step saint kings and those who were stronger could live for two thousand years.

Which meant his life expectancy was only second to supreme saints even if his cultivation never advanced.

“How?”

Zhang Ruochen recalled and looked to the sundial in the distance.

“Lots of time mark light spots spread out of the sundial when I became an absolute saint, and they went into my lower abdomen. Could that sundial both slash and improve the life expectancy of a monk?”

Zhang Ruochen was astounded.

A time valuable like that was incredible.

If he managed to understand how it worked, then he could increase his life expectancy any time and become immortal.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the sundial again, but he was hit by several time mark light spots the second he was less than twelve hundred feet away from.

“I can’t. That sundial is just bizarre.”

Even if Zhang Ruochen could live for two thousand years, he would still age to death immediately if he tried to get the sundial by force.

Zhang Ruochen tried several times, but they all ended in failure, and he lost two hundred years of life.

“There’s still a long way to go on my time way.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and took Demonic Sound away. Looking for the Ice and Fire Phoenix and God’s Starry Soul was the important thing.

He would come back for the sundial if he still had time after seizing those two.

The seven-colored space in the Phoenix Nest was enormous, so it’d take him a long time to find the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix. Perhaps Mu Lingxi could have better senses given her Ice Phoenix Ancient Saint Body.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Monument Shield and let Mu Lingxi out of the space crystal.

Mu Lingxi had been refining in the time and space crystal the entire time, and she had become an absolute saint.

Mu Lingxi didn’t have the restraints from time rules and space rules like Zhang Ruochen, and she experienced a faster flow of time in the crystal and enjoyed the help of valuables like Ice Phoenix Saint Marrow, so it was very easy for her to become an absolute saint.

“Is this the Phoenix Nest?”

“That’s right.”

Mu Lingxi learned about what had happened from Zhang Ruochen and the special environment in the Phoenix Nest. She

nodded and said, “Let me have a try.”

Mu Lingxi closed her eyes, mobilized her saint Qi, and then a gleaming phoenix mark showed up on her forehead.

Suddenly, the temperature around them dropped sharply.

Whoosh!

A giant phantom of an Ice Phoenix rushed out of Mu Lingxi’s back, and it looked exactly like a real phoenix. Its feathers were gleaming, and its wings looked like two colorful clouds.

That was Mu Lingxi’s Absolute and True Shadow which contained the saintly way rules of the phoenix race.

The phantom of the Ice Phoenix flew in a certain direction.

Mu Lingxi opened her eyes, smiled and said, “I’ve sensed something. Let’s go that way.”

Chapter 1509 - Location Of Inheritance

Chapter 1509: Location Of Inheritance

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After the wings of the Ice Phoenix opened, they were more than 300 meters long. It could fly 300 miles with each flap of its wings.

The Ice Phoenix Saint Body is comparable to the True Dragon Body, Zhang Ruochen thought. It's only slightly weaker than the True God Body. The phoenix race is also known for speed. With Lingxi's current speed, she can escape even if she meets a first step Saint King.

They chased after the Ice Phoenix's projection for a long time.

Gradually, thick Honghua Vines appeared before them. They interwove in the air, both like seven-colored trees and like a colorful net.

"It's getting stronger," Mu Lingxi said. "We must be close to the Ice Fire Phoenix's land of inheritance."

Suddenly...

Whoosh!

A ball of fire rushed out of the Honghua Vines, hitting the Ice Phoenix projection in the air.

The phoenix cried out and fell from the sky with a thud.

The light shining from the projection had dimmed quite a lot.

Because her True Shadow was attacked, Mu Lingxi felt like her Blood Qi couldn't flow smoothly. She couldn't steady

herself and her delicate frame kept retreating. Just then, a warm yet large palm pressed onto her back. A whirlpool of Qi formed, helping to resolve the pressure that she was bearing.

Mu Lingxi looked back. She happened to see Zhang Ruochen's handsome face and sharp gaze.

"I'll do it."

A resilient and confident voice came out of Zhang Ruochen's mouth.

The fire didn't scatter. Instead, it rushed down.

It was a saint bird with three heads. However, its flames were too shocking, so it looked like a ball of fire.

Zhang Ruochen stared coldly at the bird. He formed a palm print with his right hand and hit it out.

A dragon flew out of his palm and crashed into the flaming bird. Then the two shattered at the same time into a rain of fire.

Demonic Sound was also shocked. "Is that a saint bird or a fireball?"

"It's just a picture drawn by some old man," Zhang Ruochen said.

Mu Lingxi collected the True Shadow back into her body. She guessed who the old man was and her small lips curled into a vague smile.

"Zhang Ruochen, I am the grandmaster of the Art Way. You better be respectful."

A robed elder walked out of the seven-colored Honghua Vines.

The man held a bronze brush and a hard expression. His eyes gleamed spiritedly and he had an arrogant aura.

It was none other than Chu Siyuan.

"Grandmaster of the Art Way?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "Sir Chrysanthemum, did you become arrogant after reaching the Saint King Realm?"

Hearing “Sir Chrysanthemum,” veins bulged on Chu Siyuan’s old face. Strong Spiritual Power poured out of him and gathered toward the bronze brush.

There were only three Spiritual Power cultivators in the entire Kunlun’s Field who could reach the Saint King Realm. Thus, he felt that it was normal and reasonable to call himself a grandmaster.

With his current attainment in Spiritual Power and Art Way, did he not qualify for this title?

He was actually mocked by a junior and called him something that he hated. How could he bear this?

“So what if I’m arrogant? I’ll teach you a lesson today.”

Chu Siyuan’s bronze brush was like a spiritual snake. He waved it quickly in his hands and drew abstruse patterns in the air.

Whoosh!

At almost the same time, Zhang Ruochen appeared before Chu Siyuan. Holding the Abyss Ancient Sword, he pointed it at Chu Siyuan’s forehead. It gleamed with sword light.

So fast! Chu Siyuan thought in alarm. At the same time, his brush was stopped. He didn’t continue drawing.

Zhang Ruochen lifted the black sword in his hands. “So what if you’re the grandmaster of the Art Way. Even if your Spiritual Power is twice as strong, I can still kill you with one strike if you’re within 30 feet.”

There was no fear in Chi Siyuan’s eyes. His expression was still cold, as if daring Zhang Ruochen to kill him.

“Where’s Qiu Yu?”

“He ran!” Chu Siyuan said.

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen didn’t believe him. “He was hurt. How could you not stop him with your cultivation?”

“You think I don’t want to kill that traitor who sided with the Luosha Race? But unfortunately, he really did escape.”

Thinking of what had happened, Chu Siyuan was frustrated. “I

chased him all the way into the Phoenix Nest, but something strange happened.”

“What strange thing?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“A parasol tree leaf took him away,” Chu Siyuan said. “The leaf flew extremely quickly. I used all my might but couldn’t catch up.”

Mu Lingxi blinked and laughed out loud. “Why do I feel like you’re making this up?”

Chu Siyuan was irritated. “I am a Confucius Way grandmaster and act justly. I’ve never told a lie in my life.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that stubborn Chu Siyuan saw his reputation as more important than his life. He wouldn’t lie.

Was Qiu Yu really saved by a leaf?

Eight beautiful figures walked out from behind Chu Siyuan. Each one was beautiful and they had different auras. They were like eight goddesses.

The Saint Lady, Qing Mo, Goddess Siming...

Other than Martial Saint Canglan, the other eight Heavenly Maidens were all here.

“In Zuling Field, two Supreme Saints have a close relationship with the Ice and Fire Phoenix,” the Saint Lady said. “Supreme Saint Wujin and The Qiao Ancestor. In legends, The Qiao Ancestor was a parasol tree. The Phoenix Nest is located on the tree.”

Zhang Ruochen put the sword away from Chu Siyuan’s forehead. “But there is no parasol tree near the Phoenix Nest.”

“This can only mean that the tree died and only a remnant of its consciousness remains. The remnant sensed Qiu Yu’s aura and had a tree take him away to accept The Qiao Ancestor’s inheritance.” The Saint Lady was analyzing the situation, but she sounded sure.

The guess she was suggesting was the only one possible now.

Zhang Ruochen looked behind Chu Siyuan and the eight Heavenly Maidens. “Wan Canglan is getting the inheritance of

the Ice and Fire Phoenix?”

“Indeed,” the Saint Lady said.

“Let’s go.”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Mu Lingxi’s little hand and strode toward the Honghua Vines.

Chu Siyuan and the other Heavenly Maidens rushed over, stopping Zhang Ruochen.

“What are you doing? We found the Ice and Fire Phoenix inheritance first. Do you want to steal it?” Goddess Siming’s voice was cold.

“Yes, so what?”

Zhang Ruochen stepped down and strong saintly might erupted. From a dozen meters away, it forced Goddess Siming back.

The other Heavenly Maidens and Chu Siyuan were gathering power to attack, but the Saint Lady stopped them.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen holding Mu Lingxi’s hands tightly, her heart jumped. She felt ineffable envy and bitterness.

However, it only flashed past her eyes. No emotions appeared on her face.

She used Spiritual Power to send a message to Chu Siyuan and the Heavenly Maidens. “Let them go. We can’t stop Zhang Ruochen. Plus, Sister Canglan has the Fire Phoenix Body. She can only take part of the Ice and Fire Phoenix’s inheritance. Mu Lingxi is the Ice Phoenix Body. She’ll take the other part.”

After saying this, the bitterness grew in her heart.

Zhang Ruochen led Mu Lingxi through the Honghua Vines and arrived at the side of the Yin Yang Lake.

Half of the water was Nether Winter Snow. The other half was Divine Fire Jingmie.

A three-inch-tall glittering crystal hovered in the center. There was a palm-sized phoenix inside the crystal. It was formed by

interwoven Rules of Saintly Way and the aura that it emanated formed great pressure. One had to feel reverent.

That crystal was the saintly source of the Ice and Fire Phoenix.

Martial Saint Canglan stood to the east of the saintly source. Half of her body was underwater. That water was formed by Divine Fire Jingmie and was extremely hot.

The fire had turned into liquid.

Red flaming wings sprouted from Martial Saint Canglan's back. As she kept circulating her technique, the liquid Divine Fire Jingmie slowly fused into her body.

“She can actually bear the burning of the Divine Fire Jingmie?”

Zhang Ruochen released his Spiritual Power to check and discovered something. Realization dawned in his eyes and he laughed. “I see.”

The Divine Fire Jingmie at the side of the lake wasn't pure. It had mixed with some Nether Winter Snow and they had countered each other, so it wasn't that hot or powerful. It was light blue.

The closer one came to the phoenix's saintly source, the darker the water and stronger the Divine Fire Jingmie. The fire reached a terrifying level closest to the saintly source and the color was between blue and white.

The other end of the lake was the same.

There was only Hundred-year Nether Winter Snow at the edge. Gradually, it turned into Thousand-year and Ten-thousand-year Nether Winter Snow. Closest to the saintly source, it turned into Extreme Nether Winter Snow.

“It's very dangerous to get the Ice and Fire Phoenix inheritance,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Is there anything in the world that you can get for free? Danger and opportunity exist side by side.”

Mu Lingxi didn't want to keep living under Zhang Ruochen's protection. She knew that this was her biggest chance. Even if

she would die, she still had to try.

A moment later, Mu Lingxi stepped into the lake and stood at the edge. Hundred-year Nether Winter Snow surrounded her.

Even Hundred-year Nether Winter Snow was piercingly cold. Mu Lingxi's delicate frame trembled, but she stood there adamantly instead of running back to land.

As she performed a technique, brilliant phoenix wings unfurled from her back.

How come all the girls I know try so hard? They should be able to live more easily. Involuntarily, a few beautiful figures appeared in his mind and he grew thoughtful.

But soon, he was shocked awake by clanging swords. The thoughts were buried in his heart again.

“Master, someone wants to steal the Merits Record Wall...”

Boom!

Strong Sword Qi hit Demonic Sound, knocking her down. The vines that had wrapped around the Merits Record Wall were also cut apart, turning into splinters and dust.

Chapter 1510 - Battle of Bet

Chapter 1510: Battle of Bet

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A black shadow rushed toward the Merits Record Wall.

“Not that easy.”

Zhang Ruochen released tremendous sword intent from his body, and he dashed toward that shadow like a trace of sword light.

That shadow was already right beside the Merits Record Wall. He immediately withdrew his hand as he saw the sword light going against him.

Walla!

Hundreds of fierce sword Qi were formed in front of the palm print, forming sword rain.

Boom!

After a blast, all the sword Qi crumbled.

Zhang Ruochen and that black shadow both took a couple steps back before they balanced themselves again. That black shadow was Sword Saint Jiuyou.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't surprised to see Sword Saint Jiuyou. After all, he was the only sword warrior in Zuling Field that was able to defeat Demonic Sound with one strike.

After becoming a saint king, Sword Saint Jiuyou's life expectancy surged, and he looked a bit younger than before. His hair turned dark again while freckles disappeared. His face was also less wrinkled, which made him look like a fifty-year-old.

Sword Saint Jiuyou was dazed that Zhang Ruochen managed to ward him off with one strike. “How great it is that Xuanji managed to have an incredible disciple like you. I can’t compare with him on that.”

“Indeed. My master is greater than you,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Sword Saint Jiuyou said, “That only means he’s luckier than me. Unfortunately, I’m better at sword way than him.”

“I don’t think so,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Sword Saint Jiuyou belonged to Black Market while Sword Saint Xuanji belonged to Martial Market Bank. They’d been mortal enemies against each other, and neither of them actually had prevailed, until the Sword Technique Conference.

However, Sword Saint Xuanji was poisoned by Blood Poison of Pluto, so that battle shouldn’t count, yet Sword Saint Jiuyou didn’t know about that and still thought he was stronger than Sword Saint Xuanji.

Sword Saint Jiuyou said, “You’re a proud disciple of Sword Saint Xuanji. I know you don’t want to admit it, but I indeed defeated Xuanji during the conference. You can’t possibly argue against that.”

“You didn’t defeat my master. He defeated himself,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“What do you mean?” Sword Saint Jiuyou asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, “My master was a soft guy in the past. He saved a child from the immortal vampire and cultivated him. Unfortunately, he was poisoned by his disciple right before the battle against you, otherwise, you couldn’t have defeated my master that easily.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou stayed silent for a while, then he laughed. “You just made the story up and blamed someone else for his defeat to defend your master’s honor. It’s such a cheap shot. I’ve been alive for more than five hundred years, so I’ve seen things like this many times. It doesn’t matter what you say, because nothing’s going to change the fact that I’m better at sword way than Xuanji.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly looked cold and said, “Do you dare accept my challenge since you’re so confident?”

“What do you mean? You want to restore your master’s name?”

Sword Saint Jiuyou loved to flaunt his power, but he was also a deep one. He said that because he wanted to anger Zhang Ruochen.

When someone’s mind was messed up, his power would also decline.

“You’re just a kid who’s not qualified to challenge me.” Sword Saint Jiuyou smiled and raise up his chin.

“I’ll give you the Merits Record Wall if you can defeat me.” Zhang Ruochen’s eyes gleamed fiercely as if he had to fight.

Sword Saint Jiuyou’s eyes blinked, and he said, “Really?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I swear it, in the name of my master.”

“Okay. I’ll give you a chance to defend your master’s honor.” Sword Saint Jiuyou smiled.

Sword Saint Jiuyou thought that he had angered Zhang Ruochen and made him panic as Zhang Ruochen was willing to offer the Merits Record Wall.

However, the player saw less clearly than the bystander.

Saint Lady kept shaking her head and frowned. She said, “Zhang Ruochen is completely different now.”

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t actually infuriated by Sword Saint Jiuyou. Instead, he had to resort to challenging Sword Saint Jiuyou using the Merits Record Wall as leverage.

Chu Siyuan, Sword Saint Jiuyou and Nine Heavenly Maiden were all powerful beings.

Sword Saint Jiuyou was almost undefeatable in close combat, and Chu Siyuan was extraordinary at distant battle and defense. As for the Nine Heavenly Maidens, they had lots of real treasures like Saint Book Ruzu, the Kitchen Knife of God of Food and the Godly Palace.

These three powers combined were invincible in Zuling Field.

Zhang Ruochen was indeed incredibly strong, yet it was almost impossible for him to defeat them all.

And besides, Zhang Ruochen needed to take care of Mu Lingxi as well.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't worried about Chu Siyuan and the Nine Heavenly Maidens, but Sword Saint Jiuyou was from the Evil Way, which meant he would do anything to achieve his goal. If Sword Saint Jiuyou attacked Mu Lingxi during the fight, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't know whether he should save Mu Lingxi or protect the Merits Record Wall.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen had already made up a plan to deal with Sword Saint Jiuyou the second he showed up.

If he could take Sword Saint Jiuyou out of the picture, it would be much easier for him to deal with Chu Siyuan and the Nine Heavenly Maidens.

Chu Siyuan then said, "Let's seize the Merits Record Wall, then you guys can fight one-to-one."

Zhang Ruochen flew to the top of the Merits Record Wall and said, "Senior Chu, you're the master of Painting Way, respect your reputation at least. Are you really going to team up to fight me? What if you lose?"

Chu Siyuan was known for caring too much about his reputation, so this move would always work on him.

Hearing what Zhang Ruochen said, Chu Siyuan blushed. He tried to trash talk back, but he suppressed it in the end.

Sword Saint Jiuyou sneered and said, "I think what Sect Leader Chu said makes sense. We should seize the Merits Record Wall first."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Didn't you say how magnificent your sword techniques are, Senior Jiuyou? Where did all your confidence go all of a sudden? You can get the Merits Record Wall if you can defeat me."

Sword Saint Jiuyou didn't know how to respond because he also valued his reputation. There was no reason for him to

show his compromise in front of a disciple of Sword Saint Xuanji.

Sword Saint Jiuyou frowned and said, “The Merits Record Wall is different. I’m confident I can defeat you, but what if something accidental happens? I don’t want to drag Kunlun’s Field down because of my recklessness.”

“Do you really think you can definitely seize the Merits Record Wall if you team up?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Of course,” Chu Siyuan said, after pondering for a while.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and shook his head. He took out a saint sword from his space ring and said, “I originally wanted to spare your life, but now, I have to use my trump card to kill you all. To tell you the truth, there’s a trace of godly power in this saint sword, and I’m the only who can use it. Once I trigger it, nobody can stop it.”

Chu Siyuan released a trace of mind power to inspect the saint sword, and he immediately retracted it after detecting the terrific force inside the sword. “Are you bluffing, Zhang Ruochen? Based on the rules of the Saints Merits Battle, competitors are not allowed to carry weapons like this into Zuling Field.”

The Saint Lady said, “Every priest from the Shatuo Seven Fields is allowed to carry a godly spirits weapon. He wasn’t bluffing.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Are you the priest of Kunlun’s Field?”

Saint Lady took out an heir stamp and said, “The godly power of her majesty is inside this heir stamp.”

Zhang Ruochen sensed a familiar force in the heir stamp... And it was Huang Yanchen.

It seemed that Huang Yanchen had indeed gone missing, otherwise Chi Yao wouldn’t have given her heir stamp to the Saint Lady as a godly spirits weapon.

Zhang Ruochen was dazed. He looked cold and said, “If I use my godly spirits weapon to kill Jiuyou and Chu Siyuan, you can’t stop me even if you have one too.”

“But I can kill you with it... Why do we have to do that to ourselves?” The Saint Lady squeezed that sentence out with her eyes closed.

They were facing a choice of life or death for the Merits Record Wall and the survival of the two worlds.

“Perhaps we’ll all die if we go into a full battle, and someone else might benefit from it. I reckon I’ll fight Zhang Ruoche myself to decide who gets the Merits Record Wall,” Sword Saint Jiuyou said.

Zhang Ruochen was relieved, as he didn’t really want to fight the Saint Lady and the others to death.

“If I lose, I’ll give the Merits Record Wall to Kunlun’s Field, but if you lose, shouldn’t you give me something as well, Senior Jiuyou?” Zhang Ruochen started to negotiate.

Sword Saint Jiuyou snorted and said, “Everyone knows you have countless valuables, which are desired even by supreme saints. Do you really think I have something you want?”

“I want that purple godly stone of Lord Lingquan,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Sword Saint Jiuyou couldn’t be more confident in himself. He wasn’t just a saint king, but had also completed sword eight. He was sure that there was no way he would be defeated by Zhang Ruochen who just became an absolute saint.

It was a fight he would definitely win!

“Okay! I can do that.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou flew to above the Merits Record Wall and stood right across from Zhang Ruochen. The forces coming out of their bodies became stronger and stronger, forming saint Qi swords in the space around them.

Zhang Ruochen was under a lot of pressure for this fight. He needed to keep the Merits Record Wall and defend the name of his master. Sword Saint Jiuyou was terrifically powerful, and he was able to form Sword Way Xuangang.

How powerful was one’s Sword Way Xuangang after they became a saint king?

Chapter 1511 - Victory And Defeat In An Instant

Chapter 1511: Victory And Defeat In An Instant

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Chu Siyuan and the eight Heavenly Maidens retreated into the distance and stared at the two on the Merits Record Wall.

“Is Zhang Ruochen really able to counter Sword Saint Jiuyou?” One of the maidens was doubtful.

“Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation hasn’t reached the Saint King Realm,” Goddess Siming said. “But his combat abilities aren’t any weaker than a Saint King. However, Sword Saint Jiuyou has cultivated in the Sword Way for more than 500 years. His knowledge is very deep. Zhang Ruochen hasn’t cultivated for a long time and he lacks accumulation.”

1

No matter how talented a swordsman was, they still needed to spend a great amount of time cultivating to get a result. It was impossible to become a strong swordsman in a day.

“Sword Way Xuangang is undefeatable. With just this one move, Sword Saint Jiuyou can look down one a first step Saint King. How can Zhang Ruochen be a match for him?”

Zhang Ruochen was strong, but no one believed that he could defeat Sword Saint Jiuyou.

...

Zhang Ruochen clearly knew how strong Sword Way Xuangang was too, so when their auras reached the peak, he moved sooner and attacked.

Whoosh!

The sword was like a ray of light.

All the Sword Qi in the sky converged to a point, becoming one with the tip of the Abyss Ancient Sword, shining with brilliant light.

“In my eyes, your sword technique is filled with flaws. It’s no different than a kid playing with a sword. If you want to fix Xuanji’s reputation with your abilities, you’re still far from it.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou didn’t use the nine swords in his Sea of Qi. Instead, he released the sword intent inside of him. The strong intent formed a white saint sword and cut down at the Abyss Ancient Sword like a white beam.

Any Sword Saint could release a sword of intent.

Other Sword Saints could only form a projection of the sword, like a beam of Sword Qi. However, Sword Saint Jiuyou’s sword of intent was no different from a true sword. It could be tangible and intangible.

Boom.

Before the Abyss Ancient Sword could reach within three feet of Sword Saint Jiuyou, the power that burst from the intent sword sent it flying. The intent sword didn’t dissipate. Instead, it shone with even more dazzling light and flew toward Zhang Ruochen like a streak of light.

Zhang Ruochen naturally knew how terrifying the intent sword was. He quickly put out the Monument Shield.

Whoosh!

The intent sword didn’t clash with the Monument Shield. Instead, it passed through directly.

At Sword Saint Jiuyou’s level, the sword intent could be a sword but was also a beam of intent. No physical objects could stop it.

The intent sword was about to penetrate Zhang Ruochen’s body. Suddenly, he dragged his finger and a spatial crack appeared.

Clashing with the spatial crack, the intent sword's power suddenly vanished.

Sword Saint Jiuyou's eyes hardened. He suddenly realized that Zhang Ruochen wasn't only a swordsman. He'd also cultivated the way of time and space, two of the nine Ancient Ways.

This thought flashed past and he sensed spatial waves around him. The ripples grew stronger and stronger as if the sky was about to fall down.

“Oh, no.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou's body turned into a streak of sword light and rushed into the air.

The space where he'd been standing suddenly had densely-packed cracks and collapsed into a black hole. The void appeared and had strong devouring power.

Even with Sword Saint Jiuyou's strong cultivation, he still couldn't counter spatial power. He had to keep throwing back defensive runes. As the runes exploded and blocked the devouring force of the broken space, Sword Saint Jiuyou finally escaped.

“I was too careless!”

He was covered in sweat. If he'd reacted half a beat slower, he probably would've died in that broken space.

Zhang Ruochen must have purposely seemed weaker to make him lower his guard and then unleash this fatal strike.

Seeing Sword Saint Jiuyou escape, Zhang Ruochen naturally felt disappointed, but he couldn't help it. The Supreme Saint power left in the Phoenix Nest placed heavy restrictions on cultivators. Even a Saint King couldn't unleash horribly destructive power.

Plus, the space in the Phoenix Nest was extremely sturdy. It was already a feat to make space collapse like this.

If they were fighting outside of the Phoenix Nest, his advantage would be even greater.

When his attack failed, Zhang Ruochen unleashed a dozen more spatial cracks, battering Sword Saint Jiuyou so he had no chance to fight back.

The spatial cracks wove into a web, forcing Sword Saint Jiuyou to keep dodging.

“Sword Saint Jiuyou is in the Saint King Realm. How can he be at a disadvantage?” The Holy Maidens felt speechless. This was completely different from what they’d expected.

“Zhang Ruochen is getting craftier,” Chu Siyuan said. “He purposely used the Sword Way to attack Sword Saint Jiuyou in the beginning to make him lower his guard. Then he used the spatial power without warning and immediately got the upper hand. After that, he wouldn’t let Sword Saint Jiuyou have another chance to attack.”

“Is Sword Saint Jiuyou going to lose?” Goddess Siming asked.

Chu Siyuan shook his head. “Sword Saint Jiuyou has gone through so many battles. He’ll definitely snatch the chance to fight back. Once that happens, Zhang Ruochen will most likely lose.”

The Saint Lady hid her hands in her sleeves. She clenched her fists, feeling very nervous.

The intensity of Zhang Ruochen and Sword Saint Jiuyou’s fight was comparable to that final battle between Sword Saint Xuanji and Jiyou. In this kind of battle, both sides would fight with all their might. It would be hard to pull back at the critical moment.

If defeated, they would most likely die.

Zhang Ruochen unleashed more than 200 spatial cracks in a row. Even with Sword Saint Jiuyou’s rich combat experience, he still had three bloody wounds.

“Boy, you actually hurt me. Not bad, huh.”

Fire burned in Sword Saint Jiuyou’s eyes. A bright light appeared on his forehead and nine saint swords rushed out, flying toward the spatial cracks.

“Nine Swords Devour the God.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou extended a hand over his head, controlling the nine swords remotely. Then he pressed down.

The nine swords emitted extreme power and the projection of nine flaming birds burst from his body. They produced deafening caws.

Then the nine birds pressed down at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen didn't panic. He poured Holy Qi into the Hundred Saint Blood Armor and it started glowing.

One hundred mid-level Saints rushed out of the armor.

The saintly projections became one with Zhang Ruochen, transforming into the power of 100 Saints. Then Zhang Ruochen stepped on the ground and formed a palm print with both hands, hitting the air.

Roar!

Argh!

A dragon and elephant's roar sounded.

The projection of a blue dragon and elephant appeared, combined with Zhang Ruochen's palm prints. They sent the flaming birds flying out and turning back into nine swords. After this collision, the ground under Zhang Ruochen's feet caved in.

The nine swords whooshed and flew back into the sky, melting into the center of a sun.

"That is..."

Zhang Ruochen looked up into the sky.

However, the rays of the sun were like blades, blinding him and forcing his eyes closed. At the same time, he felt a great burst of danger. It was like the sunlight could pierce his scalp.

"Sword Saint Jiuyou's trademark Consummate Technique!" Chu Siyuan exclaimed. "Red Sun Sword Technique."

The Sword Way ripples from the sun grew stronger and stronger. The heat it emitted seemed able to melt the entire Phoenix Nest.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and pushed up a spatial domain. At the same time, he activated the strongest spatial power and formed more than 100 spatial cracks with the domain as the center.

Whoosh!

Red Sword Qi rained down from the sun above, continuously attacking Zhang Ruochen.

In the distance, Chu Siyuan and the eight Heavenly Maidens sensed danger, so they retreated again.

Most of the Sword Qi was swallowed by the spatial cracks, but some also landed inside the spatial domain. This created quite a bit of trouble for Zhang Ruochen.

The sword rain from the red sun lasted for nine breaths. Suffering under the Sword Qi, the ground melted. The land around Zhang Ruochen completely turned into a sea of fire.

After the spatial cracks disappeared, the nine swords became one in Sword Saint Jiuyou's hands. He charged out of the blazing sun and became one with the Sword Qi in the air. He stabbed at Zhang Ruochen's head.

This attack already contained Sword Way Xuangang.

“Sword Eight.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou and the nine swords flew out of the sky like a meteorite about to destroy the world.

Zhang Ruochen bore great pressure. Clenching his jaw, he hit out the Buddha's sarira, activating its origin power. He pushed back with all his might.

This moment, the people standing in the distance were all extremely nervous. They sensed that this strike might determine victory and defeat, life and death.

Boom!

The nine swords hit the sarira, forming a shockwave instantly that shot in all directions.

Unfortunately, the sarira couldn't block Sword Saint Jiuyou. The sharp sword light continued to stab down.

“Spatial Twist.”

Zhang Ruochen pushed up with both hands. His meridians bulged on his face and body. He was fiercely manipulating the spatial rules and saintly power, using all his might to twist the space above him.

Finally, the nine swords were swayed and stabbed down on the side of Zhang Ruochen’s cheek.

The instant it stabbed down, even with the Hundred Saint Blood Armor’s protection, a long gash still opened up on Zhang Ruochen’s cheek. The gash went from his temple to his lower jaw. Red blood dripped down his chin.

One could imagine that Zhang Ruochen would probably be penetrated completely if the Spatial Twist was slightly weaker.

Boom!

Sword Saint Jiuyou’s sword hit the ground beside Zhang Ruochen and sent him flying from the reverberations. Thousands of beams of Sword Qi hit the Hundred Saint Blood Armor on his back, producing a string of explosions.

Seeing that this strike didn’t kill Zhang Ruochen, shock flashed past Sword Saint Jiuyou’s eyes. He lifted the sword and cut down on Zhang Ruochen again.

Zhang Ruochen was tossed into the air. He spun quickly and formed a sword print with his fingers. The moment that Sword Saint Jiuyou thought he’d won, he pointed.

“Chen Sword.”

At that moment, time stopped.

Sword Qi and Divine Fire Jingmie became one on his fingertip. He seized this extremely short moment and pointed at Sword Saint Jiuyou’s forehead.

Zhang Ruochen had already been sent flying by Sword Eight and the Xuangang and was undoubtedly going to be defeated. How could Sword Saint Jiuyou have expected that Zhang Ruochen could still fight back from his disadvantaged state?

Zhang Ruochen's finger didn't stab down. The fire at his fingertip was only one inch away from Sword Saint Jiuyou's forehead.

Sword Saint Jiuyou stopped and didn't attack anymore. He stabbed his nine swords into the ground. His expression was dazed and he felt great emotions. A moment later, he finally said with difficulty, "Is that the time sword technique?"

"Indeed," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Why didn't you use that at the beginning?"

"The time sword technique is my biggest trump card," Zhang Ruochen said. "I can't use it so casually. If I do, I must be sure that I can defeat my enemy, killing him."

"But then, why did you hold back and not kill me?"

"Someone like you shouldn't die in your own people's hands. Even if you die, you should die when fighting with the Luosha Race."

Sword Saint Jiuyou laughed out loud. A moment later, his smile turned wry. "I lost!"

Zhang Ruochen pulled back the finger pointing at his forehead. Then he formed a palm print and quickly slapped Sword Saint Jiuyou's chest.

Thud.

Sword Saint Jiuyou spat out blood and flew backward. He half-knelt on the ground, face paling greatly.

"Back then, you stabbed my teacher," Zhang Ruochen said. "Today, I hit you. Now, we don't owe each other anymore."

With this hit, Sword Saint Jiuyou wouldn't be able to fight with anyone for two hours.

Losing his strength, Chu Siyuan and the nine Heavenly Maidens wouldn't be able to steal the Merits Record Wall from Zhang Ruochen's hands.

Chapter 1512 - Inheritance

Chapter 1512: Inheritance

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“This is what I owe you... Cough Cough...”

Sword Saint Jiuyou took out a purple stone and gave it to Zhang Ruochen.

Sword Saint Jiuyou felt extreme pain whenever he moved his muscles. He couldn't help coughing, looking to be in pain. He had to sit down to take a pill, mobilizing his exercises to heal himself.

Zhang Ruochen took the purple stone. He saw a layer of saint light covering the stone.

The saint light seemed to belong to Sword Saint Jiuyou, and it seemed that it was used to suppress the power contained in the purple stone.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen released saint power from his fingers, crushing the saint light covering the purple stone.

Engravings emerged on the surface of the purple stone as the saint light cracked. It started to shake as if it had consciousness and didn't want to be controlled by Zhang Ruochen.

“Refine.”

Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out of Zhang Ruochen and started to refine the purple stone.

Soon, Lord Lingquan's saint power and saint intent left on the engravings all melted.

The purple stone turned tranquil, and a cold force came out of the stone.

“What is this? Is it a natural stone or made?”

Zhang Ruochen pinched the purple stone and observed it closely.

The purple stone wasn't that transparent. Instead, there were impurities, and there were also engravings filling the stone as if they were veins of human beings.

Lord Lingquan was able to perform in a way that was stronger than his cultivation, and after his turning the purple stone into the purple godly mountain, he was able to freeze the space with it.

That purple stone was priceless just for these two features.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the saint Qi inside his body and infused it into the purple stone, and after a while, the purple light became brighter and brighter, covering Zhang Ruochen's hands.

Zhang Ruochen started to observe the purple stone again.

The engravings inside the stone didn't change much. However, there were purple light spots emerging among those engravings.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the purple stone and waved his fist.

Boom!

A purple fist print hit the Honghua Vines, releasing tremendous energy ripples.

However, there were also formation inscriptions on the Honghua Vines, so they didn't break because of that.

“What an incredible treasure. My fist power just surged.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled, as he was satisfied.

The purple stone could not only increase the power of the user, but also give out purple light that was akin to the origin of Gods.

Zhang Ruochen then mobilized his saint Qi and infused it into the purple stone.

The engravings in the purple stone started to gleam, and the light coming out of the stone became brighter and brighter. Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to hold that power in his hand anymore.

The purple stone flew out of Zhang Ruochen's hand and turned into a purple godly mountain.

And the space that was already very solid became even more so, so that even Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to tear it apart.

He only put it away after testing the purple at all statuses.

"Congratulations on obtaining a true treasure, my lord," Demonic Sound said.

"It's indeed a wonderful treasure. I think it can do more than just improving my power and freezing the space. I'll study it further after getting back to Heaven World."

Zhang Ruochen walked toward Yin and Yang Lake with his hands behind his back.

None of the heavenly maidens dared stop Zhang Ruochen, as they were all intimidated by him as if he were a devil.

Sword Saint Jiuyou was one of the top-tier saints in Kunlun's Field, and Zhang Ruochen showed his tremendous power by defeating Sword Saint Jiuyou.

Who wouldn't be intimidated by that power?

There were only a few saint kings in Kunlun's Field, and each of them was a prominent overlord.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen also had that kind of power now.

Mu Lingxi stood on the hundred-year-old Pluto Winter Water. Her clothes and shoes were all wet.

There was a pair of phoenix wings glowing. With her performing her techniques, there was Pluto Winter Water flowing inside her body.

There were cracking sounds coming out of both Mu Lingxi's and Martial Saint Canglan's bodies. It was a test for both of their bodies.

The test was an excruciating process for both of them. Each moment was a torment of life or death for them. They wouldn't be able to withstand it if they didn't have strong enough willpower.

Impurities kept coming out of their bodies and got into Yin and Yang Lake.

"They need to temper their bodies first if they want to withstand the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix, otherwise their bodies will explode the second the inheritance falls on them," the Saint Lady said.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Which level can they attain?"

"Sub-Complete Body Constitution," the Saint Lady said.

Supreme Complete Body Constitution, Complete Body Constitution, and Sub-Complete Body Constitution were three different levels.

The Saint Lady said, "Only supreme saints who have attained Peak Realm can help temper the bodies of monks to Sub-Complete Body Constitution. Ice and Fire Phoenix was a Peak-Realm supreme saint, and its power was stored at the shore of Yin and Yang Lake, and that power is more than enough to help them attain Sub-Complete Body Constitution.

"Refiners' talents and willpower also determine whether they can reach Sub-Complete Body Constitution or not, otherwise, they might get killed instead of attaining Sub-Complete Body Constitution.

"Her majesty once paid a huge price to help the nine heirs attain Sub-Complete Body Constitution."

The power of the nine heirs could probably rival that of Sword Master Dongliu and Wu Hao, especially Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye. If they also had the same cultivation, they might be able to defeat them.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes glinted coldly, and he said, "The last sentence is what you really wanted to say, isn't it?"

The Saint Lady thought for a while, as she felt that she'd said something she shouldn't have said in front of Zhang Ruochen. "Zhang Ruochen, her majesty might've done something unfair to you, but she's in no way a bad person. She's contributed a lot to Kunlun's Field, and I know there're some complications between you two."

"Enough! Don't even try to bring her up in front of me."
Zhang Ruochen stopped the Saint Lady from continuing.

The Saint Lady knew that the empress was a triggering spot for Zhang Ruochen, and anyone who mentioned that would cause him pain, so she sighed and stopped saying anything about it,

The two women in Yin and Yang Ocean kept improving their body constitution, and they walked toward the Thousand-year Pluto Winter Water and lower-mie Divine Fire Jingmie.

With their body constitution getting close to Sub-complete level, saintly way rules flew out of the phoenix that were the size of palms at the center of the lake, and they rushed into the phoenix wings of Mu Lingxi and Martial Saint Canglan.

Obviously, the pressure and pain they were enduring became more and more severe, and their bodies were shivering the entire time. They started to bleed, and the spot where their wings and back were connected was torn.

Ahhh!

Both Mu Lingxi and Martial Saint Canglan started to scream in agony.

"Please hold onto it! Please succeed!"

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the crystal at the center of the lake, and he saw that the phoenix in the crystal was quickly shrinking, and all the saint power and saintly way rules were gushing toward Mu Lingxi and Martial Saint Canglan.

Whoosh!

When the energies surged, the water in Yin ang Yang Lake started to spin like a Taichi Diagram.

The power coming from the diagram was enormous, and everyone stepped so that they wouldn't be sucked inside.

Boom!

After fifteen minutes, the Taichi Diagram crumbled, releasing two traces of gleaming light and two phoenix sounds.

“She did it! Sister Canglan did it!”

“Sister Canglan's cultivation will definitely surge after getting the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix!”

All the eight heavenly maidens were exhilarated not just because they were close to Martial Saint Canglan, but also as they could integrate their bodies with her.

Martial Saint Canglan getting the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix meant all the nine heavenly maidens obtained it.

Mu Lingxi and Martial Saint Canglan flew out, flapping their glowing and beautiful wings.

Martial Saint Canglan's wings were engulfed in blue Divine Fire Jingmie, and they looked like a stove that could burn everything in the world.

As for Mu Lingxi's wings, they were giving out the Power of Pluto Ice, freezing the ground under her, and she had become a pinnacle absolute saint.

Most of the hereditary power from Ice and Fire Phoenix was stored in their wings, and only one ten thousandths of it merged with their body.

It would take them at least a hundred years to completely absorb the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix.

Mu Lingxi and Martial Saint Canglan weren't able to master the surging power in their bodies yet. Divine Fire Jingmie and Power of Pluto Ice kept gushing out of their bodies, and the people around the didn't dare approach them.

Zhang Ruochen walked to Mu Lingxi and said, “Get into the inner space of the Time and Space Crystal and study the power

of Ice and Fire Phoenix. I suggest you come out only after you can use the power at your will.”

“Sure thing,” Mu Lingxi said while walking into the Time and Space Crystal.

“Let’s go.”

Zhang Ruochen waved at Demonic Sound and prepared to leave.

“Are you really leaving with the Merits Record Wall, Zhang Ruochen?” Martial Saint Canglan yelled. A mighty force came out of her body, and with the burning Divine Fire Jingmie coming from her wings, she looked like a ferocious phoenix.

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance at her and said, “You had a hard time getting the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix. Cherish your life.”

“How dare you...”

Martial Saint Canglan was very bad-tempered, and after hearing that, her eyes turned into balls of fire. She grabbed Fentian Sword and stabbed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out of her phoenix wings, which merged with Fentian Sword, making the power from the sword surge.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the purple stone, turned around and waved it against Martial Saint Canglan.

Boom!

The purple fist and the tip of Fentian Sword clashed with each other, and the purple fist knocked Martial Saint Canglan away.

Fentian Sword flew out, and Martial Saint Canglan’s arm was covered in blood, and she spat out blood after falling on the ground, unable to stand up anymore.

“Don’t be too arrogant. It’s better for you to spend more time studying the saintly way of Ice and Fire Phoenix.”

Zhang Ruochen left with Demonic Sound and Merits Record Wall, and nobody dared to stop him.

Chapter 1513 - Owner Of The Sundial

Chapter 1513: Owner Of The Sundial

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After Mu Lingxi and Martial Saint Canglan received the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix, the formation in the Phoenix Nest lost the support of the Supreme Saint power and dimmed.

Zhang Ruochen went to the side of a Honghua Vine. Activating the Abyss Ancient Sword, he cut down.

Thud!

The formation runes on the vine only flashed before getting cut down by the power of the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't do this before.

“The saintly source and Rules of Saintly Way of the Ice and Fire Phoenix have both entered Lingxi and Wan Canglan's wings. The defense of the Phoenix Nest is weakening quickly. It won't be long before the formation becomes completely useless.”

Zhang Ruochen collected the Honghua Vines while searching for the hunter god's Godly Star Soul.

A treasure like the Honghua Vines could only be chanced upon.

Earlier, if not for the Honghua Vines' help, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't have reached the Absolute Saint Realm so quickly. This one point proved the Honghua Vine's value.

Demonic Sound was also collecting Honghua Vines.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower had terrifying talent. It could directly absorb a Saint's Blood Qi, saintly power, and even Rules of Saintly Way to convert into its nutrition. This was very enviable.

However, if the Holy Carnivorous Flower wanted to use the saintly power and Rules of Saintly Way at will, she still needed to spend a lot of time to comprehend them. Otherwise, she was no different than an infant with a muscular body.

The Honghua Vines were also valuable to her.

"Master, is the Godly Star Soul of the hunter god really in the Phoenix Nest?" Demonic Sound asked. "How can this kind of treasure not have any aura? Could Princess Luosha be lying?"

They'd collected quite a lot of Honghua Vines. Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound had walked for a long time in the Phoenix Nest but didn't discover anything. Naturally, she grew doubtful.

"If there is no Godly Star Soul," Zhang Ruochen said while thinking, "Princess Luosha wouldn't have infiltrated beside me so calculatedly and used me to help undo the spatial formation. The only possibility is that she'd guessed incorrectly or the hunter god never put his Godly Star Soul in the Phoenix Nest."

"Then we..."

Demonic Sound was about to say something when the space of the entire Phoenix Nest shook violently, crackling.

It was like the sound of space cracking.

The ground underfoot quickly started sinking in.

"What's going on?" Demonic Sound was shocked.

"The space in the Phoenix Nest will collapse soon."

Zhang Ruochen didn't panic. After all, the spatial structure here was relatively stable. It wouldn't collapse in an instant. They could leave without any worry.

“Great changes are happening to the spatial structure. Perhaps, the sundial will have changes too. Let’s go and look. I hope we can take it away.”

Zhang Ruochen was indeed disappointed at not finding the Godly Star Soul, so he wanted even more to take the sundial.

The two hurried toward the sundial. When they were almost there, Zhang Ruochen suddenly sensed a familiar aura and hurriedly stopped.

“Princess Luosha’s aura.”

Zhang Ruochen quickly activated the 12 Buddhist pearls to cover his and Demonic Sound’s aura, so Princess Luosha’s strong Spiritual Power wouldn’t discover them.

“Could Princess Luosha have discovered the sundial?”
Demonic Sound asked.

“Most likely.”

Zhang Ruochen was silent for a bit. “Take the Merits Records Wall and leave the Phoenix Nest now. Then find a secret place to hide.”

“Lord Lingquan and many first marquises have also entered the Phoenix Nest,” Demonic Sound said. “If they ally with Princess Luosha, are you confident in defeating them?”

“No matter how dangerous it is, the sundial is worth the try.”

Sharp light gleamed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

“Okay.”

Demonic Sound knew how valuable the sundial was to Zhang Ruochen. He would never give it up, so without speaking further, she took the Merits Record Wall and went in the other direction.

As soon as Demonic Sound left, Princess Luosha’s cold voice traveled over from the distance. “Who is it? Is it fun to hide before me?”

Zhang Ruochen was silently impressed.

He'd activated the Buddhist pearl instantly, but Princess Luosha had still sensed him and came over to look.

This woman's perceptiveness was honestly terrifying.

Princess Luosha's beautiful figure walked out of the seven-colored light, appearing around 100 feet away. She wore a blue dress that showed her tall and curvy figure. Her snow-white hands held a saint staff. There was no demonic aura about her. Instead, she looked more like a fairy.

Zhang Ruochen didn't retreat or try to attack. Instead, he used the Traceless 36 Changes before Princess Luosha and transformed into Lord Lingquan.

Seeing Lord Lingquan standing in the distance, Princess Luosha was quite surprised. "It's you? Why are you acting so sneaky?"

Pretending to be Lord Lingquan, Zhang Ruochen said, "I was worried about Your Highness's safety, so I snuck into the Phoenix Nest."

Princess Luosha released her Spiritual Power and searched around. "You're alone?"

"Yes."

Hesitation appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face. "Princess, you're not with Zhang Ruochen?"

Princess Luosha was quite cold to Lord Lingquan. She didn't smile. "Zhang Ruochen already saw through my disguise, so you don't have to hide anymore either. Since you're here, then come and study something with me."

Zhang Ruochen strode over, asking, "What thing?"

"Something very interesting. I promise you've never seen it before."

Princess Luosha didn't suspect Zhang Ruochen's status. After all, Zhang Ruochen was now very advanced in the Traceless 36 Changes. As long as he didn't have any major errors, he could fool anybody.

Princess Luosha walked forward. She had a sweet fragrance, paired with a flawless figure and curves at her waist. As he followed her, even with Zhang Ruochen's mindset, he still couldn't help but think of how they'd cultivated together back then.

Faced with someone with a perfect appearance and talent, who also had a noble status, it was no wonder that Lord Lingquan was infatuated.

Princess Luosha could naturally sense "Lord Lingquan" staring at her. She felt disgusted, but she repressed her feelings. After all, Lord Lingquan had a special status in the Luosha Race too. He wasn't a nobody that she could kill off.

As expected, Princess Luosha took Zhang Ruochen near the sundial. She stopped within 120 feet of it.

"What is this? You can actually hear water flowing out of this ugly rock."

Pretending not to sense the danger, Zhang Ruochen strode forward.

Princess Luosha shook her head, thinking, He really is brash, even daring to run around such an eerie place. He's so far off from Zhang Ruochen.

"Be careful. The space around the sundial is filled with the power of time. If you continue walking, it'll be suicide."

Suspicion flashed past Princess Luosha's eyes.

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly retreated to Princess Luosha's side. "The power of time?" he asked, confused. "What is this sundial?"

1

"The sundial is something that some human civilizations use to measure time. If I've guessed correctly, then this sundial should be a top treasure for controlling time. Also... Perhaps it's connected to the Godly Star Soul."

Zhang Ruochen's heart jumped. "How is that possible?" he asked, stunned. "The Godly Star Soul is actually hidden in that ugly rock?"

Princess Luosha rolled her eyes. “When did I say that it’s hidden inside of the sundial? It’s just that this is the only thing in the Phoenix Nest that I do not understand. If I were the hunter god, I might hide the secret of the Godly Star Soul inside a time treasure too.”

“But we can’t get close to the sundial,” Zhang Ruochen said. “How about I go capture Zhang Ruochen? With his control of time, he might be able to help us get the sundial.”

Princess Luosha stared at him as if looking at an idiot. “With the kind of person Zhang Ruochen is, do you think you can order him around? Plus, with my tactics, I’m not even confident in capturing him. You shouldn’t go offend him, lest you fall into his hands instead.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t expect that Princess Luosha would think so highly of him and felt quite stressed. Because the more Princess Luosha thought of him, the worse her tactics would be when fighting with him.

Princess Luosha raised her dewy face and stared up at the sundial. “There is no sun in the Phoenix Nest, nor is there sunlight,” she murmured. “Why did the Ice and Fire Phoenix put a sundial here?”

“Princess, you are well-read and knowledgeable. Do you know the background of the sundial?”

Princess Luosha had thought for a long time without getting an answer. Hearing Zhang Ruochen’s question, she replied, “The sundial must have existed for a very long time. There’s no way to find out who made it. However, I do know that it existed once in the universal godly battle 100,000 years ago. At that time, the person who controlled it was a terrifying figure from Kunlun’s Field.”

“Who?”

Zhang Ruochen had some guesses, so he desperately wanted to know the answer.

Princess Luosha grew suspicious. Glancing at Zhang Ruochen, she asked, “Why are you so excited?”

Zhang Ruochen laughed loudly. “The sundial is such a treasure,” he said as a cover-up. “Whoever can control it must be extremely powerful. I’m naturally curious.”

1

Princess Luosha wasn’t suspicious anymore. “He is powerful, of course. Many divine creatures from the Hell World died in his hands during that battle. Even my father is respectful when mentioning him. He controlled two of the Ancient Ways—time and space. He was known as Saint Monk Xumi.”

“Saint Monk Xumi,” Zhang Ruochen echoed.

“He wouldn’t call himself a Buddha until Hell was empty. He wouldn’t call himself a god until Hell was empty. Otherwise, with his extreme abilities, how could he only be a Saint Monk? It wouldn’t be an exaggeration even for him to be called a Divine Buddha.”

Princess Luosha continued, “The Ice and Fire Phoenix must’ve found the place where Saint Monk Xumi passed on and received this sundial.”

Chapter 1514 - The Sundial Under the Stars

Ice and Fire Phoenix built the Phoenix Nest using Honghua Vines, and they only grew in the place where Saint Monk Xumi had died.

Had Ice and Fire Phoenix been to where Saint Monk Xumi had died?

Zhang Ruochen was thrilled. Saint Monk Xumi wasn't just someone who changed his fate, but also his teacher. He would've visited the place if he had known it was where Saint Monk Xumi had died.

Zhang Ruochen tried not to show any of his emotions. He asked, "Do you know where Saint Monk Xumi died?"

Princess Luosha shook her head and said, "A hundred thousand years ago, Saint Monk Xumi exhausted all his godly power to seal holes between Kunlun's Field and Hell World, after which he died in the astral sky. Many great beings from Hell World and Heaven World tried to find the place where he died so that they could obtain peak opportunities, but all their efforts were in vain. I just didn't expect to find some traces in the Phoenix Nest."

Boom!

The space in the Phoenix Nest shook again.

Even Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha couldn't stand up straight.

The space cracked a little bit after that shaking.

If someone was standing at the top of one of the ninety-nine saint mountains and looked toward the Phoenix Nest, he or she could see the Honghua Vines cracking, which was making deafening sounds.

The Cold Ocean formed by Pluto Winter Water and the Fire Ocean formed by Divine Fire Jingmie around the Phoenix Nest were greatly affected, leading to huge waves.

Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha, who were standing close to the Sundial, found that the time print light spots around the Sundial started to disappear.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha were thrilled as they rushed toward the Sundial.

Whoosh!

The seven-colored clouds dispersed above the Sundial, and the sky above the Phoenix Nest showed up.

Eight shining stars emerged in the sky, and the light coming out of the clouds was reflected on the stone table that was holding the Sundial.

The table was a hundred feet tall and three hundred feet long, and with the light shining upon the table, it released dimming blue light, which made it look divine.

At this moment, mysterious characters and light spots emerged on the table, and after they were connected, it looked like a sacred picture of a Buddha and an astral sky picture.

There were hundreds of thousands of light spots, and the lines connecting them were thick.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha knew the picture was immensely valuable, so they started to memorize the characters on it. Unfortunately, the characters dimmed after an instant.

“Damn it.”

Even Princess Luosha had only memorized half of it with her great mind power, and it was the same for Zhang Ruochen.

“How much can you remember?” Princess Luosha asked.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to tell her the truth, so he said, “Only ten percent. It vanished too fast.”

Princess Luosha said, “It’s already impressive that you could remember ten percent of it. You’re finally being useful for

once this time. Draw what you've memorized for me after we go back."

"Sure."

Zhang Ruochen asked, "What are those characters? Can we find where Saint Monk Xumi died using them?"

"Very likely."

Princess Luosha raised her head and looked to the eight stars in the sky. Her eyes gleamed, and she said, "Orion Eight Stars."

Orion Eight Stars were in the sky above Zuling Field, and they were giving out gleaming light. The light shone upon the ground, looking divine.

The light cast a shadow of the stick on the Sundial on the ground.

There were twelve time zones on the Sundial, which corresponded to the twelve double-hours in a day.

And that shadow stopped at twelve twenty.

However, it wasn't twelve twenty at the moment, which made the shadow very special.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha realized that, so they both started to ponder what it meant.

"There's no way the Sundial was put here for no reason, and there must be a reason why the light from the Orion Eight Stars shines upon the Sundial, but what does twelve twenty mean?"

Princess Luosha whispered to herself as she thought it was a trace left by Orion God, and she thought that she could find the Godly Star Soul of Orion God, yet she couldn't think of anything.

Princess Luosha shook her head and said, "Doesn't matter. The Phoenix Nest is crumbling, so let's bring the Sundial back to the Luosha race to study it."

The Sundial was just a time valuable which itself didn't have much power.

It only released a tremendous amount of time print light spots because it was activated, and it came from the saint source of Ice and Fire Phoenix.

After Mu Lingxi and Martial Saint Canglan seized the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix, the saint source merged with their phoenix wings, and without the saint power which powered the Sundial, its forces withered away.

The stone table that was a hundred feet tall integrated with the Sundial.

A Buddha picture showed up under the light of the Orion Eight Stars, so obviously, it was a treasure.

Princess Luosha walked to the stone table, took out a space box that was as large as her palm, mobilized her evil sha Qi and prepared to take the stone table and the Sundial away.

“No!”

Princess Luosha noticed an incredibly dangerous force coming after her.

Just as she was about to activate her protection rune, she felt that she was being hit by a fist print, knocking her away and onto the stone table.

Zhang Ruochen was trying to kill Princess Luosha with that strike.

After all, Princess Luosha was his mortal enemy, so he could never show any mercy just because they had integrated their mind power before.

As for the things that Princess Luosha had said, like ‘You’re my destiny,’ ‘I’m the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine,’ and ‘I’ll give you the Merits Record Wall if you help me get the inheritance of Ice and Fire Phoenix,’ he couldn’t believe a word.

Zhang Ruochen hated girls who lied, and he also hated being deceived.

Besides, if he couldn’t eradicate her, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t guarantee his survival if she took revenge.

And also, Zhang Ruochen knew that he was becoming more and more ruthless.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't manage to kill Princess Luosha with that strike.

Princess Luosha's Ten Thousand Saints Blouse had extraordinary defense power, and when Zhang Ruochen hit her, the godly engravings on her body dissolved most of the force.

Bang!

Princess Luosha fell to the ground with blood on her lips. Her body was shivering as she looked at 'Lord Lingquan' standing near her. 'Lord Lingquan' was holding a purple stone, and the hand holding the purple stone had almost killed her.

Princess Luosha thought he was the real Lord Lingquan, so she looked incredibly cold. "You're so great at deceiving. I thought you were nothing but a reckless man, yet you almost killed me just now."

Zhang Ruochen didn't respond to that, and instead, he tried to attack her again.

"You'll only die if you decide to stand against me. You're nowhere near strong enough to get the Sundial."

Princess Luosha took out a silver blade that was half a foot long, and with her mobilizing the evil sha Qi in her body, godly might gushed out of the dagger, shaking the space around her.

The space cracks got larger and larger.

"It's a... godly spirits weapon..."

Zhang Ruochen immediately took out a space ring, putting both the Sundial and the stone table inside seeing Princess trying to trigger the godly spirits weapon.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen immediately started to run as fast as possible.

Boom!

After flying for a hundred miles, he felt a godly power ripple coming against him in the form of silver light.

“A godly spirits weapon indeed.”

After triggering his Hundred Saints Blood Armor, Zhang Ruochen also threw out a lot of protection runes, and the light turned into layers of defense screens.

Crack Crack!

The defense light screens kept exploding as they couldn't ward off the silver light at all.

Zhang Ruochen was lucky enough to get out of the Phoenix Nest right before he was about to be hit by the silver light.

The silver light broke the corner of the Phoenix Nest, and crushed Honghua Vines fell into Fire Ocean.

“Damn it! He got away!”

Princess Luosha was severely injured, so she couldn't chase Zhang Ruochen.

Lord Lingquan and the first marquises from the Luosha race sensed the power coming from the godly spirits weapon, so they immediately rushed to Princess Luosha.

“Which bastard wounded you like this, your highness?” Lord Lingquan couldn't help yelling in anger.

Princess Luosha seemed to be a bit confused, and after observing the look on Lord Lingquan's face, she immediately realized it wasn't the real Lord Lingquan who had attacked her. She asked, “Where's your purple godly stone?”

Lord Lingquan didn't know why Princess Luosha asked him a question like that. He said with embarrassment, “It was stolen by a sword warrior from Kunlun's Field...”

Feeling incredibly awkward, Lord Lingquan immediately added, “That sword warrior is extraordinary. He'd finished Sword Way Xuangang, and he's also become a saint king. Perhaps only the first marquises who have just become saint kings can rival him.”

Princess Luosha looked belligerent. She said, “Give them my order. Capture that sword warrior from Kunlun’s Field, dead or alive. Whoever can bring me that sword warrior, I’ll crown them as a lord.”

Chapter 1515 - Frustrated Jiuyou

Chapter 1515: Frustrated Jiuyou

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The light from the Phoenix Nest grew dimmer and dimmer.

In the sea of fire, the mid-level Divine Fire Jingmie had already scattered. The heat was dropping rapidly too. This was why Zhang Ruochen could jump into the sea without getting burned to death.

Sizzle, sizzle.

Zhang Ruochen transformed into a beam of bloody light and rushed out of the sea of fire. The Hundred Saint Blood Armor on him had heated up to a golden red hue. It was scalding and had sparks of fire. He looked back. The huge Phoenix Nest was burning under the Divine Fire Jingmie. Fire rushed into the sky—dazzling and beautiful.

The huge fireball seemed to be a rising phoenix.

“As the Phoenix Nest is reduced to ashes, the glorious era of the Ice and Fire Phoenix will pass. Zuling Field once gave birth to millions of beings and endless civilizations. Now, this world will disappear in the universe and become a passage in history.”

“The gods have all died. The Supreme Saints have turned to dust. Who in this world can retain a complete corpse?”

“How many heroes who deserve to be sung about have existed on this land? How much love and hate, how many talented men and women... Only tragedy and ruins remain now.”

Zhang Ruochen was filled with emotions. He felt a bit depressed and couldn't help but ask, "When will this era of blood and destruction end?"

1

No one could give him an answer—not even a god.

Zhang Ruochen looked into the distance and saw that the 99 saint mountains surrounding the Phoenix Nest were covered in battle. The sounds of war kept traveling out and waves of saintly power pulsed out into the world.

"The war between the Shatuo Seven Fields and the Luosha Race must have already started when I entered the Phoenix Nest." Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath. Putting away his negative emotions, he grasped his Abyss Ancient Sword again.

Zhang Ruochen hated killing, but if he didn't pick up his sword to kill, he would only get killed.

Holy Qi circulated rapidly within him. Then a pair of dragon wings opened up on his back. He flew out of the sea of fire and released his Spiritual Power to contact Demonic Sound.

Demonic Sound hit near the sea of fire. She carried the 12 Buddhist beads, so she could cover her aura and wasn't exposed.

"Master."

Demonic Sound took out the 12 Buddhist beads and returned them to Zhang Ruochen.

He put the beads back on his wrist. Seeing that the Merits Record Wall was still there, he let out a relieved breath.

"Princess Luosha, Lord Lingquan, Chu Siyuan, Sword Saint Jiuyou... When did they all leave the Phoenix Nest?"

"They left one after another an hour ago."

Doubt appeared on Demonic Sound's pretty face. "Sword Saint Jiuyou seemed to have gotten a valuable treasure. Lord Lingquan and a group of first marquises were chasing after him."

"Oh, really?"

Zhang Ruochen felt heavy and shook his head. “He might not have received a treasure. Lord Lingquan may be chasing him to take back the purple divine stone.”

Even though Sword Saint Jiuyou had lost the stone to Zhang Ruochen, Lord Lingquan didn't know this.

Maybe due to the fact that many Luosha cultivators were chasing after Sword Saint Jiuyou, the bank of the fire sea was relatively peaceful. Occasionally, some Luosha marquises flying in the air would discover Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound, but Zhang Ruochen would kill them instantly.

Fifteen minutes later, Zhang Ruochen and Demonic Sound reached the peak of Xifeng Saint Mountain. They looked toward the other mountain.

Instantly, their hearts were shaken. They couldn't help but gasp.

It was too impressive and tragic.

The land where the 99 mountains were situated had turned into ruins. Countless Luosha marquises and Shatuo Seven Fields Saints kept killing each other. The sounds of war broke into the clouds while the ground was covered in corpses.

Corpses of Luosha marquises, savage beasts, humans...

The mountains and rivers were dyed red with blood. The formation runes distributed through the mountains had long been wiped away. The souls and anger of the Saints rushed into the sky, turning into black clouds.

Saints were the top beings in any major world, but they kept dying here, flesh and blood flying, souls scattering.

Roar!

A half-step Saint King of Great Devil Ten Square Field let out a long roar. Demonic Qi rushed out of his body, transforming into a demonic cloud. His body kept swelling until he was hundreds of feet tall.

Kaboom.

The half-step Saint King had two horns and a body like an ox. He galloped across, killing in the midst of the Luosha marquises. Countless Luosha marquises were trampled under his feet.

Unfortunately, there were too many of them. More than 1,000 saint weapons hit him at the same time, injuring him greatly. The huge frame fell heavily to the ground.

A first marquis with red hair swung his sword down, cutting off the half-step Saint King's head, and he swallowed it directly.

The other marquises swarmed over like maggots and surrounded the half-step Saint King's body.

Moments later, only a white skeleton remained on the bloody earth.

The half-step Saint King who'd been so powerful earlier became food for the Luosha the next moment.

This kind of scene kept playing in the 99 saint mountains. No matter how strong one was, only death was possible after getting surrounded by strong cultivators.

"This battle has lasted for at least one day," Zhang Ruochen analyzed based on the destruction of the 99 saint mountains and number of corpses on the ground.

The battlefield not far from the Xifeng Saint Mountain was especially intense. An elderly figure attracted Zhang Ruochen's attention.

It was Sword Saint Jiuyou.

About seven or eight hundred Luosha marquises were pursuing Sword Saint Jiuyou. Each one was a top fighter. Among them, the dozen figures at the front were especially strong. Thick Evil Sha Qi poured out of them, making them look like demonic lords.

"Sword Saint Jiuyou is actually being chased by a dozen first marquises," Demonic Sound said. "More and more Luosha cultivators are hurrying over too. It doesn't seem like they only want the purple divine stone."

Sword Saint Jiuyou's robes were bloodied and he felt very frustrated.

Earlier, he'd been heavily injured by Zhang Ruochen in the Phoenix Nest. He recovered with difficulty and had just left the nest when a group of Luosha marquises ran out, wanting to kill him.

The Nine Heavenly Maidens and Chu Siyuan were with him.

But the Luosha targeted him and the top fighters attacked him. Only the weaker marquises went to attack the Nine Heavenly Maidens and Chu Siyuan.

“Do you really think I'm weak and easy to bully?”

Sword Saint Jiuyou was a very proud person. At first, he'd proudly fought with the hundreds of marquises by himself and his nine swords. But the marquises didn't show any fear. When the ones at the front were killed, the ones behind would charge over.

As more and more Luosha figures appeared, Sword Saint Jiuyou started faltering no matter how strong he was. He could only hold his sword and run. After all, even he would be killed if he was surrounded.

“Kill! The Princess says that anyone who kills him today can become king.”

“I want to become king! Who will come help me activate the Second Yao power of the Thousand-blade Sword?”

“Use the Extreme Blood Map and kill him.”

...

The dozen first marquises were very fanatic. They all desperately wanted to become king. They kept screaming and stared at the fleeing Sword Saint Jiuyou as if he were a naked beauty.

In addition, the second and third marquises also screamed while rushing in from all directions.

They couldn't help it. Becoming king was too tempting. It meant that they could be above the other marquises, receive

more advanced cultivation scrolls, more land, etc.

Poof!

Sword Saint Jiuyou used the Red Sun Sword Technique and stabbed a first marquise, shattering him.

But before he could take a breath, a blood map pressed down above him.

In the distance, five first marquises poured their Holy Qi into a saint sword. More than 20,000 runes appeared on the blade, forming two layers of Holy Qi. A terrifying force burst from the sword.

Sword Saint Jiuyou cried out and used his fastest speed to run forward.

Kaboom!

The Extreme Blood Map and Thousand-blade Sword fell down, crushing half of a mountain. The land within 1,000 miles shook and chaotic power ripples covered the ground.

Sword Saint Jiuyou rushed out of the heavy dirt. His hair was bloody and his robe was tattered. He kept spitting out blood, but he continued running forward.

“He isn’t dead? Continuing to charge forward for me, the lord! I want him, dead or alive.”

“He can’t run. I want to become king.”

“We’ve set up the Thousand-star Formation around the 99 mountains. No Saint from the Shatuo Seven Fields can escape.”

...

The strong Luosha cultivators continued to chase Sword Saint Jiuyou like a flood.

The Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields exchanged glances. They didn’t know why this would happen, but when Sword Saint Jiuyou rushed toward them, they would scatter.

Right now, he was like a bad luck star. Whoever got near him would undoubtedly be targeted by a large group of Luosha

marquises.

“What exactly did Sword Saint Jiuyou do to attract the anger of those Luosha marquises?”

“The swordsman from Kunlun’s Field must have received the Ice and Fire Phoenix inheritance. I’m so jealous.”

At the top of Xifeng Saint Mountain, Zhang Ruochen was a bit shocked. He subconsciously tapped his chin. “They wouldn’t cause such a commotion for a purple divine stone. Did Sword Saint Jiuyou really find some extreme treasure in the Phoenix Nest? This old guy is that lucky?”

Zhang Ruochen guessed this because if the purple divine stone really was this important, Lord Lingquan wouldn’t have left it behind as he ran.

Chapter 1516 - Thousand-Star Formation

Chapter 1516: Thousand-Star Formation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

More than half of the great beings from the Luosha race and Shatuo Seven Fields were gathered in the area of the ninety-nine saint mountains.

The saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields formed formation after formation to defend themselves.

Only some of the top-tier great beings were able to fight back against the Luosha race.

There had already been a huge group of Luosha marquises, and after Princess Luosha deployed three million Luosha soldiers, there were far more Luosha saints than those from the Shatuo Seven Fields.

Even though the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, Wu Hao, Fang Yi, Wan Zhaoyi and other leaders from the Shatuo Seven Fields had fully prepared themselves, they only had an advantage during the start of the fight, and with more Luosha marquises coming, they were suppressed immediately.

Saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields kept being killed.

There were more than a hundred thousand saints from Guanghan Field before, but now, Zhang Ruochen saw only thirty thousand saints from Guanghan Field that were still alive.

Even counting those saints who hadn't entered the ninety-nine saint mountains, there were fewer than fifty thousand.

Which meant more than half the saints from a large field were killed, showing how brutal the battle was. If the battle went on, chances were, all the saints from Guanghan Field would get killed.

As for the other six large fields, they also suffered from a great loss, and the saints kept seeing their friends and families being killed.

Spiritual Flame Demonic Dragon led a team of more than ten saint kings from Great Devil Ten Square Field while riding a demonic dragon that was dozens of miles long. They dashed toward the army of the Luosha race, and instantly, hundreds of Luosha marquises were killed.

Half a million saints from Great Devil Ten Square Field entered Zuling Field, so it was normal that more than ten of them became saint kings in three months.

“Formation Saint Master from the Luosha race set up Thousand-Star Formation around the ninety-nine saint kings, and you’re far from powerful enough to break it.”

Yang Qi flew out, holding a long fiery spear in his hand, flapping his black wings and looking at the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine with a smile

Yang Qi had supreme complete body constitution, and he could suppress a first-step saint king, making him the second strongest person among the Luosha saints, second only to Princess Luosha.

Unlike Lord Lingquan, Yang Qi was intelligent and calm, and in charge of the Luosha army when Princess Luosha was absent.

Which was why the Luosha army was able to fight back even if it was ambushed and encircled by the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields.

“We suffered a huge loss because of the ambush last night, so all the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields will pay for it with their lives.”

One saint king after another flew to the sky and gathered with Yang Qi.

The Luosha race had twice as many saint kings as Great Devil Ten Square Field did.

Dozens of saint kings gathered and started to fight, and that area became forbidden to the saints and Luosha marquises who hadn't become saint kings, as even the waves from the fight among the saint kings were strong enough to kill them.

“You need to be stronger than this to have us pay with our lives.”

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine looked heroic. She raised her arms, and two balls of Nanling Dragon Fire gushed out of her palms.

And just as she was about to wield the Dragon Fire, a crimson Evil Sha Cloud flowed toward her, darkening the sky and land. Someone raged in the cloud.

Sword Saint Jiuyou was fleeing in front of the Evil Sha Cloud. “Haven't you had enough? Fight me one-to-one if you dare.”

“Who said we're going to fight you one-to-one? You'd better kill yourself in front of me if you don't want to die in a tragic way.”

“You're not getting away with it. You hurt our princess, and now, you're doomed.”

“Give the treasure you robbed from our princess to us.”

Sword Saint Jiuyou was very frustrated, as he was sure that there was some serious misunderstanding between him and the Luosha race, yet he didn't have the time to clarify it, and besides, there was no use doing it.

Seeing where all the dozens of saint kings were, Sword Saint Jiuyou immediately rushed there.

“Damn it.”

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine was dazed seeing the Evil Sha Cloud, as it was too late for her to run away. She had to stay calm, and wielded the two balls of Nanling Dragon Flame in her hands.

Boom!

After a short while, the saint might in that area trembled as lightning, flames, wind, snow and saint weapons all clashed with each other, shaking the saint mountains around them.

Zhang Ruochen looked tranquil standing at the top of Xifeng Saint Mountain. His Heavenly Eyes kept blinking as he was observing the Thousand-Star Formation around the ninety-nine saint mountains.

1

Demonic Sound looked above and said, “There seem to be lots of mountains floating in the sky, which cover the heaven and land where the ninety-nine saint mountains are.”

“Not mountains, but the asteroids summoned from the astral sky near Zuling Field. There’re a thousand of them, and each of them is at least dozens of miles long. If those asteroids fall, all the creatures within an area of ten thousand square miles might get killed. No wonder it’s the Thousand-Star Formation,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Demonic Sound was startled and said, “What level of mind power is required to set up such an incredible formation?”

“Not sure.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “At least those who’re way stronger than mind power saint kings at level fifty-five. There must be a formation saint master from the Luosha race hiding in Zuling Field. Only by killing him can we break Thousand-Star Formation. If we can’t do it, all the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields will be dead before the Saints Merits Battle ends.”

Demonic Sound said, “Are you going to do this, my lord?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t answer that question directly.

Seeing the saints from the Shatuo Seven Field getting killed like prey, he really wanted to do something to help, but he also knew clearly that he came to Zuling Field to help Guanghan Field get first place in the Saints Merits Battle.

There were only twelve hours left before the battle ended, which was midnight tonight, and as long as he could survive

the next twelve hours, he would finish his job.

“Half day. Can the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields survive the next half day?” Zhang Ruo Chen mumbled.

Shatuo Heaven Domain in Heaven World.

All the monks from the seven large fields were staring at the reflection in the sky, and seeing one saint after another fall, even the supreme saints were raging and wanting to kill all the Luosha armies in Zuling Field, yet they couldn't do it.

It was an unfair battle. There were twice as many great beings from Hell World than from Heaven World.

“All the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields have been abandoned. Are we just going to sit here and watch them get killed?”

“Obviously, only a formation saint master is able to set up Thousand-Star Formation. Are the Gods from the Merits Godly Palace blind? Why haven't they stopped the battle even after seeing such a great being in Zuling Field?”

A supreme saint from Guanghan Field couldn't help cursing the gods as he saw four of his disciples and twelve of his people get killed by the Luosha great beings, including the daughter he loved the most. He couldn't feel more wronged.

The three supreme beings from Guanghan Field, Supreme Saint Nine Spirits, Emperor Jimie, and Wu Zu yelled at the same time, “Don't you dare blaspheme Gods...”

Unfortunately, it was too late. A tumbling godly cloud showed up above Moon Goddess Mountain with lightning flowing inside, releasing horrifying godly might.

If anyone cursed the Gods, they would know immediately and try to punish them.

Although there were many restrictions on Gods in Heaven World, as they couldn't interfere with the fights among monks, Gods could kill the monks who showed disrespect toward Gods.

A mighty voice came out of the godly cloud. “Supreme Saint Yukong from Guanghan Field verbally abused a God.

Punishment, immediate execution.”

Supreme Saint Yukong stood on Moon Goddess Mountain and looked fearless. He yelled, “Even if you’re a God, can’t I curse you for being unfair? You not only interfered with the Merits Fight, but also watched the saints die without doing anything. Don’t you feel sorry for all those saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields who got killed? Or to you, are those saints nothing but puppets in Zuling Field?”

The God didn’t answer.

However, the godly might coming out of the godly cloud became stronger and stronger, and traces of lightning flew in the cloud like divine dragons, and they dashed toward Supreme Saint Yukong.

All the supreme saints in Moon Goddess Mountain were furious, but none of them dared say anything.

It was a God who was trying to punish Supreme Saint Yukong, and if they angered him, the entire Moon Goddess Mountain might be annihilated.

Just as Supreme Saint Yukong was about to get killed by the God...

Whoosh!

A luminous moon flew from afar and showed up above Moon Goddess Mountain. An exquisite woman in white stood at the middle of the moon, and she pointed at the godly cloud with her finger.

Boom!

All the godly power crumbled.

Seeing that women standing in the moon, the supreme saints on Moon Goddess Mountain all looked exhilarated as if they were seeing their savior. They rushed out of the palace and bowed. “Moon Goddess, welcome back to Heaven World.”

Moon Goddess looked aloof, as if she didn’t even belong to this world, and the light engulfing her was just as pure and radiant as that from the moon. “Have you asked for my

approval before trying to kill a supreme saint from Guanghai Field?”

The godly sound spread everywhere.

Chapter 1517 - Moon Goddess Came Back

Chapter 1517: Moon Goddess Came Back

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Moon Goddess was an ancient God. Even though she had been away for a hundred thousand years, her reputation still preceded her in Heaven World.

A hundred thousand years ago, the Moon Goddess was severely injured in the netherworld, so she had to stay in slumber in the Sun-moon Crystal Coffin. Even though she only gained ten percent of her godly power back, no Gods in Heaven World dared underestimate her.

The Moon Goddess landed on top of Guanghan Godly Palace. Her skin was glowing with divine light, shining upon Shatuo Heavenly Domain.

Few Gods in Heaven World could rival her exquisite appearance.

The three-colored godly cloud shrunk, turning into a giant beast with three heads.

The giant beast was hundreds of miles long. There were scales all over its body. It kind of looked like an elephant with a pair of wings, which turned into two dark clouds. Its eyes were gleaming with divine light as if they were six blazing suns in the sky.

That giant beast was only a trace of godly consciousness.

“Don’t you know blaspheme is punishable by death, Moon Goddess?”

The giant beast's voice contained godly power that could shatter the earth.

The Moon Goddess was very calm. She asked Supreme Saint Yukong, "Have you cursed Flame God by name?"

Supreme Saint Yukong bowed at the Moon Goddess and said, "I haven't."

"Did you do anything to blaspheme Flame God like destroying his statues?" the Moon Goddess asked again.

"No, I haven't," Supreme Saint Yukong said.

The Moon Goddess looked to the giant beast and said, "I've asked him. He hasn't blasphemed you."

Sizzle!

Fires gushed out of all the six eyes of that giant beast, engulfing the entire Moon Goddess Mountain in fire. He yelled, "Are you really going to shelter him, Moon Goddess?"

"I'm the God in Guanghan Field. Certainly, I'll protect the creatures in Guanghan Field. Why did you even ask?" the Moon Goddess said.

"I'll be killing him today, regardless."

The giant beast flapped its wings, and a giant claw with godly might went through the fiery storm, approaching Supreme Saint Yukong.

The godly might covered Moon Goddess Mountain. All the supreme saints from Guanghan Field felt an enormous pressure as if the sky and land around them were about to be destroyed.

The half saints gathering around Moon Goddess Mountain were groveling on the ground, and they felt like they were about to have a breakdown.

Supreme Saint Yukong guffawed. "It's worth being killed by a God... Hahaha..."

A trace of godly light was shot out of the Moon Goddess's forehead to hundreds of thousands of miles away.

That giant beast was crushed into dust by the godly light.

The Moon Goddess looked to the direction of Heaven World and said, “This is just a warning. If you provoke me again, I’ll go into a War of Gods with you.”

The Moon Goddess’s godly voice echoed in the sky and land.

Many monks from Heaven World were astounded by that voice, and then, they all bowed at Moon Goddess Mountain to show their respect.

Merits Godly Palace was a separate land.

Flame God was staying in that land, and his original body was more than a thousand times larger than the giant beast. He yelled, “When Guanghai Field becomes the next battlefield, let’s see whether you can still be so arrogant or not. Don’t come beg me when that happens, otherwise, you’ll pay a larger price.”

...

The supreme saints and half saints from Guanghai Field were all exhilarated. When the Moon Goddess was away, the Gods from other large fields could play the creatures in Guanghai Field like toys. Even the descendants of Gods looked down upon the monks from Guanghai Field.

However, the monks from Guanghai Field didn’t dare say anything even if they were bullied.

Now that the Moon Goddess was back to Heaven World, the monks from Guanghai Field had someone they could count on. The Moon Goddess’s power made many monks tear up.

Supreme Saint Yukong couldn’t be more moved. He kneeled on the ground and said, “Thank you, Moon Goddess.”

“Get up. I’ve said it before that creatures stronger than saints don’t need to kneel before a God,” the Moon Goddess said.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits walked out and asked, “How was the Godly Merits Battle, Moon Goddess?”

The Moon Goddess shook her head and said, “The Godly Merits War is just a show. It’s very difficult to actually kill a

God. I might be able to do that only after my godly power fully recovers.”

It was no easy task to kill a supreme saint, not to mention a God.

If a God from a large field managed to kill a God from Hell World, the rank of that large field would be boosted on the ‘Ten Thousand Fields Merit Rank,’ and the status of the creatures in that large field would surge.

Supreme Saint Nine Spirits immediately understood that all the Gods from the Shatuo Seven Fields didn’t obtain any merits, so the result of the merits battle depended on the Saint Merits Battle, Saint King Merits Battle, and Supreme Saint Merits Battle.

All the supreme saints felt ashamed.

Guanghan Field was ranked in last place in the Supreme Saint Merits Battle. It collected fewer merits than Kunlun’s Field, which had far fewer supreme saints than Guanghan Field.

No matter how proud they were, they were still shameful in front of the Moon Goddess.

Meanwhile, Guanghan Field was also surpassing Kunlun’s Field in the Saint King Merits Battle. The merits battle would end at midnight tonight, so it was almost impossible for Guanghan Field to change anything.

Now, all the supreme saints and billions of lives in Guanghan Field counted on the merit battlefield in Zuling Field.

To be exact, they were counting on that young man at the top of Xifeng Saint Mountain.

That man was the hope of Guanghan Field, and he almost looked exactly as great as the Moon Goddess.

Guanghan Field was still in first place in the Saint Merits Battle, and if it could stay in that place until midnight tonight, Guanghan Field would be saved.

Everyone was worried that something bad would happen. They just wished the Saints Merits Battle could end soon.

“Moon Goddess, my lord, the Saint Merits Battle isn’t fair. And besides, the Luosha race is very powerful and has been plotting this for a long time. They want to annihilate all the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields. Can we negotiate with the Gods from the Merits Godly Palace so that they’ll end the battle early?” Supreme Saint Yukong said.

The Moon Goddess looked at the Reflection of Battle in the sky.

The saints from Guanghai Field kept being killed, yet the Moon Goddess was still very calm.

The Moon Goddess then looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, “The Saint Merits Battle is indeed brutal. Many from Heaven World died, but rules are rules. It’s less fair if they change them.”

“However, Princess Luosha deployed three million Luosha armies into Zuling Field. Why didn’t Heaven World stop her?”

The Moon Goddess said, “Were you saying it’s only fair if Heaven World and Hell World have exactly the same number of monks? Who told you that’s fair?”

Supreme Saint Yukong didn’t know how to respond. He knew that wars and killings only existed because of unfairness.

The Moon Goddess said, “Princess Luosha is smart enough to only deploy three million Luosha marquises, as that was the limit of Heaven World. If she deployed five million, Heaven World would definitely interfere as that was not just unfair anymore. It’d be a massacre.”

Supreme Saint Yukong said, “Flame God used his godly power to protect the Merits Record Wall. Wasn’t that interfering with the merits battle?”

The Moon Goddess stayed silent for a while and said, “There’s nothing wrong with it. The Merits Record Wall shouldn’t be destroyed. The merit battle is for us from Heaven World to fight those from Hell World. Flame God is just using the rules for his own convenience, then I shall do the same thing.”

The eyes of all the supreme saints glinted.

They could infer that the Moon Goddess wouldn't just sit there and wait.

However, what did she mean when she said 'using the rules'?

"Look, Zhang Ruochen got into the battlefield!" someone yelled.

Everyone looked to the Reflection of the Battlefield.

Zhang Ruochen didn't choose to stay at the top of Xifeng Saint Mountain. Instead, he rushed toward where all the Luosha marquises were.

All the supreme saints were confused.

Couldn't Zhang Ruochen see what was happening?

Preserving the Merits Record Wall would be the largest victory. If he lost the Merits Record Wall, it would be catastrophic to everyone in Guanghan Field.

"Priest, please don't do this. You've been guarding the Merits Record Wall for so long. Don't let anything happen to it."

Many creatures could feel their hearts racing. Some of them even kneeled on the ground and prayed that Zhang Ruochen could keep the Merits Record Wall till the end.

The Moon Goddess looked to the area that Zhang Ruochen was rushing to. There were almost two hundred saints from Kunlun's Field gathering there. They were being encircled by a large group of Luosha marquises. Many of them were severely injured, and some of them had fallen onto the ground.

Those saints...

The Moon Goddess found those saints a bit familiar. When Zhang Ruochen was waging war against the headquarters of Demonic Sect, those seemed to be the saints who fought alongside him.

Zhang Ruochen almost had a fallout with her because he wanted to bring those saints with him.

Unfortunately, those saints stayed in Kunlun's Field in the end.

None of the saints from Guanghan Field could understand why Zhang Ruochen was doing so, but the Moon Goddess knew that all the saints from Guanghan Field combined probably meant less to Zhang Ruochen than those saints.

Flame God was also paying attention to the Saint Merits Battle. And he was focusing on Zhang Ruochen.

Flame God sneered seeing Zhang Ruochen join the battle. “Finally. the Moon Goddess...perhaps your plan to use that kid to save Guanghan Field will be in vain.”

Chapter 1518 - Crown Prince, His Highness

Chapter 1518: Crown Prince, His Highness

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There were two hundred saints from Sacred Central Empire, including Granny Baisu and Qin Yutong, who worked for Mingjiang King, Murong Yue from Murong clan, Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and Monster Ape, with Princess White Li, Le, and Han Qiu.

Because of Princess White Li, Le, and Han Qiu, most of them were still alive.

There was a large number of Luosha marquises encircling them, and the evil sha Qi coming out of them formed layers of crimson devil clouds which rushed toward them.

Even Le, Han Qiu and Princess White Li were wounded.

As for the other saints, they were more seriously injured.

Every time the Luosha marquises attacked, several saints were killed and became the food of those Luosha marquises.

“Why are you still struggling? There’s no use. This land is destined to be where all the saints from Heaven World die.”

The phantom of a huge python that was more than three thousand feet long emerged in the evil clouds, and it stretched all the way from the ground to the sky like a mountain. Its blood looked like streams flowing in the python, making a clacking sound.

“Him again.”

Princess White Li looked intimidated.

The master of that phantom was an incredible great being. Princess White Li got that wound on her back from him, and she still hadn't healed yet. There was a wicked force flowing in Princess White Li's meridians, which made the injury even worse.

Howl!

The phantom of that giant python yelled.

And then, it waved its tail, stirring up the stones and sand around it and slashing a layer of the ground. Saintly way forces that looked like blades dashed toward the saints before the snake tail did.

Bang!

Bong!

...

Some of the saints were hit by the saintly way forces, and they were all killed either by losing their heads or organs.

"A mere saintly way force is that incredible."

Murong Yue's left shoulder kept bleeding. She looked up at the snake tail sweeping across like a black mountain, and she felt suffocated as well as horrified.

That force was terrific, destroying everything in front of it.

"It's a saint king from the Luosha race, and not just any saint king..."

Granny Baisu, who was an absolute saint, was so scared that her face paled. She bit her lips tightly, waiting for doom.

Howl!

Elephant-swallowing Rabbit roared, and it turned into a Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon that was thousands of feet long, waving its dragon tail.

Bang!

The tails of the python and the dragon clashed with each other.

Elephant-swallowing Rabbit failed to ward it off. It bounced away with its scales peeling, and its blood gushed out like a spring while it made a blood-curdling scream.

The gap between their power was far too large.

“You’re nothing but a monster who’s practiced ‘Sky-swallowing Skill.’ Do you really think you can fight me?” The python shadow surged from the evil cloud again.

The demonic dragon kept shrinking and turned back to a rabbit with a big mouth, and its butt and tail were both bleeding like hell. It lay on the ground and yelled, “You’re the monster.”

“What did you just say? I’m Blood Pluto Python with pure blood!”

The phantom of that giant python was furious. It dived, showing its fangs and trying to tear Elephant-swallowing Rabbit apart.

“Don’t you dare kill my brother.”

The monster ape yelled, clenched its fist, and released a great amount of devil Qi. Suddenly, its body bulged, and it rushed out like an unstoppable evil ape.

“Die!” A giant handprint slapped the monster ape and knocked it to the ground. The monster ape was already injured, and after being hit by that handprint, it lay on the ground and couldn’t manage to stand up anymore.

Several human saints also rushed out, trying to save Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and the monster ape, and they were all knocked away by the saint spell. One of them was blown up.

Obviously, there were more great beings from the Luosha race who were standing in the evil cloud.

There were way too many enemies, and everyone felt hopeless.

Perhaps they could never make it back to Kunlun’s Field...

Elephant-swallowing Rabbit looked at the head of that giant python diving at it, terrified, but suddenly, its eyes gleamed, and it screamed, “Lord Chen!”

A human being glowing in red rushed out from behind the phantom of the giant python, and the sword he was carrying broke the evil cloud. He wielded it against the python phantom, trailing a trace of sword light that was a thousand feet long.

Boom!

The phantom of the giant python was cut into halves, and it withered away like mist.

Zhang Ruochen landed on the ground wearing Hundred Saints Blood Armor. He stood in front of Elephant-swallowing Rabbit, overlooking the tumbling evil cloud in front of him.

Elephant-swallowing Rabbit was so excited that it was about to cry. It grabbed Zhang Ruochen's legs with its claws and said, "Lord Chen, I definitely would've died if you hadn't shown up."

"It's the crown prince. His Highness..."

Qin Yutong, Granny Baisu, and the others finally had hope again, because to them, Zhang Ruochen was the central pillar of the entire empire. He stood for hope and invincibility.

Other than Empress Chi Yao, nobody in the world could make him fall.

Other previous officials from the Sacred Central Empire also shouted in exhilaration.

Their crown prince had come here, and he had come here for them. They wouldn't even care about dying side by side with their leader.

Zhang Ruochen looked back at everyone who was either excited or tearing up due to exhilaration, and he was certain that he'd made the right choice.

His original plan was to use the power of the twelve Buddhist beams to cover his force and to hide underground with the Merits Record Wall until midnight tonight.

Although there was still a chance that he would be discovered by the Luosha armies, it was definitely the least risky and safest way for him.

But he couldn't just stand aside while the previous officials from Sacred Central Empire were being encircled and slaughtered by the Luosha armies.

Those saints had gone to Peakless Mountain with him even though they might have been retaliated against by the imperial government, and now, Zhang Ruochen was willing to risk his life to protect them.

“Take the saint pills, and you guys will recover in an hour.”

Zhang Ruochen waved his sleeves, and healing saint pills flew out, landing in their hands.

Kunlun's Field had very limited resources, so the saints only carried low-tier healing pills when they entered Zuling Field. It would be fantastic if they could get one healing saint pill, and after three months, they'd run out of the low-tier healing pills already.

Zhang Ruochen was such a timely help.

Howl!

A shout came out of the evil cloud, shaking the ground.

The real body of Blood Pluto Python rushed out of the evil cloud. It was more than five thousand feet long, and each of its scales was as large as a cattail leaf fan. Its head looked slightly bizarre, as it had thorns all over, making it look incredibly savage.

Seven first marquises walked out of the evil cloud. Some of them were exquisite-looking Luosha females while some were hideous Luosha males.

Those seven first marquises seemed to answer to Blood Pluto Python.

Blood Pluto Python opened its mouth. “Human, impressive that you managed to break a trace of my soul shadow, but you shouldn't have stood against me.”

Zhang Ruochen stood in front of Blood Pluto Python and said apathetically, “So what?”

“You'll die.”

“Not necessarily.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to waste time talking to it, instead, he rushed forward carrying his Abyss Ancient Sword.

“Be careful, my lord. That Blood Pluto Python is already a saint king, and it has tremendous strength, making it far more powerful than ordinary first-step saint kings. Also, its evil Qi will stick to your body once it gets inside,” Princess White Li said.

“What an idiot. You actually dared try to charge us.”

Both the Luosha first marquises flew up, flapping their wings and carrying their saint weapons. They mobilized their evil sha Qi, trying to stop Zhang Ruochen.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and vanished from the ground.

Both the first marquises were a bit dazed, and before they knew how to react, Zhang Ruochen had slain one of them with the sword in his hand.

All the protection runes on one of the first marquis exploded, yet they still failed to ward off the Abyss Ancient Sword. He fell onto the ground after his body being cut in half by Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen trampled the broken corpse, turning it into a cluster of flesh.

All the Luosha marquises were shocked seeing a first marquis killed that easily, and this was the first time they felt scared.

The other first marquis who originally went to stop Zhang Ruochen was horrified. He immediately tried to fly back while sweating all over his body.

“Where're you going?”

Dragon scales emerged on Zhang Ruochen's arm, making a deafening dragon sound. And then, he formed a handprint, slapping that first marquis like it was a mosquito.

Sizzle!

The Abyss Ancient Sword pierced through that first marquis's body, nailing it to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen walked forward, forcing the evil cloud to retreat.

He didn't stop walking until he strolled right beside his Abyss Ancient Sword. He reached out his hand and grabbed the handle.

Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out of Zhang Ruochen's palm, and it traveled along the Abyss Ancient Sword, burning the body of that first marquis into ashes.

All the Luosha marquises were horrified, and even Blood Pluto Python became solemn as it couldn't underestimate the man in front of it anymore. It said, "Space power... You're the priest from Guanghan Field, Zhang Ruochen. Why were you trying to stop me from killing those saints from Kunlun's Field?"

Zhang Ruochen picked up the Abyss Ancient Sword and said, "Don't you know that they're mine?"

Chapter 1519 - Horrified Luosha Armies

Chapter 1519: Horrified Luosha Armies

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen terrified the Luosha armies by killing two first marquises.

They couldn't help stepping back, seeing Zhang Ruochen marching forward.

“What're you afraid of. He is only one person. Do you really think he can hold off our encirclement?” Blood Pluto Python exerted saint might at the saint king level and yelled.

The Luosha marquises standing in the evil cloud, led by five first marquises, overcame their fear and formed Nine Nine to One Formation.

The power ripple coming out of the evil cloud became stronger as the formation operated.

“Let us help you, my lord.”

Le, Han Qiu, and Princess White Li didn't want Zhang Ruochen to fight the Luosha armies by himself, so they suppressed their injuries and rushed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen saw how wounded they were, and that they needed time to recover even after taking the healing saint pills.

“Stay here and recover first. Leave this to me and don't come until you've at least half recovered.”

Zhang Ruochen took out the Buddha sarira and gave it to Princess White Li. He said, “The sarira can purify the evil Qi in your body. Use the power of the sarira to protect everyone if you run into danger.”

The previous officials from Sacred Central Empire were all moved, as their crown prince cared about them so much. If it weren't for their injuries, they would've fought side by side with their highness to the death.

But now, they needed to recover first.

Zhang Ruochen took a large step forward. Each step was three hundred feet long. He bent his legs a bit and surged to the sky after the third step.

“I'll kill you along with them today.”

Blood Pluto Python raised its head and gave an order: “Kill him.”

The Luosha marquises standing in the evil cloud also yelled, used the power of Nine Nine to One Formation, and attacked Zhang Ruochen.

There were twelve formations in total.

The saint spells coming out of the formations were terrific. Some even looked like lightning rivers that were hundreds of feet wide, and each bolt of lightning was like a heavenly blade, crushing the saint mountain behind Zhang Ruochen. If the lightning hit Zhang Ruochen's body, he would be seriously injured no matter how sturdy his body and defense were.

One saint spell formed a sole-eyed demon which was as large as a saint mountain. It shook the saint Qi around.

...

All twelve Nine Nine to One Formations were operated by a second marquis, and five of them had first marquises operating them. The Nine Nine to One Formations were way stronger than those Zhang Ruochen encountered before.

Any formation was strong enough to kill a first-step saint king.

The chaotic saintly way destruction Qi distracted the previous officials from Sacred Central Empire from healing as they were all worried about Zhang Ruochen's safety.

Zhang Ruochen clashed with that sole-eyed evil demon, and then, he teleported himself to above its head.

“Crumble.”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the saint Qi inside his body, yelled and pointed at one of the Nine Nine to One Formations.

The space above the Nine Nine to One Formation started to shake fiercely, making cracking sounds. And then, it crumbled from the inside out, forming a black hole with a diameter of hundreds of feet.

It was complete darkness inside the hole, which was the hollow that could destroy all the creatures.

Most of the Luosha marquises that formed the Nine Nine to One Formation were swallowed by the hollow, and their bodies were turned into dust right outside the hollow.

Only a few managed to survive, but they were all horrified.

Zhang Ruochen was incredible. He collapsed the space by barely pointing at it. No one could fight against that.

Boom!

The space kept collapsing.

Zhang Ruochen broke one Nine Nine to One Formation after another like Satan. Countless Luosha marquises were swallowed by the hollow.

And besides, Zhang Ruochen was extraordinarily fast and able to perform spatial move, so it was difficult for the formation to actually charge him.

The five first marquises were also terrified.

Zhang Ruochen looked more like a demon from hell than them. It seemed there was unlimited saint power in his body.

There was a splendid demonic palace at the top of a saint mountain.

The palace didn't used to be there.

The demonic palace was made of the skull of a supreme saint, and it was more than seven thousand feet long. There was a layer of demonic iron that contained mysterious power on the surface of the palace, decorated by saint jades and mysterious stones of all sorts.

There was still some remaining supreme-saint power left which was sealed inside the demonic palace.

Ordinary saints would be terrified by that supreme-saint force.

Princess Luosha had fully recovered, and she looked vigorous.

She was holding a saint scepter, standing at the center of the demonic palace. She looked around and observed the battle under the mountain. Eventually, she looked to where Blood Pluto Python and Zhang Ruochen were.

Princess Luosha heard an old voice. "Your highness, the priest from Guanghan Field seems to have the same level of space power as you do. If we let him roam free, he'll cause a great loss to our race."

It was an old woman with silver hair.

There were wicked engravings on that old woman's forehead, forming an eye. She was also holding a saint scepter.

That saint scepter looked more like a spear, as the tip was sharp.

Princess Luosha hesitated for an instant and asked, "What do you plan to do, senior sister?"

That old woman was the disciple of one of Princess Luosha's masters. Her name was Ji Hua, and she had much stronger mind power than Princess Luosha, reaching level fifty-six. Ji Hua was an achiever in formations.

She was the one who set up Thousand-Star Formation.

"Freeze the space and kill him."

Ji Hua looked hostile, but then, she smiled sneakily and said, "He is one of the few people in the world who's in your league"

when it comes to talent and appearance. I'm worried that you won't be willing to kill him, your highness."

"He's a great talent from Heaven World, but I'm a princess from Hell World. Why would I be unwilling?"

But then, Princess Luosha said, "However, our grandmaster made a prediction before that anyone who takes off my Ten Thousand Saints Blouse will be the man of my destiny."

"Is it the priest from Guanghan Field?"

Ji Hua's eyes popped, as she found it hard to believe.

Princess Luosha felt conflicted.

She was anxious when Zhang Ruochen took off her Ten Thousand Saints Blouse, as Zhang Ruochen was from Heaven World.

Was that a joke? Or was her grandmaster wrong?

Ji Hua stayed silent for a while and said, "However, our grandmaster also said you should be emotionless in your life if you want to attain more. Perhaps she was saying you should kill that man of your destiny the second you meet him, so that you won't be trapped by your feelings."

Princess Luosha could understand what Ji Hua was saying. However, she was a girl who had been refining for more than a century. She was curious about the man of destiny, and she wanted to get to know him more and how it felt to be with him.

The more intelligent a person was, the more curious the person would be.

And that curiosity might be their doom.

"Are you trapped already, your highness?" Ji Hua asked worriedly seeing Princess Luosha's silence.

Princess Luosha said, "No, of course not."

"Then let's kill him today so that he won't be able to distract you anymore."

Ji Hua released a trace of terrific mind power and infused it into her saint scepter.

The saint scepter made an ear-piercing noise and flew out of the demonic palace like a trace of light, landing on the battlefield where Zhang Ruochen and Blood Pluto Python were.

Boom!

The saint scepter that was nine feet long was stuck in the ground, and suddenly, it got a thousand times taller, turning into a sky-connecting pillar, solidifying the space around it.

The space seemed to have become solid, and normal warriors might not be able to move at all.

Zhang Ruochen found it very difficult to tear the space apart or to perform spatial move.

Zhang Ruochen looked to the demonic palace in the distance where he saw Princess Luosha and Ji Hua.

Blood Pluto Python guffawed, “Saint Master Ji Hua froze the space using her saint scepter. Zhang Ruochen won’t be able to perform spatial skills anymore.”

“Kill him! Zhang Ruochen without his space power is like an owl without its wings!”

Those Luosha marquises who were originally terrified suddenly got their confidence boosted as if Zhang Ruochen was powerless after the space was frozen.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t back off. Instead, he rushed forward. A dragon shadow showed up on his left arm; an elephant shadow showed up on his right arm. A Luan shadow showed up under his left foot while a phoenix shadow showed up under his right foot.

Bang Bang!

Every time he slapped, a Luosha marquis would be crushed into pieces. Only a few were able to survive one of his attacks.

Zhang Ruochen slaughtered a large group of Luosha marquises, leaving a trail of corpses.

There had been more than a thousand Luosha marquises encircling the saints from Sacred Central Empire, but after thirty minutes, there were less than three hundred of them.

Blood Pluto Marquis was enraged. Princess Luosha was watching the battle in the demonic palace, yet it not only failed to defeat an absolute saint with more than a thousand marquises, but also suffered a huge blow. Its future would be dim in the Luosha race.

“Die!”

Blood Pluto Python rushed out from the Luosha marquises who were trying to flee and dashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1520 - Slay First Marquises Like Chopping Vegetables

Chapter 1520: Slay First Marquises Like Chopping Vegetables

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Although Blood Pluto Python had only become a first-step saint king, it had strapping veins, giving it the power to fight those who had been first-step saint kings for a long time.

The saint might from that saint king seemed to be sweeping across the mountains and rivers.

Meanwhile, five first marquises also made attacks with Blood Pluto Python, two of them were young Luosha females, one of them was an elder, and the other two were horrendous but built Luosha males.

One of the Luosha females took out an illusion mirror and wielded it against Zhang Ruochen. She performed an illusion technique, trying to drag Zhang Ruochen's mind into the illusory world in her illusion mirror.

As for the other Luosha female, her body exploded and turned into a cluster of evil fog. It then disintegrated into more than a hundred traces of mist, spreading toward Zhang Ruochen like snakes.

The elder gathered ninety-nine Luosha marquises to operate a thousand-patterns saint weapon, trying to combine all the evil sha Qi to activate the Second-Yao Complete Power of the weapon.

As for those two hideous Luosha males, they were both three times taller than Zhang Ruochen, and they'd been born with tremendous strength. They teamed up with Blood Pluto Python to attack Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

The six great beings cooperated in a perfect way.

Ji Hua stood outside a demonic palace at the top of a saint mountain. "Now they're finally showing their real power. I'll be thrilled if Zhang Ruochen manages to break their encirclement."

To Ji Hua, an absolute saint could only be powerful to a limited extent, no matter how gifted he was.

Zhang Ruochen should be thinking about how to save his life facing the attack from six great beings.

Ji Hua certainly didn't think Zhang Ruochen could survive this. After all, he still needed to protect the saints from Kunlun's Field, which was his weakest spot. He couldn't just run away himself.

"How long do you think that priest from Guanghan Field can stay alive, your highness?" Ji Hua said smugly.

Princess Luosha stayed silent.

Suddenly, Ji Hua was dazed and whimpered as she saw Zhang Ruochen dash toward the six great beings.

Zhang Ruochen was wearing twelve Buddha beams, which could ward off the reflection light from that Luosha female's illusion mirror.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen raised his arm and formed the phantoms of a divine dragon and a demonic elephant, clashing with the two hideous Luosha males.

Saint light tumbled in that area, making cracking sounds.

Both the hideous males were half-step saint kings who were strong enough to carry mountains and to rival first-step saint kings, yet they were still suppressed by Zhang Ruochen.

“How is he so strong? I rarely meet any rivals among those at the same level when it comes to strength, yet I can’t even fight against an absolute saint?”

“Is that the strength of someone with supreme complete body constitution?”

The two hideous men blushed, and they felt that their organs were about to explode.

Suddenly, a huge shadow showed up above them.

It was a claw of Blood Pluto Python.

“Fantastic! Blood Pluto Python is heaps more powerful than we are. It’s got to suppress Zhang Ruochen.”

Both those ugly studs cheered inside while thinking how they were supposed to help Blood Pluto Python attack Zhang Ruochen after it suppressed him.

Zhang Ruochen also saw that claw-shaped cloud above him, and he then activated the second-level power of Hundred Saints Blood Armor and gathered it in his arms, knocking those two ugly studs away.

Obviously, he could tell that Blood Pluto Python was a huger threat to him.

Zhang Ruochen bent his legs while all his saint power flowed toward his right arm, and the hundred saint shadows floating around him also gathered toward him.

“Dragon and Elephant Divine Furnace.”

Zhang Ruochen’s body burnt like a furnace, and masculine Qi and Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out with his palm print, hitting the center of the claw of Blood Pluto Python.

Boom!

The ground under Zhang Ruochen’s feet crumbled as the two forces clashed with each other.

“He...he warded it off! Even after the space was frozen, his strength can rival mine.” Blood Pluto Python was shocked, as there was a huge gap between the power of absolute saints and saint kings, not to mention Blood Pluto Python, who was

considered strong among first-step saint kings. Yet an absolute saint was able to rival it, which was totally beyond its expectations.

Just as Zhang Ruochen and Blood Pluto Python were in a stalemate, those hundred traces of evil Qi were already less than a hundred feet away and winding toward him.

It was a Luosha female who managed to gasify her entire body after performing God knows what techniques, and normal physical attacks weren't able to hurt her at all.

On the contrary, she could penetrate the bodies of monks and eat their flesh.

Zhang Ruochen sneered and opened all one hundred and forty-four of his apertures. Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out of his apertures, permeating the space around him.

A blood-curdling scream came out of the evil Qi.

Forty percent of the evil Qi was burnt, and it immediately rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's body and turned back to its human shape, which was an exquisite woman.

However, that beautiful woman looked pale and sick.

"Damn Zhang Ruochen. He domesticated Divine Fire Jingmie. He doesn't seem to have any weaknesses whatsoever." That Luosha female was upset, but she was also impressed by Zhang Ruochen's power. If Zhang Ruochen were a talent from Hell World, she would definitely chase him, as it'd be a glory for her to get a man like him.

As for Blood Pluto Python, it was also having a hard time. It warded off the Divine Fire Jingmie using the blood-gold gemstone, but it couldn't hold it off for long with that blood-gold gemstone.

Blood Pluto Python had to retract its claw.

"It'll be wonderful if I can get Zhang Ruochen's Divine Fire Jingmie. If so, no first-step saint king can rival me anymore."

Blood Pluto Python was both upset and jealous.

Zhang Ruochen's force only became stronger, and a golden dragon shadow flew out of his palm.

The dragon shadow hit that Blood Pluto Python, knocking the python away.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to make another attack, the two ugly studs raised two saint weapons that looked like long spears and dashed toward them.

Both those saint weapons carried destruction Qi.

“Die!”

Zhang Ruochen picked up the Abyss Ancient Sword and performed Sword Technique of Time.

Sizzle!

Before anyone could see what happened, those two studs had been cut in half.

To prevent them from recovering, Zhang Ruochen slapped their broken bodies into blood mist.

“Those two were first marquises who could rival some of the first saint kings. Why would they get chopped up like vegetables by Zhang Ruochen?”

“I felt some time ripples.”

...

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the bloody mist like a God of Slaying and rushed toward that Luosha female who was able to gasify her body.

“So fast.”

Just as that Luosha female was about to step back, Zhang Ruochen had stabbed her body with the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Bang!

He didn't manage to kill her with that strike.

She gasified her body again, turning into traces of evil Qi and trying to run away.

Zhang Ruochen sneered and slapped forward, wielding Divine Fire Jingmie, which burnt all the evil Qi, leaving only a gut-wrenching scream of that Luosha in the air, which withered away after a short while.

Even Blood Pluto Python wanted to run away, but it couldn't. It was a first-step saint king after all, and it would have no place in the Luosha race if it was scared off by an absolute saint.

Whoosh!

A trace of gleaming saint light rushed out of Nine Nine to One Formation, and then, a bloody hammer ascended to the sky, releasing terrific saint might.

Blood Pluto Python was thrilled.

“First Marquis Yuanyi triggered the Second-Yao Complete Power of Star Sky Demonic Hammer! Fantastic!”

Blood Pluto Python was a bit intimidated by the idea of facing Zhang Ruochen himself, but with the help of Star Sky Demonic Demonic Hammer, he gained more confidence.

Star Sky Demonic Hammer, whose Second-Yao Complete Power was activated, was strong enough to kill a first-step saint king.

Zhang Ruochen had activated the Second-Yao Complete Power of the Golden Dragon Carriage before, so he knew how powerful a ten thousand-patterns saint weapon was after that.

And besides, the Golden Dragon Carriage was great at speed and defense, yet Star Sky Demonic Hammer was a pure attack-type ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon, so the latter would definitely have stronger destructive power after Second-Yao Complete Power being triggered.

“Zhang Ruochen, you're going to die soon!”

The evil sha Qi of Blood Pluto Python gathered in its pupils, and the two traces of light were charging against Zhang Ruochen with Star Sky Demonic Hammer.

The traces of light kept hitting the ground, melting it.

“Huh!”

Zhang Ruochen took out his Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and wielded it.

Blood Pluto Python waved its tail, hitting the cauldron and making a banging sound.

And then, Pluto Winter Water stored in the cauldron poured onto the body of Blood Pluto Python, and suddenly, its body became so stiff that it couldn't even mobilize its evil sha Qi.

“Sword Seven.”

Zhang Ruochen merged his body with his Abyss Ancient Sword, and he rushed out into a trace of sword light, stabbing the right eye of Blood Pluto Python.

Sizzle!

The sword light pierced through the head of Blood Pluto Python.

Blood Pluto Python yelled in agony as it shook its body. It rolled on the ground in pain. Zhang Ruochen seized this perfect chance and dived toward Blood Pluto Python, piercing through the lower abdomen of Blood Pluto Python.

Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out, burning from the belly of Blood Pluto Python, and after an instant, the entire body of Divine Fire Jingmie was engulfed in flames.

“Zhang Ruochen... You're going to die! You're going to die tragically!”

Blood Pluto Python was burned into ashes.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the flames carrying his Abyss Ancient Sword. He sensed an incredibly dangerous force coming against him. “No... It's a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon.”

Star Sky Demonic Hammer located Zhang Ruochen, and it dived against him a hundred times faster than sound speed.

Zhang Ruochen looked up at the sky, and his eyes were hurt by the light coming out of Star Sky Demonic Hammer. He felt

as if his shoulders were being weighed down by two godly mountains, and they were only getting heavier and heavier.

He felt that the demonic hammer was about to crush him before it actually hit him.

First Marquis Yuanyi, who was standing at the center of Nine Nine to One Formation, combined the power of the ninety-nine Luosha marquises, mastered Star Sky Demonic Hammer, and laughed, “We’ve finally located you. No matter how fast you are, there’s no way you’ll run away.”

First Marquis Yuanyi was naturally excited, as even Blood Pluto Python was killed by Zhang Ruochen, yet he might have a chance of killing Zhang Ruochen.

He would be crowned as a king after getting back to the Luosha race.

Zhang Ruochen still stayed calm, yet he didn’t choose to confront Star Sky Demonic Hammer. Instead, he grabbed the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron beside him and covered his body.

Zhang Ruochen released saint Qi from all one hundred and forty-four apertures of his, sitting in the cauldron, and infusing the cauldron with his saint Qi.

And then, the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron released blue light, and the characters on the cauldron glowed with golden light, while the two traces of light intertwined with each other, looking divine.

Chapter 1521 - Seal Lifted

Chapter 1521: Seal Lifted

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ji Hua, who was still standing in front of the demonic palace, couldn't help smiling. "Zhang Ruochen's so stupid. Even if his ancient cauldron can resist that Star Sky Hammer, he'll still be destroyed by the sound power."

Those who stood inside the bell would either have their eardrums destroyed or faint.

When Star Sky Hammer hit the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, the sound wave was stronger than ordinary bells. Even saint kings would find it difficult to withstand.

"Not necessarily."

Princess Luosha knew Zhang Ruochen well enough to see he wouldn't do anything so stupid even when he was in grave danger.

"Really? It seems you're very confident in him, your highness." Ji Hua smiled.

Boom!

Star Sky Hammer hit the bottom of the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

The blue light and the golden light on the cauldron splashed, and a deafening sound spread among all the ninety-nine saint mountains.

All the saint mountains were shaking.

The saints and Luosha marquises who were close to the cauldron were killed. As for those who were at a safe distance,

they all bounced away.

Le, Princess White Li, and Han Qiu triggered Buddha sarira to ward off the circles of waves.

Even the saints who were standing more than a thousand miles away found it hard to balance themselves. One could only imagine what kind of power Zhang Ruochen had endured.

Most of the Luosha marquises who were inside Nine Nine to One Formation had run out of their evil sha Qi, sitting on the ground.

Only First Marquis Yuan Yi still had some strength. After getting back Star Sky Hammer, he walked toward where the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron was and laughed. "Death is your only destiny if you stand against the Luosha race. Hahaha..."

He thought Zhang Ruochen had been killed already.

First Marquis Yuan Yi walked to the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and cheered inside seeing that cauldron. "It was struck by Star Sky Hammer, yet there's not even a scratch on the surface. This has got to be an invaluable treasure..."

Suddenly, the cauldron flew up into the sky.

First Marquis Yuan Yi was astounded and retreated like lightning.

A gourd flew out of the ancient cauldron, floating in the sky with water flowing on the surface. It was Zhang Ruochen's Mercury Gourd.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen hid in his Mercury Gourd the second he triggered the power of the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. The sound wave didn't hurt him at all.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen burst out of the Mercury Gourd and dashed toward First Marquis Yuanyi. He clenched his fist and performed Luo Water Fist Technique using the strength he had been preparing.

First Marquis spent most of his evil sha Qi on Second Yao Complete Power of Star Sky Hammer, so he had to raise the

hammer to ward off Zhang Ruochen's fist.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen's fist glowed with purple light, clashing with Star Sky Hammer, making a clacking sound.

First Marquis Yuanyi's hands were covered with blood, rendering him strengthless to hold Star Sky Hammer, which bounced away.

"How incredible..." This was the last thought in First Marquis Yuanyi's head.

At the next moment, First Marquis Yuanyi was hit by Zhang Ruochen, and his body crumbled into dozens of pieces.

Ji Hua, who was standing in front of the demonic palace, was deeply upset. She would've gone to fight that human man herself if she didn't have to maintain Thousand-Star Formation.

He was overbearing and mighty.

He killed more than a thousand Luosha marquises by himself, including several first marquises and a saint king. With time, he would definitely become the trump card of Heaven World.

Ji Hua looked to Princess Luosha, and she saw that the princess, who was always stoic, looked very pissed.

"No need to be so angry, your highness. I'll deploy more great beings to kill him now," Ji Hua said.

However, little did she know that Princess Luosha was mad not because of the Luosha marquises Zhang Ruochen had killed, but that it was Zhang Ruochen who was in possession of the purple godly stone instead of Sword Saint Jiuyou.

Zhang Ruochen had used the power of the purple godly stone when he killed First Marquis Yuanyi.

"It's you. Damn you. You didn't just seize the sundial, but also tried to kill me at all costs." Princess Luosha couldn't be more pissed.

"Stop fighting that sword saint. Capture the priest from Guangan Field, Zhang Ruochen, for me. Remember, capture

him alive! Anyone who can capture him will be crowned a king and get a planet as his territory.”

Princess Luosha was clenching her teeth when she gave that order.

The first marquises who were encircling Sword Saint Jiuyou were all bemused as Princess Luosha suddenly ordered them to switch targets.

Were women all so changeable?

However, they all immediately rushed toward Zhang Ruochen without a second thought.

Both kingship and a planet as territory were something they craved. One of them stood for status while the other stood for endless resources.

The Luosha marquises who were trying to recover their strength in Nine Nine to One Formation were all in despair. The human being killed First Marquis Yuanyi with only two strikes, meaning he could kill them all with ease.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't even bother to look at them. Instead, he started to collect the saint weapons.

“Perhaps we're too weak for him to kill.”

Those Luosha marquises tried to comfort themselves. They stood up and prepared to flee.

Just as they turned around, they saw an unbelievably beautiful woman who was prettier than all the top-tier beauties from the Luosha race.

And then, they smelled a mild fragrance which sucked them into an illusion.

Demonic Sound chuckled, and her hair turned into hundreds of green vines that pierced through their bodies, absorbing their energies and blood Qi.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at Demonic Sound, and he also made sure he didn't lose the Merits Record Wall. And then, he grabbed Star Sky Hammer on the ground and said, “There are,

in total, twenty-seven thousand, five hundred inscriptions. It's a Second Yao Ten-Thousand-Patterns Saint Weapon."

Zhang Ruochen didn't want the Abyss Ancient Sword to refine Star Sky Hammer as such a valuable was very rare, and it was enough to be the most powerful weapon of a sect.

"Take it."

Zhang Ruochen threw Star Sky Hammer to Monster Ape.

Monster Ape was a strength-type creature, and Sky Star Hammer was a strength-type attack saint weapon as well. It was the best to give the hammer to Monster Ape. And besides, it had taken divine pills and gone through the Genesis, so it had great potential.

Monster Ape had recovered a bit, and it grabbed Star Sky Hammer.

It witnessed the extraordinary power coming from Star Sky Hammer, so it couldn't be happier receiving the hammer.

"Thank you, my lord."

Other saints from Sacred Central Empire all looked envious as Monster Ape's fighting power would surge after getting a Second Yao Ten-Thousand-Patterns Saint Weapon.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "Those Luosha marquises left a lot of top-tier saint weapons. If you guys want them, you can come and choose."

Everyone was exhilarated and rushed toward the pile of saint weapons.

Zhang Ruochen then stopped smiling and looked into the distance.

He saw a Luosha female running away, and she was the first marquis who was using the illusion mirror. She had already reached the bottom of the mountain where the demonic palace was.

The saint mountain was covered by evil sha Qi completely, giving out great power ripples. Obviously, there gathered a large group of Luosha great beings.

They were protecting Princess Luosha and maintaining Thousand-Star Formation at the same time.

“Many saints will get killed if I don’t break Thousand-Star Formation today, but even a second-step saint king won’t be able to trespass in the demonic palace and kill the formation saint master who’s created the Thousand-Star Formation.” Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

Many saints from Heaven World were thrilled by the battle.

Those deities who were in the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ were all amazed by the clips their subordinates sent them from Shatuo Heavenly Domain.

They all remembered the same name today: Zhang Ruochen.

Of course, some of the great talents who had never lost a battle said calmly, “He only killed someone who just became a saint king. Many saints on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ are able to do that. Only defeating Princess Luosha can prove his power.”

A deity from an ancient civilization said, “There’re many skills that can suppress his space power. As for his Sword Technique of Time, it’s still too basic. As for Divine Fire Jingmie, it isn’t some sacred technique to the deities. Although he practiced two ancient ways, he’s not invincible.”

The monks from Guanghai Field were all conflicted.

They were happy to see how powerful their priest was, but they were also worried about the number of Luosha armies on the battlefield, which was not something an individual could change.

And besides, if he lost the Merits Record Wall, it’d be catastrophic to Guanghai Field.

The Moon Goddess looked at the Reflection of the Battle, sitting in Guanghai Godly Palace. She saw the large group of first marquises racing toward Zhang Ruochen. “I’ll lift the seal in your body now. Zhang Ruochen, prepare to slaughter, and you’ll be the invincible king among saints after getting back to Heaven World.”

The Moon Goddess then lifted the godly power that sealed Universe World in Zhang Ruochen's lower abdomen.

“The seal... Has been lifted...”

Zhang Ruochen immediately sensed the forces from Universe World and Divine Sky-connecting Tree. He smiled and raised his head, looking at the sky as if he was looking at the Moon Goddess.

Chapter 1522 - : The Power of a Godly Spirits Weapon

Chapter 1522: The Power of a Godly Spirits Weapon

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

It was already sunset on the battlefield, leaving crimson clouds in the sky as if there were flames burning.

The saints from Sacred Central Empire had mostly recovered. They gathered around Zhang Ruochen as they wanted to fight side by side with him.

“There’re six hours left before the Saints Merits Battle ends, yet it’s enough for the Luosha armies to kill all the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at the ground that was reflecting the light of the clouds. He could feel the forces of those first marquises, and there were even a couple of saint kings rushing toward them.

“Follow the order of her highness; capture Zhang Ruochen.”

Lord Lingquan was rushing at the front, and he looked very ferocious.

Obviously, he didn’t want to capture Zhang Ruochen alive. He wanted to seize the chance to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Le, Han Qiu, Princess White Li, and the others operated Buddha sariras, and suddenly, thousands of Buddha shadows emerged, shining upon the area around them with golden light.

“They’re coming for you, your highness. Please leave now, and we’ll ward them off,” Murong Yue said.

Granny Baisu said, “Even if we can’t ward them off completely, we can at least stall them for a while.”

Facing dozens of first marquises, everyone was already certain that they would die trying, but even so, they needed to make sure Zhang Ruochen survived this.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t choose to leave. Instead, he looked to the front.

There weren’t just dozens of first marquises, there was also a large number of second and third marquises. There were wings on their backs, and most of them were flying in the sky. Even the weakest of them were absolute saints.

Even saints were terrified seeing a situation like this.

Nine Heavenly Maiden also looked to where Zhang Ruochen was worriedly, but she couldn’t go help them because she was also encircled by a large group of Luosha great beings.

“Zhang Ruochen’s in trouble!”

Wu Hao had wanted to go help Zhang Ruochen leading the saints from Guanghan Field to protect the Merits Record Wall, yet he failed to do so even after losing hundreds of saints.

All the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields were being attacked by enemies with twice as many forces as them, and they themselves were already struggling to survive, so they had no energy at all to help Zhang Ruochen.

The heir from Hell Blade Field, Fang Yi, looked smug. “Zhang Ruochen, please hold those Luosha great beings a bit longer for us, haha. Don’t get killed that easily.”

...

A saint king from the Luosha race walked out. He had a horn on his head, and his wings were at least a hundred feet long, and his forces were even stronger than those of Blood Pluto Python.

Sole Horn Saint King stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Are you really going to fight us, Zhang Ruochen?”

“Or what? Wait and be captured by you?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Sole Horn Saint King said, “Her highness thinks very highly of you. If you surrender now, perhaps you still have a chance to survive. Otherwise, you and all the saints behind you will die. Think twice.”

“No need for that. Fight!”

Zhang Ruochen took out a saint sword from his space ring and mobilized his saint Qi and infused his saint sword with it, brushing off the layer of sealing on the saint sword.

The godly engravings emerged on the blade.

Tumbling godly might gushed out of the saint sword.

“It’s a godly spirits weapon!”

All the first marquises were horrified. They immediately performed their best defense skills and retreated, rushing back into the evil sha Qi cloud.

Some Luosha marquises also triggered the power of their ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons, trying to stop Zhang Ruochen with them.

There were three ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons, a blood sword, an ancient bronze arrow, and a fiery palace. All of them had their complete power utilized and dashed toward Zhang Ruochen from three directions.

The ancient bronze arrow got close to Zhang Ruochen first, and there were engravings like a cobweb at the tip of the arrow, piercing through the defense light of the Buddha sariras, about to hit Zhang Ruochen’s forehead.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t scared at all. The saint sword in his hand became brighter and brighter, and it knocked that ancient bronze arrow away by just shivering a little bit.

“One Sword Slay Everything.”

Zhang Ruochen raised the saint sword above his head.

Whoosh!

The sword trailed a trace of white light.

The sword couldn't handle the power of the God, and it crumbled as Zhang Ruochen wielded it, flying out with the forces of the God.

The blood sword and the fiery palace were both knocked away, and the God's power destroyed everything it touched.

Bang Bang!

The Luosha marquises flying in the sky exploded. Even the protecting runes couldn't save them.

The sword slashed a thick layer of the ground, and it even cut a saint mountain in the distance in half, causing the top half of the mountain to fall.

Countless Luosha marquises were killed, including more than ten first marquises.

Other first marquises survived simply because of a blue feather Princess Luosha used to protect them.

The blue feather was glowing with godly light. Obviously, it was an unusual valuable.

Ji Hua looked solemn standing in the demonic palace, and Princess Luosha was also in dismay.

Who could blame them? Zhang Ruochen killed thirteen first marquises, more than fifty second marquises, and more than a hundred third marquise.

There were countless more who were injured.

A third marquis was as powerful as a human absolute saint, and in the Luosha race, he or she was definitely a great being with a solid background, like the master of a large sect.

The Luosha race suffered a huge loss after that strike.

The other six priests from the Shatuo Seven Fields combined didn't cause that much damage to the Luosha race.

Qiu Yu in white walked into the demonic palace. He still looked handsome, glowing with saint light. He bowed at Princess Luosha and Ji Hua.

“Your highness, Lord Saint Master, no need to be angry. Zhang Ruochen has lost his trump card after using his godly spirits weapon. It’s very easy to capture him now.”

Qiu Yu smiled, at ease.

After obtaining the inheritance of a supreme saint from Sycamore Clan in the Phoenix Nest, Qiu Yu’s cultivation surged, which made him one of the top great beings under saint kings. He could even suppress some first-step saint kings.

However, Qiu Yu couldn’t go back to Kunlun’s Field now, so he had to latch onto Princess Luosha and submit to the Luosha race completely.

“Easy? I reckon not.” Princess Luosha said it on purpose because she knew Qiu Yu hated Zhang Ruochen’s guts.

Qiu Yu said, “Zhang Ruochen has his weakness. You shouldn’t attack Zhang Ruochen directly. Instead, you should attack the saints behind him. They’re the weak spot of Zhang Ruochen. Besides, I’ve received the inheritance from Qiao Ancestor, which boosted my cultivation. I might be able to fight Zhang Ruochen myself.”

Princess Luosha said, “Are you saying you want to fight him?”

Qiu Yu bowed at Princess Luosha and said, “That’s right. Please give me a chance, your highness.”

Qiu Yu certainly wanted to capture Zhang Ruochen himself as that would be a huge contribution, and with that, he would earn higher status in the Luosha race.

Also, he could seize this chance to humiliate Zhang Ruochen to save face.

Just by thinking of Zhang Ruochen becoming a prisoner and kneeling in front of him, Qiu Yu got so excited that his body was shivering, and his saint power flowed rapidly.

“Sure! I’ll crown you as a king if you can capture him, and I’ll give you a planet as your feudal estate.” Princess Luosha smiled.

Qiu Yu said, “I hope first marquises Qian Yu and Qian Shu can lead Luosha armies to help me.”

Both Qian Yu and Qian Shu were exquisite-looking Luosha girls, and they practiced martial way.

They both had complete body constitution, and they were Princess Luosha's most powerful personal guards. They even had the authority to give orders in the name of Princes Luosha.

Which meant Qian Yu and Qian Shu had much higher statuses than other first marquises.

Both Qian Yu and Qian Shu were slender, wearing sexy armor. They had flat bellies and smooth legs, standing at the sides of the demonic palace.

They stared at Qiu Yu, and they found that man to be dashing and handsome, which made him completely different from other Luosha males. Their eyes gleamed, as they were both attracted to Qiu Yu.

1

Qian Shu walked out and said, "Your highness, Zhang Ruochen is our mortal enemy. We must defeat him today. I'll fight."

"I'll also fight," Qian Yu said.

Princess Luosha looked down to the saint mountain, and she saw that Zhang Ruochen was already at the bottom of the mountain. It seemed that he was going to climb up the mountain.

"What's he doing? Is he going to attack my demonic palace?"

Princess Luosha was a bit irritated as she found Zhang Ruochen to be more overbearing than her. It was time to teach him a lesson that he should show some respect to the royal princess.

Princess Luosha waved her hand and said, "Zhang Ruochen's already at the bottom of the saint mountain, and it seems that he's about to trespass on the mountain. Go and capture him for me."

"How dare he!"

Qiu Yu sneered and rushed out of the demonic place with the two Luosha females.

Chapter 1523 - Zhang Ruochen Knocked Down the Saint Mountain

Chapter 1523: Zhang Ruochen Knocked Down the Saint Mountain

1

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The saint mountain where the demonic palace was belonged to one of the thirty-three saint mountains in the middle. It was seventy thousand feet tall with a steep cliff. Waterfalls were running everywhere, and there were inscription formations.

Zhang Ruochen came to the bottom of the saint mountain and looked up.

There was crimson evil sha Qi among the thickets, cliffs, and waterfalls.

Luosha marquises that were wearing saint armor were either holding saint weapons or holding battle flags. They stood in line on the mountain paths, forming tight formations.

To them, Zhang Ruochen was a fierce slaughterer who killed hundreds of Luosha marquises easily.

There were more than two hundred silver-thread iron towers in the saint mountain, and inside each of the iron towers were several Luosha females. Strong mind power gushed out of their saint hearts, merging with the sky and land through the iron towers, maintaining Thousand-Star Formation.

“No wonder the priest from Eight Ministry Field wasn’t able to break Thousand-Star Formation even though he used the godly spirits weapon. There are more than a thousand mind power saints maintaining the Thousand-Star Formation aside from a formation saint master. Even a third-step saint king will find it difficult to break the formation,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Le, Han Qiu, Princess White Li, Demonic Sound, Elephant-swallowing Rabbit, and Monster Ape stood in a straight line behind Zhang Ruochen.

Monster Ape was holding Star Sky Hammer and said, “How do you want us to fight them, my lord?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the mountainside and looked at Qiu Yu with a hostile gaze.

Qiu Yu stood at the mountainside with his hands behind his back like a pine tree, gazing at Zhang Ruochen.

There were strange plants growing around him. Tremendous life forces were permeating the saint mountain, which showed how sophisticated his attainment in life way was.

“I’ll go kill him,” Han Qiu said.

“No rush.”

Zhang Ruochen saw Qian Yu and Qian Shu behind Qiu Yu, including some marquises and saint kings.

This saint mountain was the center of the Luosha armies.

Strong as Han Qiu’s Way of Darkness was, it was still impossible for her to kill Qiu Yu here.

And besides, Zhang Ruochen could see that Qiu Yu’s cultivation surged again, so he wasn’t even sure whether Han Qiu could defeat him or not.

Qiu Yu said, “You didn’t expect to see me again, did you, Zhang Ruochen?”

“Indeed. I didn’t expect someone like you to still be alive,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Qiu Yu sneered and said, “Unfortunately, it’s you who’s going to die today, not me.”

“Really?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Qiu Yu nodded and said, “Take a look at your back.”

Boom!

The saint scepter that was more than nine thousand feet long flew toward Zhang Ruochen, and the power from the saint scepter froze the space around him.

Meanwhile, Lord Lingquan and four first-step saint kings rushed toward him, leading a large group of Luosha marquises, gathering under the saint scepter and blocking Zhang Ruochen’s way.

There was a saint mountain in front of them, and behind them was a large group of Luosha great beings. No saints would be able to survive it.

Qin Yutong said with perseverance, “Your highness, we can blow up our saint sources and help you get up to the saint mountain.”

“That’s right. There’re almost two hundred of us, and we’re all willing to die for you. I’ll go up the saint mountain and blow up my saint source now,” said another.

Zhang Ruochen said, trying to calm everyone down, “It’s just a saint mountain. I’ll knock it down.”

“I’ll do it.”

Monster Ape yelled, and then, following a huge cracking sound, its body became larger and larger, turning into a Taigu fierce ape that was thirty thousand feet tall.

Demonic clouds tumbled around the fierce ape, who dashed toward the saint mountain.

If it was only an ordinary saint mountain; the ape was more than strong enough to knock it down. However, the saint mountain in front of it was surrounded by formation inscriptions, maintained by a large group of Luosha marquises.

Monster Ape was hit by blood-red light right after it rushed toward the saint mountain, and it bounced away like a leaf.

Boom!

The Taigu fierce ape fell onto the ground, shrinking back to how it originally was.

The Luosha marquises in the saint mountain all laughed.
“Does it really think it can knock down the saint mountain?”

However, they immediately stopped laughing after seeing the saint power coming out of Zhang Ruochen’s body. A golden shadow emerged behind Zhang Ruochen.

The golden shadow got taller and taller, and in the end, it became as large as the saint mountain that was seventy thousand feet tall, terrifying all the Luosha marquises.

That was ‘Unmovable Emperor Ming Body.’

Zhang Ruochen himself wasn’t able to have such saint might even if he performed ‘Unmovable Emperor Ming Body.’ It was because Zhang Ruochen was using the power from Universe World.

“Is that really a saint?”

“Impossible. How can a saint be so powerful?”

...

Many Luosha marquises found it hard to even breathe, as if someone was suffocating them.

Almost all the monks in the saint mountains were looking at that enormous golden shadow. They almost wanted to kneel and worship it.

“Oh God! Is Zhang Ruochen really a God!”

“See, that’s my junior brother!” The second disciple of Sword Saint Xuanji, Zhu Hongtao, smiled at the saint standing beside him.

Zhang Ruochen stepped forward, and with each step he took, the ground around him would collapse. In the end, his body integrated with Unmovable Emperor King Body and hit the saint mountain.

Even great beings like Qiu Yu, Qian Yu, and Qian Shu were horrified.

“That guy has another trump card...”

Princess Luosha hit the ground with the saint scepter, and then, evil sha Qi gushed out of the saint scepter, spreading.

The demonic palace originally looked like a skull, and at this moment, its eyes gleamed as if they were a sun and a moon.

The sky and land were covered by demonic clouds completely. Only a sun and a moon were hanging in the sky, giving out unrivaled forces as if a supreme saint was reborn.

Boom!

Unmovable Emperor Ming Body clashed with the saint mountain.

The demonic Qi coming out of the demonic palace got thicker and thicker. The Luosha marquises couldn't handle the supreme saint power and kneeled on the ground.

Only Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha were still standing. Zhang Ruochen was in Unmovable Emperor Ming Body while Princess Luosha was in the demonic palace. They stared at each other, glowing with light as if they were a God of War and a demonic empress.

The demonic palace didn't collapse. However, the saint mountain under the demonic palace couldn't handle that much power. Formation inscriptions started to crack, and the cliff collapsed with waterfalls and plants being annihilated.

Following the earth-shattering noise, the saint mountain that was seventy thousand feet tall fell down.

The silver-thread iron towers that supported Thousand-Star Formation all went down with the saint mountain, and most of them were buried in dust.

Countless Luosha marquises were buried together with the towers.

All the monks who witnessed that were astounded.

“This is incredible. Zhang Ruochen's invincible!”

“Our priest is undefeatable!”

“Even Princess Luosha was suppressed!”

The creatures from Guanghai Field were all yelling with excitement as they were now convinced that nobody was strong enough to seize the Merits Record Wall from him.

As for the creatures from the other six fields of the Shatuo Seven Fields, they were all excited, as they were finally able to fight back. Zhang Ruochen changed the battle completely.

“How can he be that powerful?” Fang Yi clenched his fist tightly and looked more solemn.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, who was covered with blood smiled. “Amazing. I should’ve rewarded him much better after he saved me last time.”

Qiu Yu climbed out of the mud, clenching his teeth as he saw Zhang Ruochen, who had integrated with Unmovable Emperor Ming Body.

The supreme saints in Guanghai Field all looked at each other first, then, they looked to the Moon Goddess.

They could tell that Zhang Ruochen used an external force, however, using an external force was forbidden in the Saint Merits Battle. Even if Guanghai Field won the battle, it would be heavily punished.

The Moon Goddess was very calm. She said, “Don’t worry. Zhang Ruochen was using his own power, but that power is a bit different.”

Universe World was a part of Zhang Ruochen’s body as White Micro Star was a part of Fang Yi’s body. The difference was that Universe World was much more powerful than White Micro Star.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen was way more powerful than Fang Yi after using the power of Universe World.

Chapter 1524 - Invincible

Chapter 1524: Invincible

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The forces of the supreme saints surrounded the demonic palace, protecting Princess Luosha and Ji Hua, who were inside the palace.

“How powerful! Even the demonic palace can’t ward it off.” Princess Luosha sighed.

“He’s just an absolute saint. I don’t expect him to turn everything around.”

Ji Hua who was standing beside Princess Luosha looked ferocious. She raised her hand above her head and yelled, “Death of Heaven and Earth, Thousand Stars Fall.”

The saint mountain collapsed, and the iron tower with silver flowing light was buried in the mud. However, Thousand-Star Formation was still operating, and it was about to make a final attack.

Above the ninety-nine saint mountains were almost a thousand asteroids being triggered by the formation, and they dived, turning into rocks engulfed in flames.

Even one of the asteroids was able to kill the creatures in an area of a thousand square miles.

Those thousand asteroids looked apocalyptic.

Three hundred of the asteroids were dashing toward Zhang Ruo Chen, shaking the saint Qi, leading to a tumbling tornado.

“Thousand-Star Formation has activated its most powerful attack technique. Leave, everyone.”

The saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields and the Luosha marquises all rushed away from where Zhang Ruochen was as the asteroids were targeting Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Hua had great enough mind power to control where the asteroids were going to fall, and she needed to make sure that they only attacked the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields.

Boom!

The asteroids kept hitting Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look, shaking that giant golden shadow, making rumbling sounds and shaking the ground.

And soon, Unmovable Emperor Ming was surrounded by asteroids.

The thousand asteroids had tremendous destructive power, leveling all the ninety-nine saint mountains, leaving only aerolite pits on the ground which were surrounded by ground cracks as if the entire area was about to be torn apart.

The area where Zhang Ruochen stood had a towering tone mountain because of the immense number of asteroids, and the dust around the stone mountains blocked everyone's sight.

The Shatuo Seven Fields suffered a huge loss, as more than ten thousand saints died. They were all burnt into ashes, and more saints were severely injured.

As for the creatures who weren't in Zuling Field, they were horrified by just looking at the reflection of the battlefield.

Fortunately, everyone on the battlefield was a saint. If they were ordinary creatures, they might be annihilated.

"Zhang Ruochen was struck by a huge part of the Thousand-Star Formation. Is he still alive?" The monks from Guanghan Field and Kunlun's Field were all expecting him to make another miracle by surviving the attack."

Someone said, "There's a chance. Even Star Sky Hammer didn't kill him, which means he could just hide in his space treasure.

"Are you an idiot? There's no comparison between Thousand-Star Formation and Star Sky Hammer. Even space treasures

might be crushed completely. And besides, Zhang Ruochen tried to save the lives of the people from Kunlun's Field when Thousand-Star Formation charged him. He didn't have the capacity to get into the space treasure at all."

"There're some people who Zhang Ruochen actually cares about, which is his weak spot."

...

Thousand-Star Formation vanished, and the saints from the Shatuo Seen Fields were all trying to run away, as they wanted to get out of the encirclement of the Luosha armies as quickly as possible.

Some saints chose to stay, looking at the stone mountain formed by the asteroids.

If it weren't for Zhang Ruochen knocking over the saint mountain, none of them could've survived today. Those monks who valued his help certainly didn't want to see him die.

And certainly, some saints chose to stay because they wanted to seize the Merits Record Wall.

Some saints from Guanghan Field also stayed because they wanted to protect the Merits Record Wall, including Wu Hao, Su Qingling, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi...

Su Qingling bit her lips as her eyes turned red. She said, "It's been Zhang Ruochen who has been guarding the Merits Record Wall. Guanghan Field owes him too much. We can't allow him to die."

As for Wen Shusheng and Ling Mi, they both admired Zhang Ruochen, so they both looked worried.

Wu Hao, on the other hand, was happy to see things turn out like this. Ever since the start of the Saints Merits Battle, Zhang Ruochen had been stealing all the thunder, which just showed how useless he was as an heir.

If Zhang Ruochen could make it back to Heaven World or Guanghan Field alive, he would be under the spotlight as a hero.

As for Wu Hao, who used to be the best talent of Guanghan Field, he would pale in comparison to Zhang Ruochen.

Wu Hao wouldn't show those emotions for sure. He sighed and said, "Even if Zhang Ruochen was killed by Thousand-Star Formation, this battle is enough to write him into the records of Guanghan Field. He was the pride of Guanghan Field, so there's no need to be upset. The Merits Record Wall has fallen into the hands of the saints from Kunlun's Field. Although they all answer to Zhang Ruochen, things might change if he died. We must get the Merits Records Wall back and guard it until the battle is over."

Qiu Yu was pleased and a bit upset at the same time.

He was pleased that he had survived while Zhang Ruochen was crushed into pieces.

Yet he was upset that he wasn't the one who had killed Zhang Ruochen.

Qiu Yu then looked to the saints from Sacred Central Empire, and he said, "You'll pay for what Zhang Ruochen owed me."

Le, Princess White Li, and the other saints made a circle before the asteroid dropped. They triggered the original power of the supreme saint of Buddha sarira to protect themselves from it.

Unfortunately, before they could run away, Qiu Yu dashed toward them, leading a large group of Luosha marquises.

"You're nothing but a dog. You were at least a dog of her highness, but now, you're a dog of Princess Luosha."

Qiu Yu was indignant. He waved his hand and said, "Charge."

Boom!

The Luosha marquises either performed saint spells or wielded their saint weapons, and those two hundred saints from Sacred Central Empire were all engulfed in dust and fire, and one saint after another fell in a pool of blood.

Han Qiu turned into a black hole and flew toward Qiu Yu.

Qiu Yu had received the inheritance from 'Qiao Ancestor,' a supreme saint from the Sycamore Tree, and his body had merged with the trunk of Qiao Ancestor as if he had the body of a supreme saint.

Qiu Yu easily injured Han Qiu, forcing her to run back.

Qiu Yu didn't expect that he'd be this powerful. He laughed, looking at his hands. "Darkness Body is nothing. I can easily kill saint kings now, not to mention you."

Qiu Yu was releasing the forces of supreme saints, and he trumped all the other saints.

The saints from Sacred Central Empire knew that Qiu Yu wouldn't let them live.

"That's the end?"

Princess Luosha couldn't care less about Qiu Yu's revenge on the saints from Sacred Central Empire. She looked at the stone mountain in dismay as her destined person was killed that easily.

Shouldn't that person be able to defeat everyone in the world?

Princess Luosha felt very conflicted, and she found herself to be hilarious.

Ji Hua mobilized her mind power and pulled back that scepter on the ground. "Thousand-Star Formation is incredible, and Zhang Ruochen wasn't immortal. How... How could that be possible..."

Whoosh!

Golden light gushed out of the cracks on the stones.

The golden light spread to thousands of miles away.

Boom!

A tumbling saint power burst out of the stone mountain, knocking the asteroids away.

Lord Lingquan and some other first marquises came to the bottom of the stone mountain to collect the body of Zhang

Ruochen and his treasures, yet what had just happened knocked them away.

Unmovable Emperor Ming that was more than ten feet tall stood up again, and Zhang Ruochen was standing in the forehead of Unmovable Emperor Ming.

Howl!

Zhang Ruochen yelled, and his eyes glinted with golden light.

Unmovable Emperor Ming slapped Lord Lingquan to the ground. Nobody could tell whether it was still alive or not.

1

And then, Zhang Ruochen walked forward with Unmovable Emperor Ming.

Bang Bang!

Each one of his handprints killed a first marquis while leaving a palm print that was thousands of feet long on the ground.

The power from Unmovable Emperor Ming was ferocious, and Zuling Field, which was already very unstable, was about to crumble under that.

“How is that possible!” Ji Hua’s eyes were about to pop.

Princess Luosha said, “Even Thousand-Star Formation couldn’t kill him. We’re in deep trouble now.”

Even the first marquises were shocked by Zhang Ruochen’s power and didn’t dare fight him.

The Luosha marquises who were encircling the saints from Sacred Central Empire were killed by the hand of Unmovable Emperor Ming.

It was raining blood.

“It’s terrifying. Let’s go.”

“The farther we are from Zhang Ruochen, the better.”

...

All the Luosha marquises were trying to run away.

Zhang Ruochen didn't choose to chase them. Instead, he flew above Qiu Yu while Unmovable Emperor Ming was standing right in front of Qiu Yu.

Qiu Yu saw the blood on the lips of Zhang Ruochen, so he reckoned that Zhang Ruochen must've been severely injured by Thousand-Star Formation.

Qiu Yu couldn't be more confident of his power after getting the inheritance from Qiao Ancestor, and seeing Zhang Ruochen injured only boosted his confidence.

“Thank God you survived that so I can kill you myself.”

Qiu Yu smiled and mobilized the saint Qi inside his body. He trampled the ground, making it cave in. Fiery tree roots burst out like mountains, dashing toward him.

“You?”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the power of Universe World, and then, the light coming out of Unmovable Emperor Ming shone more brightly, and a giant fist hit the ground.

Bang Bang!

All the fiery tree roots exploded, turning into crushed branches.

Qiu Yu was shocked, but before he could make another attack, a giant golden hand was already pressing against him.

Before that giant hand hit him, the ground under his feet caved.

Chapter 1525 - Mu Fire Bronze City And Reverse God Stele

Chapter 1525: Mu Fire Bronze City And Reverse God Stele

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Faced with such great pressure, Qiu Yu's skin turned into wood and shone with golden light. Faint Supreme Saint Qi poured out and into the Fire God boxing gloves and wrist guards on his arms.

Whoosh!

Two hands of fire appeared above Qiu Yu's head like fiery clouds.

The attack from the Unmovable Emperor Ming also landed now.

The two fiery hands from Qiu Yu couldn't withstand the power. They crumbled into shards of flames, spreading in all directions.

Kaboom.

Qiu Yu's body couldn't withstand the Unmovable Emperor Ming's attack at all. He was forced underground. The surrounding ground also collapsed and cracks even appeared in the space.

It was clear that after the 99 saint mountains collapsed, the fragile space in Zuling Field couldn't withstand such a strong force anymore.

If such intense battles continued, the world could really fall apart.

“Zhang Ruochen, I’ve become one with the Qiao Ancestor’s Supreme Saint tree now. My body can’t be destroyed. You can’t kill me.”

Qiu Yu’s voice came from under the collapsed earth. Leaves, branches, and a tree trunk burst from the ground. It grew bigger and rushed into the sky, almost reaching into the universe.

The parasol tree, the root of the fire spirit.

Such an enormous saint tree looked like a towering mountain from the distance. It burned with blazing flames. The fire actually contained power comparable to Divine Fire Jingmie.

The Luosha marquises present, along with Le, Princess White Li, Han Qiu, and the Saints of the Sacred Central Empire all retreated into the distance. They were afraid of falling into the battle zone.

Zhang Ruochen and Qiu Yu’s battle had already surpassed the Saint Realm. They’d even surpassed first step Saint Kings. If a battle erupted, the broken Zuling Field wouldn’t be able to withstand the power at all. It may shatter into pieces.

“Die!”

The saint tree covered in flames swept out at the Unmovable Emperor Ming.

Supported by Supreme Saint power, the saint tree was actually able to suppress Zhang Ruochen for a bit. But soon, Zhang Ruochen regained the upper hand. He used Spatial Collapse and hurt the saint tree.

The weaker the space was, the stronger Zhang Ruochen was.

This was his geographical advantage.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen put the Unmovable Emperor Ming back into his body. He activated the power of the Universe World and dragged his finger across the saint tree’s trunk. A 100-mile-long spatial crack appeared.

All of Zuling Field was about to be torn in half.

Ugh, Zhang Ruochen's spatial power is increasing without limits in Zuling Field. Even though I have a Supreme Saint body, I might still be forced into the void. Qiu Yu was naturally jealous.

Mastering an ancient way was the biggest treasure for any cultivator. Even a god would be jealous.

Before, Qiu Yu said that he had a Divine Body because he was the reborn root of the divine parasol tree. He contained natural divine Qi and it was possible to grow into a divine tree.

Now, he had a true Supreme Saint body. Anyone who wasn't a Supreme Saint would definitely have difficulty killing him.

Yet Zhang Ruochen's spatial power could threaten him and may even kill him. This was the scary thing about the ancient ways.

"Let me help you."

Ji Hua struck with the saint staff again, stabbing it into the ground between Zhang Ruochen and Qiu Yu. She wanted to use the staff's power to stabilize the space and restrict Zhang Ruochen.

Unfortunately, she didn't know that she could only stabilize the space earlier because the 99 saint mountains hadn't collapsed. The spatial structure had been stable already.

Now, Zhang Ruochen activated the power of the Universe World. With her Spiritual Power, she wouldn't be able to restrict Zhang Ruochen even if she could stabilize the space.

Faced with Zhang Ruochen's spatial crack, the saint staff actually started shaking.

"Oh, no..."

Ji Hua's expression change dramatically.

The 100-mile-long spatial crack didn't close. Instead, it swallowed the staff.

"My...Xuanqing Saint Staff..."

Ji Hua almost spat out blood in anger. That Xuanqing Saint Staff was a very powerful treasure. It could strengthen saint techniques and help her quickly carve advanced formation runes.

Losing the saint staff would reduce her abilities greatly.

She would have to accumulate years of wealth to create a treasure like the Xuanqing Saint Staff. How could she not feel heartbroken?

Her murderous intent grew heavier.

Qiu Yu was decisive though. He shrunk, turning back into human form, and used his fastest speed to dodge the spatial crack.

But Zhang Ruochen was even faster. He used the Spatial Move and appeared before Qiu Yu. He struck out with thousands of dragon shadows flying from his palm.

Qiu Yu also pushed a palm out, clashing squarely with Zhang Ruochen.

Kaboom!

With them as the center, the world was ripped apart. Cracks appeared in the sky.

Because he could control spatial power, Zhang Ruochen's advantage grew inside broken space.

Qiu Yu had no choice but to retreat.

His retreat meant Zhang Ruochen could advance. He used move after move from the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. Dragon and elephant shadows kept flying out, restricting Qiu Yu fully.

“It's not easy to meld into a Supreme Saint body. Even if you received the Qiao Ancestor's inheritance, you still need a long time to meld completely and control the Supreme Saint body's power.”

Zhang Ruochen's attacks grew fiercer and fiercer. Qiu Yu couldn't even fight back.

After more than 100 attacks, the world within thousands of miles was all tattered. Densely packed ravines appeared everywhere.

With a boom, Qiu Yu was hit by Zhang Ruochen's fist. He spat out blood and flew back.

He landed on the ground in a half-kneeling move. But even with his weak personality, he still didn't beg for forgiveness. Instead, his eyes sharpened.

Does he have another trump card? Zhang Ruochen was very familiar with Qiu Yu now.

"Zhang Ruochen, are you really my nemesis?" Qiu Yu roared. "Before meeting you, I couldn't find anyone who could stop me in the same realm!"

Keeping his guard up, Zhang Ruochen walked to the side. A strong force emanated from him. "Since you know I'm your nemesis, then you should hide when you see me. Why do you still fight with me?"

"You're too proud. You think I can't defeat you? Today, I will defeat you squarely and justly and press you under my feet forever."

Qiu Yu suddenly stood up. He put his hands above his head and a fist-sized ball of light flew out of his forehead. "Mu Fire Bronze City!" he yelled.

The ball of light rushed into the sky, transforming into a majestic bronze city of fire.

When the city appeared, a horrible Supreme Saint aura also spread out, filling the space.

Even the Saints standing thousands of miles away could feel their saint souls trembling and going out of control. They became chaotic.

Only a Supreme Saint could have such might.

"Oh, no. Qiu Yu actually got the Qiao Ancestor's strongest saint weapon, the Mu Fire Bronze City."

The Saint Lady looked into the sky. Seeing the city in the flames and the terrible saintly might, she grew unsettled.

The Mu Fire Bronze City wasn't an absolute saint weapon, but it was the strongest weapon under the Absolute Saint Realm. There were more than 100,000 patterns inside.

Merely a saint weapon wouldn't worry the Saint Lady. But from the Mu Fire Bronze City's saintly might, it was clear that the Qiao Ancestor had left Supreme Saint power in it.

If the power was unleashed, barely any beings under the Supreme Saint Realm could withstand it.

“Zhang Ruochen can manipulate the Universe World's power, but with his current physical body, he can't withstand too strong of a force. The power he can borrow is limited too. I'm afraid he...can't bear the Mu Fire Bronze City...”

The Saint Lady bit her red lip and worry grew in her eyes. If she wasn't so far away from the battlefield, she would hurry over to help Zhang Ruochen no matter what.

In a way, Zhang Ruochen's enemy was the Qiao Ancestor instead of Qiu Yu.

The Supreme Saints of Guanghan Field were extremely nervous. Some even sighed. They were clear about Supreme Saint power, so they were even more pessimistic. They thought Zhang Ruochen might not be able to survive this.

Zhang Ruochen indeed felt extreme pressure. All his Qi was restricted. If he didn't activate the power of the Universe World, he might not even be able to move a finger.

“This time, I'm afraid you'll have to act so we can survive,” he said to the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

The tree's voice traveled from the Universe World. “I can't leave the Universe World. Even if I attack, I might not be able to stop the bronze city. But if you use the Reverse God Stele, you might be able to resolve the crisis.”

“Reverse God Stele?” Zhang Ruochen was doubtful.

The Reverse God Stele was only a broken tablet that he'd dug out of the Luo Water. He'd studied it for a long time without

finding anything special.

The Divine Sky-connecting Tree's voice sounded again. "After I grew stronger, I remembered some things. It includes memories about the Reverse God Stele. They're all shocking secrets and I'll tell you slowly later. Now, I'll work with you to activate the Reverse God Stele and solve the problem at hand."

...

Qiu Yu flew up and stood on the Mu Fire Bronze City. "Zhang Ruochen, if you kneel down and beg me, I can consider letting you live."

The Supreme Saint power in the Mu Fire Bronze City was very limited. He couldn't use it many times, so he clearly didn't want to use it now.

Humiliating Zhang Ruochen could make Qiu Yu feel better than killing him.

Zhang Ruochen took the Reverse God Stele from the Universe World and placed it before him.

The broken tablet was six feet tall, four feet wide, and 1.5 feet thick. Very ancient words were recorded on it. Other than that, there was nothing special about it.

Following the Divine Sky-connecting Tree's pointers, Zhang Ruochen activated the Rules of Saintly Way in him that had already become tangible. He sent them into some of the words on the tablet.

It must work out, or else we're dead! Zhang Ruochen was a bit nervous.

Qiu Yu didn't understand Zhang Ruochen's actions, but he lost his aloofness. Controlling the Mu Fire Bronze City, he sent it down on Zhang Ruochen.

Boom, boom.

Zuling Field's space couldn't withstand the power from the city. It kept collapsing. The range also spread thousands of miles into the distance.

The city was about to hit Zhang Ruochen's head. Suddenly, all the saintly might from the city vanished. The Supreme Saint power also disappeared. Even the runes inside the city started fading, finally disappearing.

A weapon close to the Absolute Saint Realm actually became a plain bronze city, losing its might.

Even Zhang Ruochen was shocked, let alone Qiu Yu.

“That's due to the Reverse God Stele? So scary...”

But Zhang Ruochen calmed down quickly. He formed a huge palm print and slapped up, sending the Mu Fire Bronze City into the broken space.

Boom, boom.

The object that had been so shocking earlier was now scrap metal, falling into the empty void. Only Qiu Yu could survive by escaping beforehand.

“Zhang Ruochen, what treasure is that?”

Qiu Yu was terrified. His legs trembled involuntarily.

Zhang Ruochen's tactic earlier had surpassed his knowledge.

The cultivators of the Heaven World couldn't see the Reverse God Stele through the projection because the Mu Fire Bronze City blocked it. After sending the city flying out, Zhang Ruochen already put the Reverse God Stele away.

Thus, no one knew what had happened, other than Qiu Yu and Zhang Ruochen. They all thought that Zhang Ruochen had destroyed the bronze city by himself.

“Zhang Ruochen has a super trump card. Once he unleashes it, he has no enemy under the Supreme Saint Realm.” The cultivators of the Heaven World all got this kind of wrong idea. Clearly, they were very shocked.

Chapter 1526 - Luosha Armies Retreat

Chapter 1526: Luosha Armies Retreat

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“That’s Mu Fire Bronze City, which contains the supreme saint power left by Qiao Ancestor, yet it was slapped away by Zhang Ruochen with one strike.”

“What kind of trump card does Zhang Ruochen have? Other than supreme saints, what other creatures can fight him?”

“This is impressive. An absolute saint managed to suppress the power left by a supreme saint.”

...

The monks from Heaven World were all shocked. They were all discussing and speculating. Even saint kings felt unsettled after witnessing this.

Many monks even wondered whether it was the godly power left by the Moon Goddess to Zhang Ruochen.

But they vetoed that assumption immediately as the Gods from Merits Godly Palace would definitely interfere, yet they hadn’t done anything to stop it yet.

Which meant Zhang Ruochen had destroyed Mu Fire Bronze City using his own power.

“Is it the power of space or time?”

Many monks also wondered about that.

The powers of time and space were too mysterious and had unlimited possibilities. It was normal that they suspected these

powers.

Guanghan Godly Palace in Moon Goddess Mountain.

All the supreme saints from Guanghan Field gathered, as even they were confused. The man that the Moon Goddess had brought back was miraculous.

Supreme Saint Manjian couldn't help asking, "Moon Goddess, what kind of treasure does Zhang Ruochen have? How can it be so powerful?"

The Moon Goddess had been very calm the whole time. She didn't answer Supreme Saint Manjian's question directly. Instead, she said, "Zhang Ruochen has tremendous fate Qi and a relentless spirit. He has a bright future ahead of him."

All the supreme saints were pondering what the Moon Goddess meant, and they came up with two points.

One, they should stop asking what kind of treasure Zhang Ruochen had, as it must be extraordinary, and the Moon Goddess wouldn't tell them.

Two, Zhang Ruochen had tremendous fate Qi and a relentless spirit, which meant he might become a God in the future, and everyone in Guanghan Field should be nice to Zhang Ruochen.

1

The saints in Zuling Field were all dazed. They were very far from the battlefield, so they didn't see exactly what happened. However, they could all sense the saint might coming out of Mu Fire Bronze City.

The Luosha armies were all horrified.

Lord Lingquan didn't die, as the formation print in his body saved his life again. He was standing behind Princess Luosha at the moment, and he couldn't help gasping, "He has another trump card. That Zhang Ruochen is unfathomably strong."

Lord Lingquan had supreme complete body constitution, and he rarely encountered anyone at his age who could rival him, and he was never afraid of anyone. But now, he was a bit intimidated by Zhang Ruochen.

“How did Zhang Ruochen slap Mu Fire Bronze City away and crush it in the chaotic space?” Princess Luosha pondered it, but she couldn’t come up with an explanation.

1

The Reverse God Tablet had bizarre power which could neutralize the power of supreme saints and turn saint weapons into ordinary objects as if it changed the rules of the sky and land. It was beyond Zhang Ruochen’s knowledge, so he couldn’t reveal the secret yet.

“Qiu Yu is the only one who knows about this. He has to die.”

Zhang Ruochen became belligerent again.

“No! Zhang Ruochen wants to silence me forever.”

Qiu Yu knew that Zhang Ruochen didn’t actually have the power to rival supreme saints. Instead, all he had was a mysterious broken tablet, but if the news spread, there would be countless great beings going against Zhang Ruochen to seize it.

Qiu Yu turned around and rushed to where Princess Luosha, Ji Hua, Lord Lingquan, and Yang Qi were.

“You can’t run away.”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the power of Universe World. He trampled on the ground and formed the phantoms of a dragon and an elephant.

Qiu Yu bounced up, spitting out blood.

Actually, Qiu Yu was almost as strong as Zhang Ruochen after merging with the supreme saint body of Qiao Ancestor. However, Qiu Yu had been defeated by Zhang Ruochen too many times, so he had lost his confidence a long time ago. He just wanted to run away.

A person who had completely lost his confidence would only be defeated faster.

Bang Bang!

Zhang Ruochen hit Qiu Yu dozens of times, and each time, Qiu Yu spit out blood.

Even with a supreme saint body, Qiu Yu's saint Qi was almost annihilated, and even his saint source and saint soul were cracked. Only his body was still perfectly intact, which showed the sturdiness of the body of a supreme saint.

“Zhang Ruochen, I'll tell everyone your secret...”

There was blood all over Qiu Yu's collar, and just when he was about to yell...

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen took out the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and captured Qiu Yu with it before Qiu Yu could say anything.

Princess Luosha looked at the man with a giant bronze cauldron. “We've lost this time.”

Princess Luosha didn't want more Luosha marquises to die, so she decided to leave with the Luosha armies.

Zhang Ruochen looked like a God of War, and if the battle went on, countless more marquises would be killed.

More importantly, there were only a few Luosha marquises who dared fight Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Hua didn't want to retreat. “It's impossible for Zhang Ruochen to change the entire situation by himself. Even if he has some incredible skill, there must be lots of restrictions on it, otherwise, he wouldn't have waited until just now to perform it.”

Princess Luosha frowned and said, “We'd better not mess with him. Zhang Ruochen is in his prime now. We should dodge him.”

Ji Hua couldn't listen to a word of Princess Luosha's advice. She recalled what Qiu Yu said, “Zhang Ruochen also has weaknesses: those saints from Kunlun's Field.

“Your highness, you've been crushing the monks from Heaven World ever since you entered Zuling Field. Why did you become so careful facing a saint?”

Ji Hua then mobilized her mind power and rushed toward Princess White Li, Le, and Han Qiu, trying to kill them.

Princess Luosha couldn't stop Ji Hua, so she had to lead a team of first marquises to try and protect her.

However, just before they moved, they heard a blasting sound. Princess Luosha stopped and saw Ji Hua's body explode because of the ancient cauldron, turning into a cluster of bloody mist.

Whoosh!

The space shook a bit, and at the next moment, Zhang Ruochen caught a cluster of black mist through the blood mist.

That was the saint soul of Ji Hua.

Her body was destroyed, yet her soul was still intact. That was the amazing trait of a mind power saint king.

No matter how strong Ji Hua's saint soul was, it was still seized by Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Hua's voice came from that black light mist. "How, how is it possible?! There're many defense formation inscriptions on my body. It's as sturdy as a first-step saint king's. How did you crush my body with one strike?"

The black mist shook fiercely, and great mind power gushed out, and then, purple lightning was formed in this land as if there were thousands of electric dragons traveling in the sky and land.

Ji Hua was seized by Zhang Ruochen before she could even make a move. She tried to fight back

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen didn't give her any chance. He pinched his fingers and crushed the black light, which withered away in the air.

"Your highness... He's destined to stop you from advancing... He's your bane... You must kill him... Kill him..."

Ji Hua's voice became fainter and fainter until it completely disappeared.

After Ji Hua died completely, the lightning in the sky dived to the ground, setting off dust which made the battlefield look darker.

Princess Luosha and the first marquises all stopped walking.

Princess Luosha looked solemn.

What Ji Hua said before she died took its toll on Princess Luosha. She was afraid that Ji Hua might be right. Everyone knew heroes fell for beauties, yet nobody knew that beauties would also fall for men.

1

Yang Qi asked, “Should we go on, your highness?”

After thinking for a while, Princess Luosha calmed herself down and said, “Nah. No need to take the risk. Although we failed to kill all the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields, we still managed to kill seventy percent of them. This is definitely a win for us.”

“Are you saying we leave Zuling Field now, your highness?”
Yang Qi asked.

“There’s nothing valuable in Zuling Field now. As for the resources on the world fragments, they’re for the half saints to grab. No need for saints to stay in Zuling Field.”

Princess Luosha didn’t turn around and leave with Luosha marquises until she shot Zhang Ruochen a glance.

Seeing the Luosha marquises retreat, the saints from Sacred Central Empire all cheered.

“Our invincible crown prince defeated the Luosha armies by himself!”

The saints from Guanghan Field standing in the distance all roared, “We defeated Princess Luosha! Guanghan Field tops the Saints Merits Battle! Our priest is the biggest hero!”

“From now on, Lord priest is my idol!”

“He’s my goal!”

...

Even people who were usually quiet all looked excited and yelled in exhilaration.

It took too much for them to have this victory.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the fragmented ground, only relieved after making sure the Luosha armies had left. People around saw him suppress both Qiu Yu and Ji Hua, but they didn't know that he'd borrowed the power of Universe World.

There were wounds all over Zhang Ruochen's body, which were covered by the Hundred Saints Blood Armor. His body was about to crumble after withstanding power far superior to his level.

Zhang Ruochen did still have the strength to fight, but if he did, his body might explode.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen put the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron on the ground and yelled, "I'll offer the Divine Phoenix Tree as a sacrifice to the heaven, the earth, and those who fought to the death for us. I'll finish the sacrifice I should've finished in Peakless Mountain."

All the saints from Sacred Central Empire surrounded the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron and bowed. They pressed their hands on the ground, releasing their saint Qi, which infused into the cauldron.

The sacrifice began.

'Qiu Yu,' who was the sacrifice, made a gut-wrenching sound as he was being executed by dismemberment.

Chapter 1527 - Sacrifice

Chapter 1527: Sacrifice

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Only around 170 Saints of the Sacred Central Empire were still alive. They were all the cream of the crop.

They knew that Zhang Ruochen used Qiu Yu as a sacrifice for the Universe World and Divine Sky-connecting Tree instead of the world.

Many civilians and cultivators of the Sacred Central Empire lived in the Universe World. The environment could only improve as the Divine Sky-connecting Tree grew stronger. Then it would be more suitable for cultivation and more beneficial for their descendants.

Qiu Yu had inherited part of the divine parasol tree's power and the Qiao Ancestor's Supreme Saint tree body. Naturally, he was the best sacrifice for the Divine Sky-connecting Tree.

Thus, the Saints of the Sacred Central Empire were excited.

They already felt a sense of belonging toward the Universe World.

Sizzle, sizzle.

More than 100 beams of Holy Qi were sent into the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. The words on the cauldron brightened more and more. Horribly thick divine power spread out.

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron started refining Qiu Yu.

Kaboom.

Boom.

...

The huge cauldron trembled violently.

An overpowering force crashed around, trying to escape.

With each shake, the sky and world would tremble. Rings of water-like Qi rippled out. The surrounding Saints all became dizzy and their Blood Qi tumbled inside. They were almost thrown back by the force.

“He’s suppressed but still so strong.”

“Qiu Yu has a Supreme Saint body and a shred of the divine parasol tree’s divine power. It’s impossible for us to sacrifice him with our cultivation.”

All the Saints present felt great pressure. After all, they weren’t sacrificing an average being now. It was difficult for a major world to produce someone like Qiu Yu.

Qiu Yu’s voice traveled out of the cauldron. “Zhang Ruochen, I am the World Spiritual Root of Kunlun’s Field. I have a great fate. You can’t refine me.”

He continued crashing around. The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron shook even more strongly.

Cracks appeared in the earth around the cauldron. The surroundings were quite stable ground, but the ground was still collapsing.

Zhang Ruochen had let Qiu Yu escape many times before. This time, he had to kill him no matter what.

“There are still two hours before the end of the Saints Merits Battle,” Zhang Ruochen said to himself. “It should be enough time.”

Then he flew up to the top of the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron. Hovering in the sky, Holy Qi poured out of his 144 apertures, transforming into 144 bridges of Qi.

Whoosh!

The 144 bridges fell down, connecting with the cauldron.

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron stabilized gradually and Qiu Yu’s voice lowered. He didn’t have the pride from before and he even started begging Zhang Ruochen.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen didn't care at all.

Whoosh!

The Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron spun quickly. Golden words fell off of it and flew into the sky, resonating with the saintly light from Zhang Ruochen.

The Time and Space Martial Deity Print appeared on his forehead. It was like a door to the Universe World had opened.

Strands of red fire followed the 144 bridges and rose up. They flooded into Zhang Ruochen's forehead, entering the Sea of Qi and gathering in the Universe World.

Rustle, rustle.

Saintly light appeared on the leaves of the Divine Sky-connecting Tree. It shook softly, quickly absorbing the fire Qi from the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

Crackles sounded in the tree trunk. With visible speed, it grew taller and thicker. Spiritual medicine grew out of the ground within thousands of miles, shining with starry light.

The ground of the Universe World extended outward.

At the edge of the world, Qi of the five elements gradually transformed into land and sky, allowing the world to enlarge. If one stood in Zhang Ruochen's Sea of Qi and looked at the Universe World, one would feel that a map was opening up, showing more geographical images.

...

After the Luosha marquises retreated from Zuling Field, the Shatuo Seven Fields lost their enemy. The Saints gathered again into seven camps and went toward the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron.

The seven fields all had different losses. Some fields had casualties of 50%. Others had 80% killed or injured.

Of course, whether it was 50 or 80%, it was all tragic. Without large amounts of resources as support, they wouldn't be able to recover. Even if they survived this Saints Merits Battle, they wouldn't be able to survive the next one.

For the fields at the end, they were struggling at the brink of collapse, unless they produced a top talent who could continue charging forward bravely. They should enter the Merits Rank of the Saint Realm, Saint King Realm, and Supreme Saint Realm of the Heaven World. Once that figure reached the Divine Realm, they'd be able to kill a god.

As long as they could kill a god from the Hell World, they would change the fate of their mother world.

Thus, the prides of the Saint, Saint King, and Supreme Saints Merits Rank were all fought for by the various worlds.

It was easier to train prides who entered the Saints Merits Rank. They had a greater chance of entering the Saint King and Supreme Saints Merits Rank.

Now, the Saints of Kunlun's Field gathered together. There were around 30,000 remaining, including humans, beasts, and some mutants.

They gazed at the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron with troubled eyes.

A Saint of the Fire Race went to beg Wan Zhaoyi and the Saint Lady. "Qiu Yu is the future World Spiritual Root of Kunlun's Field. The Empress has high expectations for him. He indeed made some mistakes on the battleground, but... He's still young. it's normal that he doesn't have a resolute mindset. If he's given more guidance, he can still stand up tall in the future."

"Stand up tall?"

Wan Zhaoyi put his hands behind his back and sneered. "If he had one-tenth of Zhang Ruochen, then I'd believe that he can stand up tall. Unfortunately, he doesn't."

Chu Siyuan stood on the side and muttered, "Even a regular Saint would deactivate their saint sources when faced with death to die with the enemy. But Qiu Yu only knows to give in and even side with the enemy, acting as the enemy's dog. Kunlun's Field doesn't need a World Spiritual Root like this. It's too embarrassing."

The Saint Lady knew that Qiu Yu was only the Empress's obvious chess piece. The World Spiritual Root that she was

truly developing was the peach tree.

So, Qiu Yu's death didn't really affect Kunlun's Field.

Of course, the Saint Lady still didn't understand the Empress's reason for using Qiu Yu. Perhaps, the enemies would try to kill the World Spiritual Root, so she used this chess piece to fool them.

It was also possible that the Empress wanted to train Qiu Yu into a sword just for Zhang Ruochen.

Some worlds were also plotting to steal the Merits Record Wall while Zhang Ruochen was sacrificing Qiu Yu.

But the power that Zhang Ruochen displayed was too much. He'd forced the Luosha marquises to retreat. Thus, no one dared to provoke him.

"Let's test him first. I don't believe that he can maintain such strong combat abilities."

Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field sent a ten-person team and hid under an invisibility umbrella. They collected their auras and snuck over.

The ten people were all top figures. The invisibility umbrella could also cover their auras.

When they were around 1,000 miles from the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron, Zhang Ruochen, standing on many golden words, suddenly opened his eyes.

Whoosh!

The Abyss Ancient Sword whistled and flew out.

Twenty thousand runes appeared on the sword, unleashing Second Yao power. It streaked past 1,000 miles and hit the invisibility umbrella.

Boom.

The ground shook violently and a bottomless ditch appeared.

The invisibility umbrella was tattered and the ten strong cultivators fell to the bottom of the ditch. They were bloody and had stopped breathing.

He'd killed ten top figures with one strike.

"This guy... What exactly does he have?"

Fang Yi, Heir of Hell Blade Field, and Sword Master Dongliu, Heir of Purple Mansion Field, were both shocked. The other Saints of the two worlds were also terrified.

"Those who aren't afraid of dying, come steal the Merits Record Wall. I will kill you all." Zhang Ruochen spat out sound waves to warn the Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields.

The tempted Saints all calmed down.

"The Priest is so aggressive, but I like it."

"With the Priest's protection, no one will be able to steal the Merits Record Wall anymore. Guanghan Field will definitely be number one."

...

Guanghan Field Saints all felt proud. Undoubtedly, having a Priest like Zhang Ruochen shining on the battleground would improve Guanghan Field's reputation and status.

The Moon Goddess had a reputation in the Heaven World, but she was a god. She wouldn't appear often.

Zhang Ruochen was different. Now was his shining moment. After this, he would create an even bigger name for himself and represent Guanghan Field.

After this, Guanghan Field cultivators only had to say Zhang Ruochen's name outside and the other cultivators would show respect.

This was the influence of a top pride!

Around an hour later, the Kaiyuan Deer Cauldron fully refined Qiu Yu. The ritual was officially over.

Zhang Ruochen picked up the bronze cauldron and poured ashes out.

"After absorbing Qiu Yu's power, the Divine Sky-connecting Tree has strengthened greatly. The Spiritual Qi in the Universe World has also grown thicker." Zhang Ruochen was satisfied.

Just then, he raised his head and saw that the Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields were all coming over.

They stopped around 1,000 miles from him. Only the Heir of each world used physical techniques to appear before him.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine had petal-shaped clouds under her feet. She looked exotic and let out a seductive laugh. “Zhang Ruochen, I’m not here for the Merits Record Wall. But there are many bodies of Great Devil Ten Square Field Saints on this battleground. I want to bring them back to bury.”

“They should be buried in their home,” Zhang Ruochen said. “No problem. I give you permission.”

“Thank you.”

The Demonic Concubine’s smile grew even more alluring.

She didn’t actually want their bodies, but the saintly sources within them.

After all, there were hundreds of thousands, even millions of Saints who’d died here. The battle had been very intense. No one had the time to collect the saintly sources.

In other words, a great number of saintly sources were left on this battleground.

If a Half-Saint refined a saintly source, it was highly possible for them to reach the Saint Realm. The Shatuo Seven Fields all suffered great losses. They could only recover quickly by receiving a large number of saintly sources. Otherwise, they wouldn’t be able to survive the next merits battle.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was the biggest obstacle to them taking the saintly sources here. It wouldn’t be easy to get past him.

“You can take the bodies,” Zhang Ruochen said. “But the saintly sources must be left behind.”

Hearing this, the Demonic Concubine’s smile stiffened.

Chapter 1528 - Merits Godly Palace

Chapter 1528: Merits Godly Palace

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Fang Yi said, “Zhang Ruochen, you’re being too arrogant. Do you really think you can seize all those saint sources by yourself? You’re going to explode.”

“I don’t know whether I’m going to explode or not, but I can say for sure that Hell Blade Field won’t get any saint source.”

Zhang Ruochen then mobilized the power of Universe World, and the force knocked Fang Yi away and made him bleed.

“How is he so powerful...?”

Fang Yi pressed his chest. He was furious, but he was too intimidated to act out as Zhang Ruochen was able to kill him with one random strike.

And besides, even if Zhang Ruochen killed him, the Moon Goddess would definitely try to spare his life given his potential. Not even Merits Godly Palace could convict Zhang Ruochen.

Just put up with it!

He now didn’t have any leverage against Zhang Ruochen.

The heirs from the six large fields communicated using their mind power and prepared to leave. They wanted to seize the saint sources leading the saints from the other six fields.

The battlefield was enormous, and there was an enormous number of saints from the six large fields. No matter how

strong Zhang Ruochen was, he couldn't stop all of them.

However, just as they were about to leave, a tremendous saintly way power suppressed them completely so that they couldn't move a muscle.

All the heirs except Wu Hao stared at Zhang Ruochen.

Mad Man said, "What're you trying to do, Zhang Ruochen? All we want to do is to take away the bodies and the saint sources that belong to our own fields. We'll leave all the saint sources of the Luosha marquises to you. Isn't that enough?"

After Yuan Hun died, Mad Man automatically became the leader of the saints from Eight Ministry Field.

"Go!"

Zhang Ruochen waved his hand, and all the saints from Sacred Central Empire rushed out to collect the saint sources.

Zhang Ruochen said after that, "You guys chose to leave the battlefield, which meant you've given up the saint sources. I defeated the Luosha race single-handedly and will seize those saint sources. Why should I share any of them with you?"

The six heirs knew that if it weren't for Zhang Ruochen's defeating the Luosha armies, they might've been dead already.

Which meant it was Zhang Ruochen who had saved their lives, so it was fair that Zhang Ruochen wanted those saint sources.

However, after the Luosha armies retreated, they wanted those saint sources back.

When it came to a huge benefit like this, they all forgot the fact that Zhang Ruochen had saved them all.

All the six heirs were intelligent. They mobilized saint Qi at the same time, releasing their maximum power, trying to get out of Zhang Ruochen's suppression.

Boom!

The six traces of saintly way power exploded like six clouds, shaking the space around them.

“I know that the saint sources are very important to you, but they’re important to me as well. Today, whoever is stronger will get the saint sources.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his hand and pressed forward, then the ground under their feet sunk, and space cracks showed up around their bodies, trapping them in an area that was a couple hundred square feet.

“God damn it. The space in Zuling Field is too fragile. Zhang Ruochen’s space power can be fully utilized here. We’re put at a huge disadvantage fighting him here.”

“Now I know why Princess Luosha still decided to retreat with the Luosha marquises even though they were actually winning. If they actually left Zhang Ruochen with no choice, he could make this entire space collapse and kill all of them with him.”

The six heirs were all trapped in the broken space. The saints from the six worlds immediately rushed to the battlefield, trying to seize the saint sources.

If Zhang Ruochen couldn’t use the power of Universe World, he could in no way stop them even if he used space power in Zuling Field.

But now...

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the power from Universe World. His body had already hit its limit, and there were bloodstains on his body, yet he was still trying to preserve it.

“Space crack.”

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen tore the space apart, and that black crack connected the sky and land, looking spectacular.

He waved his arm, and that black crack flew out, stretching from under Zhang Ruochen’s feet all the way to thousands of miles away, stopping the saints from the six large fields from moving forward.

That thousand-mile crack was more than a thousand feet wide.

The saints who rushed to the edge of the crack were all horrified. They immediately stopped and looked at the front with their eyes popped as if they had just witnessed a masterpiece of a God.

On the other side, the saints from Sacred Central Empire were trying to collect as many saint sources as possible. They knew they didn't have enough time, as Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to hold the saints from the six worlds off for long.

Which was why they only focused on collecting saint sources instead of other valuables, which pained them a bit.

Demonic Sound was the most efficient in collecting the saint sources.

Her feet turned into tens of thousands of branches, and each branch seized a saint source like a hand.

Just as the space crack closed up, ninety-nine percent of the saint sources had been collected by the saints from Sacred Central Empire.

“Go!”

Zhang Ruochen yelled and enveloped them with saint Qi, fleeing.

When the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, Sword Saint Dongliu, Wan Zhaoyi, and the others rushed out of the broken space, Zhang Ruochen and the saints from Sacred Central Empire had already run far away.

“Damn it! Zhang Ruochen took away more than one million saint sources himself. Isn't he afraid people will go after him?”

“Any field under the Heaven World will crave it. Just wait and see, Zhang Ruochen's digging his own grave.”

...

They knew that they couldn't catch up with Zhang Ruochen, nor could they get back the Merits Record Wall and those saint sources, so they had to lead the saints from their own fields to search for the other valuables left in the battlefield.

Other than saint sources, there were saint weapons, saint pills, runes, saint corpses, and saint blood... All those items were immensely valuable, yet the saints from Sacred Central Empire didn't have time to get them at all.

There were more than one million saint corpses on the battlefield, which was an amazing treasury. Any of the items would be invaluable in a field.

Midnight came, meaning the Saints Merits Battle ended.

A trace of three-colored godly light flew from the dark universe, falling on the four world fragments like a three-colored godly cloud, permeating the sky and land.

All the saints in Zuling Field were covered by godly light.

They felt that they'd lost gravity, and after spinning and touching the ground again, they'd arrived in Merit Star beside Heaven River.

Although Merit Star was named a 'star,' it wasn't oval. Instead, it looked like flights of stairs, and there were eighty-nine hundred and forty flights of stairs. Each stair was one mile tall, and one level was the 'Merits Record' of a field.

At the top of the stairs was a magnificent godly palace which was as large as the stair down there. It was almost eight hundred miles tall, and nobody under the godly palace could see the top of the godly palace.

All the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields who were still alive gathered in front of the godly palace.

All the saints were thrilled, and most of them groveled toward the godly palace.

Few saints were still standing, but they all looked reverent and held their breath.

"Merits Godly Palace."

Zhang Ruochen read the three words on the door.

Those were three godly words, and when Zhang Ruochen saw those three words, he felt a tumbling power pressing against him, trying to make him kneel.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen's face paled, and he felt that his saint soul was about to be crushed.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen immediately mobilized the power of Universe World to ward off the godly might coming from those three godly words, only after which could he balance himself and heal his broken saint soul.

“How dare you hide another form of power in your body! You've broken the rules of the Merits Battle. For the sake of fairness, I'll execute you now.”

An overbearing godly voice came out of Merits Godly Palace.

Each word he said hit Zhang Ruochen's body hard. He bounced up and bled like hell. His chest caved and his bones were cracking.

Many saints rejoiced in seeing that, especially the saints from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field. They'd been expecting someone to teach Zhang Ruochen a lesson for a long time.

“A God is going to execute Zhang Ruochen now!”

Fang Yi couldn't be happier as he knew that he could never rival Zhang Ruochen. It was best that a God interfered.

Whoosh!

A luminous moon ascended from the other side of Heaven River, and it stepped over the river, arriving right above Merit Star.

The moon was shining, hitting Merits Godly Palace directly.

“What're you doing, Moon Goddess? Are you trying to destroy Merits Godly Palace?” A furious godly voice came out of the godly palace.

“Merits Godly Palace is going to kill the peerless talent from Guanghai Field unfairly. Of course, I'll destroy it.”

The Moon Goddess stood at the center of the moon. She looked sacred, regal, elegant but aloof. She had the most

stunning eyes in the world, yet she looked extremely cold as if they could pierce through the heaven and earth.

The Moon Goddess was holding Zhang Ruochen, and godly power gushed out of her hands, healing him.

Chapter 1529 - Kunlun's Field At The Bottom

Chapter 1529: Kunlun's Field At The Bottom

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The two gods were at a stalemate. Divine might filled the starry sky and terrified the Saints under the Merits Godly Palace. They all flattened themselves on the ground, feeling extreme reverence inside. Their bodies shook.

Attacked by a god, Zhang Ruochen was badly hurt. His saint soul, physical body, and saintly source were all tattered.

To block the divine sound, even the Divine Sky-connecting Tree inside the Universe World was badly hurt. The leaves all turned to dust and the ground around the tree died, turning into a limitless desert.

Thankfully, the Moon Goddess had come in time. Otherwise, Zhang Ruochen would've died undoubtedly. Even the Universe World and Divine Sky-connecting Tree would've cracked apart too.

That was a god's power. Even some mere words would destroy a world.

As moonlight entered him, Zhang Ruochen's physical body, saint soul, and saintly source healed quickly. He woke up a while later. The first thing that entered his eyes was a divine face. The skin and features were flawless as if carved from divine crystal.

Any creature would be shocked by such a beautiful and spiritual woman.

Zhang Ruochen seemed to be in a dream. He couldn't help but say, "So beautiful."

The Moon Goddess stared at the Merits Godly Palace. Her lashes were long and curled. Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was awake, she pushed him down softly.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen landed on the ground.

He surveyed his surroundings and his memories flooded out. "So, I was almost killed by a god in the Merits Godly Palace just now. Why? I saved the Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields and defeated the Luosha Race. Aren't I hero of the Heaven World?"

Zhang Ruochen's performance on the merits battleground had been excellent and he had great accomplishments. He should be trained with emphasis and great rewards. But when he returned to the Heaven World, they tried to kill him instead.

This difference between expectation and reality depressed Zhang Ruochen.

He also realized the cruel reality. He wasn't strong enough yet and had to continue working hard. Otherwise, he would be completely defenseless against a god.

The Moon Goddess didn't actually fight with the Flame God in the Merits Godly Palace. Other gods had gotten involved and stopped them.

Gods had extraordinary tactics. Even if this happened before the various Saints, the Saints couldn't hear or see anything.

About two hours passed before there was a result.

The Moon Goddess' voice traveled into Zhang Ruochen's ears. "The god who wants to kill you is called the Flame God."

"Why does he want to kill me?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "Just because I used the power of the Universe World on the battleground? But Fang Yi from Hell Blade Field used the White Micro Star too."

"This is very complicated and I can't explain it to you now. But don't worry, he can't touch you, because you're mine."

The Moon Goddess's voice was lovely but also gave him unwavering determination.

1

Zhang Ruochen smiled and raised his head. Looking at the moon in the sky, he thought, The Moon Goddess seems like pretty reliable support. It's worth it to risk my life and get first place in the Saints Merits Battle. More importantly, this support is so beautiful. I'm sure many cultivators are jealous of me!

Soon, Zhang Ruochen wiped his smile away and his eyes darkened. I'm still young, so people will be jealous to get the Moon Goddess's protection. But as I cultivate longer and become older, people will probably mock me if I still need her protection.

I must reach the Saint King Realm as soon as possible, or even the Supreme Saint Realm. I must make a name for myself, so I can protect myself even without the Moon Goddess.

...

The Heaven World wouldn't allow two gods to fight. Someone stepped out to stop the Moon Goddess and Flame God. They also reached a compromise.

The Flame God would stop bothering Zhang Ruochen. The Moon Goddess didn't attack the Merits Godly Palace either.

Whoosh!

Beams of divine light appeared outside the palace. A moment later, the Saint Kings and Supreme Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields appeared in the vast square. Powerful saintly power flowed across them.

The four battles—the Saint, Saint King, Supreme Saint, and Godly Merits Battle—had all ended.

The gods of the Shatuo Seven Fields stood in the sky above the palace. But because they were so strong, the Saints below couldn't see them clearly at all.

Zhang Ruochen looked up at the moon, demonic cloud, Buddhist lotus, starry mist... He couldn't sense Chi Yao's aura

and was confused.

Did Chi Yao die in the merits battleground? he thought.

Since it was a battle, there would definitely be casualties.

A god had a strong vitality, so they would rarely die unless there was a large scale battle, but it wasn't definite.

After all, a god wasn't immortal either.

Further, Chi Yao was a new god. She couldn't compare to the gods who'd cultivated for tens of thousands of years. It was entirely possible for her to die on the battleground.

A young figure walked out of the palace.

It looked like a man in his twenties. He wore tri colored armor and had long silver hair, with a red three-feathered crown on his head. He was handsome and had an otherworldly aura. He was like an angel.

Behind him stood two women in white. One had a cold aura; the other had an elegant aura. They were all first step Saint Kings.

No wonder they're able to cultivate in the Merits Godly Palace, Zhang Ruochen thought. Any random two girls are Saint Kings. Plus, their auras are very strong. Even first step Saint Kings like Sword Saint Jiuyou and Chu Siyuan might not be able to defeat them.

Of course, Sword Saint Jiuyou and Chu Siyuan had just entered the first step Saint King Realm. They had room for improvement.

Two such powerful women stood behind the silver-haired man like servants. It was obvious that the silver-haired man had a high status in the Merits Godly Palace.

"Is he...Shang Ziyuan?"

"Shang Ziyuan is the Flame God's top disciple. He's known as the top human pride in 10,000 years of the Merits Godly Palace and is also the leader of the palace's heirs."

"It's rumored that Shang Ziyuan's beauty is unparalleled and that he has extraordinary charisma. No woman who's seen him

can forget him.”

“This man must be Shang Ziyan.”

...

The Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields all hated the Merits Godly Palace, thinking that it didn't care about their lives at all. But after seeing Shang Ziyan, the Saintesses all held their breath involuntarily. They were attracted by Shang Ziyan's aura and couldn't look away.

It wasn't that they were so obsessed, but Shang Ziyan's aura was too unique. It was naturally attractive to women. All of his movements showed his charisma.

Shang Ziyan walked out of the palace with a smile. He leaned forward slightly and composed himself. Then he bowed to the gods in the sky to show respect.

After that, he stood up straight again and said to the Saints below, “The merits battle has ended. The merits collected from the four battlegrounds have also been recorded in the four Merits Record Walls. I humbly receive the gods' permission to represent the Merits Godly Palace and calculate the total of the Shatuo Seven Fields' merits. I will choose the next battleground from the total number of merits.”

Shang Ziyan didn't act submissively. He was composed, even with gods standing in the sky. He didn't show any panic.

At that moment, the Saints and Saint Kings of Kunlun's Field, Hell Blade Field, and Tianmu Field all grew nervous. These three worlds may be at the bottom and become the battleground where the Heaven and Hell World fought.

Shang Ziyan waved his sleeves. Then there was a ringing in the vast square. Four Merits Record Walls rose up. They noted the merits that the Shatuo Seven Fields collected in the four battlegrounds.

The first one represented the gods' merits battle. It was blank.

This meant that none of the gods of the Shatuo Seven Fields could collect any merits.

The second wall represented the Supreme Saint Merits Battle.

Great Devil Ten Square Field was in first place. Guanghai Field was in last place. Of course, even the last place had collected 17 billion merits.

The Supreme Saints of Guanghai Field had only killed six Supreme Saints of the Hell World.

Clearly, killing a Supreme Saint of the Hell World was worth more merits than killing 10,000 Saints.

The third wall represented the Saint King Merits Battle.

Great Devil Ten Square Field was first place. Guanghai Field was last place.

The fourth wall represented the Saints Merits Battle. Guanghai Field was in first place.

Shang Ziyan raised his arms slowly. Beams of saintly power flew out of his palm and entered the four walls like rivers.

“Combine!” Shang Ziyan commanded.

The four walls combined into one. The number of merits quickly added upon each other.

A moment later, the final count of the four merits battles was calculated:

First place, Great Devil Ten Square Field.

Second place, Eight Ministry Field.

Third place, Purple Mansion Field.

Fourth place, Tianmu Field.

Fifth place, Hell Blade Field.

Sixth place, Kunlun’s Field.

Seventh place, Guanghai Field.

Even though Guanghai Field was in last place, the cultivators still smiled. They didn’t feel nervous or worried at all.

Shang Ziyan collected his saintly power and smiled again.

“According to the rules, Great Devil Ten Square Field is in first place in the Supreme Saint and Saint King Merits Battle.

Guanghan Field is first in the Saints Merits Battle. Thus, the two worlds won't be in the ranking."

Shang Ziyang reached out and moved a finger in the air.

Great Devil Ten Square Field at the top and Guanghan Field on the bottom disappeared from the wall.

Only five worlds remained. Kunlun's Field was in last place.

Seeing the ranking, the cultivators of Kunlun's Field felt like they were struck by lightning. They couldn't accept this, because it was clear to them that if Kunlun's Field became the battleground, it would mean death and destruction.

The billions of civilians and beings would fall victim to war.

A Saint laughed with tears in his eyes and screamed, "We fought for so long and so many of my good friends died in the battle, just to get this kind of result. Why? Why did we come to the Heaven World? Why?"

Wan Zhaoyi, Qing Xiao, Sword Saint Jiuyou, Chu Siyuan, the Saint Lady, and countless important figures of Kunlun's Field all had dark expressions now. They felt horrible and were filled with regret. If they'd worked a little harder, took some more risks, they might have been able to change this.

But it was too late now.

Many people from Kunlun's Field knew that even if they didn't come to the Heaven World, their defenses would still be destroyed by the Hell World in some years and end in destruction.

Coming to the Heaven World, they at least had a chance of survival.

Of course, it seemed that they didn't actually get that chance.

The cultivators of Hell Blade Field and Tianmu Field let out relieved sighs and all smiled.

"Now," Shang Ziyang said. "Let me announce the final ranking of the merits battle and the next battleground—"

"Wait."

An overpowering voice traveled from the depths of the universe, cutting Shang Ziyang off.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed. Hearing the voice, he uttered, "Chi Yao..."

Chapter 1530 - The Empress Killed A God

Chapter 1530: The Empress Killed A God

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The seven-colored godly light looked like a bridge connecting the sky and the ground, stretching from the dark universe.

Even the stars paled compared to that seven-colored bridge.

“A God is walking to Merit Star.”

“Who is that?”

...

All the saints were bustling under Merits Godly Palace.

“It’s her highness!”

“Her highness is back!”

All the saints from Kunlun’s Field were exhilarated. They kneeled on the ground toward the seven-colored bridge. “Your highness.”

The monks from Hell Blade Field got anxious, as they feared something might go wrong.

If the merits of Kunlun’s Field changed, Hell Blade Field would be ranked last, which was the last thing they wanted to see.

“The God from Kunlun’s Field just became a God. She’s lucky enough to survive the merits battle. She wouldn’t be able to change anything.” They comforted themselves like that.

But then, all the monks were shocked by what they saw.

Empress Chi Yao was walking on the seven-colored bridge, engulfed in seven-colored godly light. There was godly blood on her golden armor. She was holding a sword in one hand and a metal chain.

That metal chain was thicker than a bucket, stretching to the depths of the universe.

Whoosh!

A giant shadow was dragged from the universe by Empress Chi Yao. It looked like a dark planet, yet it still released dimming red light.

Under the light of Heaven World, all the saints on Merit Star could see clearly what it was... It was a corpse.

It was a gigantic corpse.

The head of the corpse was tens of thousands of miles long. Empress Chi Yao walked forward while dragging that corpse, shaking the stars and planets around her.

Those planets were very close to Heaven World, and many monks were refining on them.

They felt the earth shaking and godly might coming from the sky. They looked up and saw a corpse being dragged from one side to the other.

“God... It’s a God...”

All the monks on the planet groveled.

Even the Gods from the Shatuo Seven Fields found it unbelievable.

“She’s already strong enough to kill a God,” the Moon Goddess said.

Boom!

The supreme saints under Merits Godly Palace could see that Empress Chi Yao was dragging the corpse of a God, which astounded them.

It was Jiao God from the Shura Race.

Many supreme saints had sensed the force of Jiao God before, or they'd seen Jiao God from afar. It was an evil God who had killed many supreme saints from Heaven World.

Yet a God who'd roamed the universe for tens of thousands of years was killed by Empress Chi Yao.

How thrilling!

The news spread, and soon, all the monks from Heaven World knew that Chi Yao had killed a God, and they all rushed toward Merit Star.

There were saints around Heaven River. They looked to the distance at the corpse of the God and Empress Chi Yao walking on the seven-colored bridge. They were all in awe.

“The God from the Heaven World has killed a God from the Hell World.”

“Is that Empress Chi Yao!? She's indeed a born leader. I couldn't help falling for her by just one look.”

“Empress Chi Yao is so beautiful. That temperament and face can trump even the nine angels from the ‘Nine Angels Beauty Scroll.’ Even I want to join Kunlun's Field and ask her to teach me. Probably every man in the world wants a teacher like that.” A young supreme saint looked awed as he was mesmerized by the empress.

“The nine angels can probably compare with Empress Chi Yao when it comes to looks and temperament, but none of them are Gods, so they're not even in the Empress's league.”

“Perhaps only the Moon Goddess can rival Empress Chi Yao.”

...

Although the Heaven World had been fighting the Hell World for ten thousand years, the recent battles were nothing compared to the large-scale wars in the past.

They were in a state of relative peace.

Which was why it was very rare that a God got killed.

Orion God died because he was trying to protect Zuling Field. As for other Gods, most of them wouldn't choose to live and

die with their fields. To be exact, the Heaven World wouldn't allow them to do so.

After all, each God was a pillar of the Heaven World.

It'd been a long time since a God from the Heaven World killed a God from the Hell World and dragged it all the way back to the Heaven World, which made it a sleeper hit.

“Empress Chi Yao must've been severely injured and fragile, otherwise, we shouldn't have been able to see her real body.”

“Do you really think it's that easy to kill a God?”

“Probably because her highness's godly body was crushed during the fight, and the body we're able to see now was integrated by the broken parts.”

“I can't believe what Empress Chi Yao went through to kill a God.”

“She didn't have a choice. Kunlun's Field has just entered the Heaven World. If she didn't try her best, Kunlun's Field would be annihilated. She supports the entire world by herself. If she falls, that world will follow.”

All the saints looked at Empress Chi Yao with absolute respect.

1

As for the saints from Kunlun's Field, they could all imagine how difficult it was for the empress to kill a God. They were all so moved that they were groveling toward the empress, including supreme saints.

Empress Chi Yao couldn't look calmer. She said after landing on Merit Star, “The Godly Merits Battle started a bit later than the other three merits battles, so I made it back a bit late. Is it still within the three-month range?”

Shang Ziyang didn't have any rights to speak in front of Empress Chi Yao, so he had to turn around to ask the Gods in the godly palace.

After a moment of silence...

A godly voice came out of Merits Godly Palace. “The empress made an unrivaled contribution to the Heaven World. Kunlun’s Field is the biggest winner of this merit battle.”

All the saints from Kunlun’s Field were exhilarated.

The merits of Kunlun’s Field surged. It went past one trillion immediately, and it reached first place, surpassing Eight Ministry Field.

Shang Ziyang gazed at Empress Chi Yao as he was also amazed, and after a while he bowed at her with veneration.

“Hell Blade Field is in last place, and it’ll become the battlefield for the Heaven World against the Hell World. The monks from Hell Blade Field should prepare for it, and I hope that we can succeed this time,” Shang Ziyang announced.

All the monks from Hell Blade Field were petrified.

“Why Hell Blade Field? Our field isn’t the weakest among the Shatuo Seven Fields. It’s Kunlun’s Field. Guanghan Field is also weaker than Hell Blade Field.”

A saint king from Hell Blade Field lost his mind. He yelled and dashed toward Merits Godly Palace.

Shang Ziyang raised his arm, and a trace of fire rules gushed out of his palm, forming a giant fiery hand and slapping toward that saint king.

Bang!

He blew out that saint king, turning him into a cluster of bloody mist.

Just because the Moon Goddess could get away with confronting Merits Godly Palace didn’t mean other monks were allowed to do the same. Merits Godly Palace was a prestigious organization in the Heaven World. Confronting Merits Godly Palace meant death only.

“How powerful. He killed a third-step saint king that easily. He doesn’t seem to be very experienced, yet his power is unfathomable.” Zhang Ruochen observed Shang Ziyang.

According to the Moon Goddess, there were deeper reasons why Flame God wanted to kill him.

Even though he failed this time, there would be another attempt coming.

Flame God couldn't kill him directly in the Heaven World, yet Shang Ziyang was one of the best disciples of Flame God, and he was also a leader of the new generation. He was definitely one of Zhang Ruochen's future competitors.

Shang Ziyang noticed that Zhang Ruochen was observing him, so he turned around, shot him a glance and smiled at him politely.

So did Zhang Ruochen.

Although the monks from Hell Blade Field felt that it was unfair, none of them dared say a word or confront Merits Godly Palace. They had to leave unwillingly.

Sometimes, even Gods had to acquiesce to a certain situation.

The merits battle had finally ended, and the monks from the Shatuo Seven Fields, led by their Gods, boarded the heavenly boats and sailed toward the Heaven World.

Empress Chi Yao was standing on one of the heavenly boats.

“Kunlun's Field is ranked twenty-seven and forty-fourth on the ‘Ten Thousand Worlds Merits Rank’.”

The Moon Goddess showed up behind Zhang Ruochen. She looked like she was above secular desires, and no man standing beside her could affect her temperament, including Zhang Ruochen.

“Just because Chi Yao killed a God, Kunlun's Field is ranked this much higher?” Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised.

There were more than eight thousand fields in the Heaven World, and Kunlun's Field had been ranked last when the merits battles started.

Even if killing a God would reward a field a gigantic number of merits, there were countless monks from other fields

fighting all the time, and their merits were also increasing, which should also amount to an astronomical figure.

The Moon Goddess said, “Every ten thousand years, the rank of the ‘Ten Thousand Worlds Merits Rank’ is reset. Thirty-seven hundred years ago, the rank was reset, which meant the merits started to be counted thirty-seven hundred years ago. The merits from killing a God rival the merits accumulated by most of the fields for thousands of years.

“Perhaps Kunlun’s Field doesn’t have to participate in any merits battles anymore, and besides, the monks from Kunlun’s Field don’t have to stay in Shatuo Heaven Domain, which is the poorest domain in Heaven World. They can go to domains where there is thicker and better saint Qi.

“Also, the body of a God is an immense treasury. Empress Chi Yao killed Jiao God, which means she can get huge benefits from it. This even goes for the monks from Kunlun’s Field, which will boost the strength of a large field.

“The body of Jiao God was much larger than a planet. Lots of godly blood and godly bones can be extracted from it... Together with Tianlun Mark, Kunlun’s Field might prosper in the near future.”

There were also some corpses of gods in Kunlun’s Field. However, they’d been dead for more than one hundred thousand years, which meant they had lost lots of godly power. One hundred drops of their godly blood could barely rival one drop of godly blood of Jiao God.

Also, godly blood was only the most basic treasure.

Jiao God was just killed, which meant his Godly Star Soul was still intact and that his godly rules were still flowing. His corpse contained many advantages other godly corpses didn’t have.

For example, its corpse was the best place for refining. Saints could establish mansions inside the godly corpse where it would be much more efficient for them to comprehend the saintly way.

Chapter 1531 - Behind The Scenes

Chapter 1531: Behind The Scenes

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Heaven World had four continents: East Divine Continent, South Support Continent, West Oxen Continent, and North Reed Continent.

The four continents were all extremely vast, and filled with Spiritual Qi and resources.

Cultivators from the western universe all cultivated in the West Oxen Continent after entering the Heaven World. It was also divided into more domains according to different geographical locations.

The Shatuo Heaven Domain was a barren domain at the edge of the West Oxen Continent.

When a god was produced in the worlds of the western universe, they almost all stayed in Shatuo after entering the Heaven World. They could only leave after improving the ranking in the Ten Thousand Worlds Merit Rank, and then enter a richer domain.

Now, Kunlun's Field was number 2,744 on the ranking. It was 549th in the western universe, so it didn't have to stay in the Shatuo Heaven Domain anymore. It could have a better cultivation environment.

But Guanghai Field had gone from fourth to last on the rank to third to last.

This meant that, even with Zhang Ruochen's full efforts, he'd only temporarily helped the Moon Goddess save Guanghan Field. He gained the field some time to breathe.

When Hell Blade Field or another battleground was destroyed, the merits battle would start again.

Whether Guanghan Field could win or not was still unknown.

The Moon Goddess clearly knew this too. "One hundred thousand years ago, Guanghan Field was in the top 100 of the western universe. It was a powerful and renowned world. Unfortunately, after a change, it kept failing, bullied by the Heaven World, taken advantage of, swallowed, enslaved... This time, if you and I hadn't hurried back, Guanghan Field would've been at the bottom and fallen towards complete destruction."

"A change occurred to Guanghan Field 100,000 years ago too?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"In a way, the change was heavily related to Kunlun's Field. Your cultivation is still too low now, so there's no point in letting you know. When you reach a certain level, I will tell you."

Zhang Ruochen grew thoughtful. "Could it be related to that Flame God from the Merits Godly Palace?"

Hearing the words "Flame God," the Moon Goddess's starry eyes grew much colder.

She didn't say anything, but Zhang Ruochen could tell that the changes of Kunlun's Field and Guanghan Field must be related to him.

"Zhang Ruochen, you must remember something," the Moon Goddess reminded him. "In the Heaven World, gods cannot attack a Saint, but if a Saint blasphemes, the god can still kill him."

"I understand." Zhang Ruochen nodded and then asked, "Earlier, you said that Guanghan Field was bullied by the Heaven World, taken advantage of, swallowed, and enslaved. What does that mean? How could this be?"

The Moon Goddess's eyes grew even colder. "During the change 100,000 years ago, the gods of Guanghan Field practically all died. Only the tree god was still alive, but he had to support Guanghan Field, so his true body couldn't come to the Heaven World.

"A world with top treasures of the heaven World but without a god to protect it... Can you imagine the result?"

"Ninety thousand years ago, Guanghan Field was in the Mythical Fairy Heaven Domain in the center of the West Oxen Continent. It was pressured by Aofei Red Field and had to pay tribute to it every year. Guanghan Field paid large numbers of saintly sources, medicines, weapons, and even a portion of the merits.

"Eighty thousand years ago, Guanghan Field's merits rank slipped down and had to leave the Mythical Fairy Heaven Domain. We came to the Shell Heaven Domain. There, we were insulted and bullied by Ruiya Field."

...

"In 100,000 years, Guanghan Field virtually became emptied. Our wealth was practically all robbed and we became the weakest field of the western universe." The Moon Goddess was very emotional. Extreme fury burned inside her.

Guanghan Field had once been a top world with a rich heritage. It ruled over the West Oxen Continent. But now, it had fallen to the point of giving tribute to other worlds every year in order to survive. How could she bear it as the god of this world?

Zhang Ruochen let out a long sigh, feeling the cruelty of the Heaven World.

A person who wasn't strong enough would be bullied.

A world that wasn't strong enough would be taken advantage of and enslaved.

"Does Guanghan Field still have to give tribute to the strong worlds of the Shatuo Heaven Domain?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Moon Goddess shook her head. “The other worlds of the Shatuo Heaven Domain are all weak. Of course, there are big differences between each of us, but weak worlds aren’t completely unable to fight back. Plus, with the rise of Emperor Jimie and the Wu Ancestor, Guanghan Field isn’t afraid of challenges. So, no world in the Shatuo Heaven Domain can force us to give tribute.”

The most important figures for a world to become powerful were the Supreme Saints, not the gods.

A god didn’t have territory and was unable to fight. Only Supreme Saints could fight for better land and engage in battle.

Guanghan Field had people like the Wu Ancestor, Emperor Jimie, and Supreme Saint Jiuling, so they could stand their ground in the Shatuo Heaven Domain and not fear pressure from other worlds. Even if the other worlds sent Supreme Saints to steal a high-quality domain, the three figures could steal it back.

The Moon Goddess changed the topic. “But there’s a force that is trying to destroy Guanghan Field completely. Any cultivators who leave the Shatuo Heaven Domain will get repressed or even killed.”

“What kind of force is that arrogant?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Moon Goddess shot him a look. “That force once caused Kunlun’s Field to be beyond redemption. One hundred thousand years ago, the world that followed Kunlun’s Field was also affected. That cleansing lasted for 100,000 years and still hasn’t ended. As Chi Yao brings Kunlun’s Field back into the Heaven World, that force will definitely reappear. You can say that Chi Yao and Kunlun’s Field will face a much bigger challenge than us. If you want to survive and take revenge, you must face the difficulties and open a bloody path in the black shadows and difficulties. Then, you may see the light of dawn.

“This path is extremely difficult. You may be mercilessly repressed even if you risk everything and still die.”

Zhang Ruochen felt very depressed, but he also understood something. One hundred years ago, Guanghan Field had been one of the worlds that followed Kunlun's Field.

Because it followed Kunlun's Field, it was affected and became bullied for 100,000 years.

"What should we do now?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "We can't continue being so passive."

"We?" the Moon Goddess asked.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "Of course. My identity as the Time and Space Descendant isn't a secret anymore. That Flame God won't let me go either. If I want to survive in the Heaven World, I'll naturally follow you. Who would dare to kill me publicly if I have a god's protection?"

The Moon Goddess thought for a while. "With the talent you displayed, many worlds will try to get close to you. Those worlds are all stronger than Guanghan Field and can give you more resources."

"But those worlds may be the ones who caused Kunlun's Field to wallow for 100,000 years. Wouldn't it be falling into their trap by joining them?"

Even if Zhang Ruochen joined Guanghan Field now, he still had signs of Kunlun's Field on him. The forces behind the scenes wouldn't allow him to mature.

"Okay. Since you're willing to follow me, I will help you with all my might." Then the Moon Goddess said, "The first step is that I must recover my divine power, so I need to borrow something from you."

"What?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"The moon leaf on the Seven Star Sacred Tuber."

The Seven Star Sacred Tuber had seven leaves. Now, only the moon and sun leaves were still on it.

"Before, I didn't have enough divine power within me," the Moon Goddess said. "I wasn't able to absorb the moon leaf. Now, I've recovered 20% of my power. If I refine the leaf, I'll

be able to reach 50%. Don't worry, I won't take it for free. I'll return you a complete divine medicine in the future."

The stronger the Moon Goddess was, the safer Zhang Ruochen was in the Heaven World.

Thus, he didn't hesitate. He took the moon leaf from the Universe World and handed it over.

The Moon Goddess extended a pale hand and held the leaf in her hands. A rare smile appeared in her eyes. "I'm a god, but I owe a Saint. People won't even believe this if news spreads."

"That's because you didn't rob me of it," Zhang Ruochen said. "Otherwise, I wouldn't be able to keep it at all."

"The most valuable thing is yourself, not your treasures. If I lose you to get your treasures, then that would be the greatest loss to me."

After this Saints Merits Battle, Zhang Ruochen now had extraordinary value. The Moon Goddess didn't hide how highly she thought of him either.

She put the moon leaf away. "I also need to borrow one million saintly sources."

This time, Zhang Ruochen frowned. He didn't agree immediately.

He'd indeed received more than one million saintly sources on the merits battleground, but he'd prepared to use that to train the Universe World cultivators. He wanted to rebuild the Sacred Central Empire and counter Chi Yao.

Now, Zhang Ruochen was a member of Guanghan Field. If the Moon Goddess insisted on taking the saintly sources away, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to fight back. No one could help him either.

But just as the Moon Goddess said, she wouldn't do something so unethical.

Because Zhang Ruochen himself was far more valuable than any treasure he had.

“Don’t worry,” the Moon Goddess said. “I’m only borrowing them. I’ll pay you back in the future. I’m not borrowing them for free either.”

“You want to use the saintly sources to develop a group of Saints in the Universe World, right? But the Universe World’s foundation is too weak now. You barely have any Half-Saints. It’s not useful even if you have a large number of saintly sources.”

“The environment of the Heaven World is definitely better than the Universe World. If you’re willing, you can have the Half-Saints enter Guanghan Field and cultivate in the Heaven World temporarily. If you want to take them away in the future, I won’t stop you either. How about it?”

“Use Guanghan Field’s resources to cultivate the Universe World’s cultivators?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Correct,” the Moon Goddess said.

“Since you’re so genuine, I will lend you the one million saintly sources. But do not forget that you promised to help me do something before joining the merits battle.”

“Tell me,” the Moon Goddess said. “What do you need help with? I will do it if it’s not too much.”

“Take Lingxi as a disciple,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Moon Goddess was surprised. She didn’t think that Zhang Ruochen’s request would be so simple.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen had wanted the Moon Goddess to do other things, but he’d overruled them all in the end.

He and the Moon Goddess were tied to the same war chariot now and had the same gains and losses. For the things that the Moon Goddess could do, she’d already arranged for him without him asking. And even if he asked for things that she couldn’t do, it would still be useless.

So he decided to pass this chance to Mu Lingxi.

“Okay, I accept.”

The Moon Goddess told him some other things and then the two left the Merit Star. They went toward the Heaven World.

Chapter 1532 - Man of Fame

Chapter 1532: Man of Fame

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Merits Godly Palace.

Shang Ziyan stood below the two godly pillars on a circular stone table, looking to the space between the two godly pillars. He bowed and asked, “What have you summoned me here for, master?”

The two godly pillars were as large as mountains, stretching into the godly clouds.

There were three-colored clouds between the two pillars, which godly Qi flowed inside. Rules engravings permeated, and a dimming godly voice came out. “What do you think of Zhang Ruochen?”

Shang Ziyan said, “Unrivalled among his peers.”

“Can you defeat him?”

Shang Ziyan smiled. “If we were at the same level, I couldn’t guarantee that, but he’s just an absolute saint. He’s nothing compared to me yet.”

Flame God said again, “What would you do if you were asked to kill him.”

A God wanted to kill a saint?

Other saints would be shocked hearing that.

However, Shang Ziyan was very shrewd and had thought about it before. He said, “There are excellent tactics, a mediocre plan, and bad tactics to kill him.”

“Tell me,” Flame God said.

Shang Ziyang said, "I don't need to do it myself. If we put out a great price, there'll be many great beings trying to kill him."

Flame God said, "You said it yourself that Zhang Ruochen is an unrivaled talent among his peers. Moon Goddess and the supreme saints from Guanghan Field will definitely do their best to protect him. Even the best assassin group from Heaven World will find it difficult to even get close to him."

Shang Ziyang said, "Which is why that's only a bad tactic. I still have a mediocre tactic, which is to kill him with someone else's hands."

"With someone else's hands?"

Flame God was a bit surprised.

Shang Ziyang smiled and said, "No matter how extraordinary Zhang Ruochen is, he's still just an outsider. He did save Guanghan Field, but by doing so, he stole the thunder of the heir of Guanghan Field and seized the glory that was supposed to be his. If another talent who's better than me comes into being in Merits Godly Palace, there's no way I can be at peace with him. Instead, I'll try everything to eradicate him."

Flame God said, "What if the heir from Guanghan Field doesn't mind it?"

"Anyone who's ambitious will mind it. Wu Hao couldn't stand to be mediocre. Instead, he wants to help Guanghan Field thrive again. Unfortunately, his talent and power aren't good enough to support his dream. Guanghan Field has fallen for so long that he won't be able to reinvigorate it. I might... be able to give him some hope," Shang Ziyang said.

Flame God said, "If Wu Hao is willing to help you, it'll indeed be much easier for you to kill Zhang Ruochen. What's your excellent tactic?"

Shang Ziyang said, "I presume that you want to kill Zhang Ruochen because he's the descendant of time and space, and once he grows up, he'll be a huge threat."

Flame God stayed silent for a while before saying, "You're right. A hundred thousand years ago, there was an almighty being in Kunlun's Field called Saint Monk Xumi, and that

Zhang Ruochen must have a lot to do with that almighty being. Chances are, he might become the second Saint Monk Xumi.”

Shang Ziyan said, “Then why do we have to kill him? Wouldn’t it be better if Zhang Ruochen could be under your control?”

“I’ve tried it before, but Zhang Ruochen’s willpower is too sturdy to bend,” Flame God said.

Shang Ziyan said, “How about we do a walk-in on his body and saint soul?”

“Walk-in... Haha, how come I haven’t thought of that before. Ziyan, you’re indeed one of my proudest disciples. However, it isn’t easy to do a walk-in on Zhang Ruochen.” Flame God smiled.

Shang Ziyan said, “It isn’t easy indeed, which is why I’ve decided to go to Soul Field to select a strong soul spirit that can swallow Zhang Ruochen’s willpower.”

“How are you going to execute that plan?” Flame God asked.

Shang Ziyan said, “I’ll utilize all three of the tactics. The bad tactic and the mediocre tactic are just to distract Zhang Ruochen and the prominent beings from Guanghan Field. Swallowing Zhang Ruochen’s willpower is my ultimate goal.”

“Okay. You’re always meticulous, and I have faith in you. You’ll be in charge of this.” Flame God laughed.

...

Mu Lingxi stayed in Moon Goddess mountain and refined with the Moon Goddess.

After seeing Moon Goddess formally admitting Mu Lingxi as her disciple, Zhang Ruochen left by himself and went back to Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land in Red Dragon Sacred Domain.

Red Dragon Sacred Domain was the territory of Supreme Saint Manjian. As for Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land, it was one of the fourteen sacred lands in Red Dragon Sacred Domain.

Zhang Ruochen was the saint leader of Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

He saw lots of people gathering outside the sacred domain when he came back. There were human beings and all kinds of savage beasts.

Some of them were half saints, some were saints, and there were even some saint kings.

“What’s happening?” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

If it weren’t for Supreme Saint Manjian, Zhang Ruochen would’ve thought that Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land was attacked by enemies. However, those monks were all very well-behaved.

A beautiful saintess walked to the front and yelled, “I’m a disciple of Supreme Saint Yukong, Yue Zhao. I’m here to send you an invitation and gifts. We hope that Lord priest can head to Linjin Sacred Domain. My master has prepared a feast.”

All the monks around held their breath as they didn’t expect a supreme saint to send someone to invite Zhang Ruochen.

Which meant Zhang Ruochen was qualified to be a guest of a supreme saint.

An owl saint beast walked out of the sacred land. Its body was as large as an elephant. It stood atop and said, “I’ll take the gifts and the invitation and give them to Zhang Ruochen. It’ll be up to him to decide whether to go or not. After all, Emperor Jimie, Supreme Saint Nine Spirits, and Wu Zu also sent invitations.”

The owl saint beast then flapped its wings, and then, more than ten half saints moved all the gifts into the sacred land.

A level-nine half saint walked to the owl saint beast and said respectfully, “Lord Blackie, I want to join Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land and refine with Lord priest.”

He then added, “Lord priest is my idol. I’ll do everything to join Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.”

The owl saint beast said impatiently, “It’s not easy to join Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. Line up there first, and I’ll test

every one of you. Only those who pass the test can join.”

The level-nine half-saint looked exhilarated and walked to the line while whispering, “I must pass the test and join Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. That’ll be an honor for me. Yurou, wait for my news. I won’t let you down. I’ll become a man like Lord priest.”

1

Zhang Ruochen reined in his forces and stood afar.

He saw that some of the monks here were sending invitations and requests for joining his sacred land.

“Am I already that influential in Guanghan Field?” Zhang Ruochen stroked his nose and chuckled.

After one battle, he could already be a guest of supreme saints.

Was that what being in first place on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ meant?

To avoid any unnecessary trouble, Zhang Ruochen dodged the crowd and sneaked into Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

“Come meet me.”

The owl saint beast was thrilled to hear the message from Zhang Ruochen. “You’re finally back!”

The owl saint beast gave the disciples in Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land an order, and then, it flapped its wings and flew to the deeper area of the sacred land.

There was white mist permeating the sacred land.

Below a cliff was a saint spring nurturing the sacred land. On the sides of the saint spring were spiritual medicine and saint medicine with fragrances and of all colors.

Zhang Ruochen stood beside the saint spring with his hands behind his back. The space around him seemed to have been affected as it was somehow solidified.

Whoosh!

The owl saint beast dived and laughed. “You’re finally back, Zhang Ruochen! You have no idea how many monks came

here to send you gifts. Supreme Saint Nine Spirits and Emperor Jimie even implied in their invitations that they want their granddaughter or daughter to marry you.”

Suddenly...

Zhang Ruochen turned around and spread his arms. A golden dragon was formed by saint Qi between his hands.

Howl!

The golden dragon quickly spun in the sky, forming a golden circle.

“Out!”

Zhang Ruochen wielded the golden circle that had a diameter of five feet against that owl saint beast.

“What’re you doing? I’m Blackie! Blackie!”

The owl saint beast was horrified. It flapped its wings forward, and then, two tumbling tornados were formed, clashing with the golden circle.

Boom!

The golden circle crumbled, turning into traces of dragon Qi, withering away in the air.

Those two tornados didn’t disappear. Instead, they hit Zhang Ruochen’s body, knocking him to the sky, and the winds felt like blades slashing Zhang Ruochen’s body, making cracking sounds.

Zhang Ruochen had great enough defense power to ward off the tornados. He landed back on the ground and smiled. “Just as I expected, you’ve recovered a lot.”

Blackie retracted its wings and said, “Of course I have. I can easily fight a couple of saint kings myself.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t tell the real power of Blackie, so he didn’t know whether it was exaggerating or not.

Zhang Ruochen reined in his saint might and said, “Don’t you have incredible formation skills? Why didn’t you set up a defense formation around Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land?”

“Of course, I have. It’s just not activated, otherwise, do you really think you could sneak into the mountain that easily?”

Blackie rolled its eyes as it looked down upon Zhang Ruochen’s power, and it was also very confident in its attainment in formations.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Stop receiving gifts and people. Turn on the defense formation immediately and tell everyone that I won’t meet anyone anymore. Seal Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.”

“Seal the mountain? Why?” Blackie was confused.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I’m who everyone is talking about now. There must be lots of people who’re jealous of me. I’d better keep a low profile, and also... There’s something I can’t tell you yet. I reckon there’ll be many assassins coming at me. It’s best to seal the mountain.

“And besides, I need to spend some time organizing the collections I got from Merits Battlefield and improving my power.”

“Okay, I’ll go activate the defense formation now.”

Blackie knew Zhang Ruochen was always cautious. He must’ve heard of something or sensed dangers coming, which was why he told it to seal the mountain.

Chapter 1533 - Formation Saint Master

Chapter 1533: Formation Saint Master

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Kaboom!

A large amount of Holy Qi spewed out of the underground saintly meridian of Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. It shot through the air and connected with the sky. Everywhere that the Holy Qi passed by, the formation runes would be activated, shining with brilliant light.

A moment later, nine layers of white clouds shrouded the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. It was like a nine-story tower falling to the ground and looked very magnificent.

“Nine-Level Cloud Tower Formation.”

“The Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land actually has a formation saint master who laid down a grade eight formation. Who is this formation master? If he can give me pointers, I’ll definitely improve greatly in formations.”

...

The cultivators outside the sacred land were all discussing this, finding it incredible.

After all, only someone who could lay down a grade eight formation could be known as a “formation saint master.”

Each formation saint master had a respected status.

Not only would Saints and Saint Kings ask them for help. Sometimes, even top figures like Supreme Saints would ask

for help from formation saint masters.

The Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land was only one of the dozen territories in Red Dragon Sacred Domain. It wasn't that special, but it produced a Zhang Ruochen, so it was now a well-known land in the Shatuo Heavenly Domain. Many cultivators fought to join.

Now, it also had a formation saint master. It undoubtedly made the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land even more famous.

Zhang Ruochen stood under the cliff and looked up. "Grade eight formation... Blackie, your attainments in formations are beyond my expectations."

Princess Luosha's senior sister, Ji Hua, was also a formation saint master.

Ji Hua's Thousand-star Formation had been a grade eight formation. It was extremely strong and almost wiped out the Saint army of the Shatuo Seven Fields.

This was why a formation saint master's combat ability was terrifying.

Did Blackie have the same abilities as Ji Hua?

Blackie had a proud expression. "My Spiritual Power hasn't recovered fully. Otherwise, I'd be able to do a grade nine formation too."

Zhang Ruochen knew that he shouldn't praise it, because then it'll get too cocky. So he said, "There are differences in the mightiness of grade eight formations too, right?"

"Of course," Blackie said. "The more runes a formation has, and the more complex they are, the stronger the power. Even if they're both grade eight formations, the power can be worlds away from each other if created by formation saint masters with different Spiritual Power."

"What level is the Nine-Level Cloud Tower Formation among grade eight formations?" Zhang Ruochen wanted to be clearer.

"The Nine-Level Cloud Tower Formation is obviously one of the best defensive grade eight formations. Merely the runes needed to create this can cover thousands of books and fill an

entire library. A regular formation saint master can't create it without studying for decades and experimenting countless times."

Blackie was even prouder.

Zhang Ruochen had some understanding of formations. He knew that building a high-level formation was more difficult than constructing a city.

"But..."

Blackie hesitated but still said honestly, "But my Nine-Level Cloud Tower Formation still has many flaws."

"What do you mean?"

"Mainly, there are some abstruse formation runes that can only be carved with the help of special material."

"So you didn't carve those abstruse runes into the Nine-Level Cloud Tower Formation?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Couldn't help it. The material for the runes is too hard to find."

Blackie naturally wouldn't tell Zhang Ruochen that the more important reason was that its Spiritual Power wasn't strong enough to carve those runes.

After hesitating some more, Blackie coughed and said, "Actually, a grade eight formation can kill a Saint King is mostly because it needs a formation soul to command it. The Nine-Level Cloud Tower Formation that I created... I couldn't find a suitable formation soul...ha..."

Zhang Ruochen was speechless. He knew that he'd overestimated Blackie again. "The formation is lacking runes and doesn't have a formation soul. So, how much of the Nine-Level Cloud Tower Formation's power can it unleash?"

"About ten percent!"

Blackie's voice was low, clearly feeling guilty. Then it said, "The Nine-Level Cloud Tower Formation is the top defensive formation, after all. A regular Saint King can't break in even if

it's only ten percent of the power. You'll need at least a fifth step Saint King to break in."

"A fifth step Saint King... That's enough!"

Zhang Ruochen nodded softly. "A fifth step Saint King is already a strong figure among Saint Kings. If they attack with full power, the commotion would be great and Supreme Saint Manjian would be able to sense it immediately. With his cultivation, if he senses that someone broke into the Red Dragon Saint Domain, he could kill him even if he's thousands of miles away."

Zhang Ruochen didn't have to worry about the strongest enemies. The Moon Goddess and Supreme Saint Manjian would take care of them for him.

He only had to guard against enemies under the third step Saint King Realm. Their auras were weaker, so even if they attacked, Supreme Saints wouldn't be able to sense them.

After all, a Supreme Saint had to cultivate and had their own matters too. They couldn't pay attention to Zhang Ruochen at all times.

In addition, the Moon Goddess also wanted to push Zhang Ruochen to go, so she didn't have him stay in Moon Goddess Mountain. Zhang Ruochen was where he was now because of the lessons he'd learned from cruel hardships.

He turned his palm and took out the Mercury Gourd.

Pouring Holy Qi in, the gourd grew larger and larger. Finally, it actually became a gourd mountain, floating in the sky.

The lid opened and a saint spring flowed out.

Whoosh!

The sweet spring poured out like an unending white waterfall.

Soon, a lake formed at the bottom of the Mercury Gourd.

"This saint spring was brought back from Zuling Field. Help me turn it all into Ning True Saint Dew. Also, a group of Half-Saints from the Sacred Central Empire will come over from

Moon Goddess Mountain. At that time, you have to work hard to train them.”

After giving these two orders, Zhang Ruochen put the Mercury Gourd away. He transformed into a streak of light and rushed into a cultivation residence to meditate.

The Universe World inside of him was sealed again by the Moon Goddess when he returned to the Heaven World. However, he'd taken out the Half-Saints beforehand.

They were still very pliable.

In order to pay Zhang Ruochen back, the Moon Goddess had the Half-Saints stay in Moon Goddess Mountain. They were baptized by the Moon Goddess with the Half-Saints of Guanghan Field, testing their bodies and saint souls.

Before, Zhang Ruochen and the Moon Goddess had agreed on one month. After one month, the Half-Saints would come to Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

In the end, the cultivators of the old Sacred Central Empire and Universe World were Zhang Ruochen's heirs. He valued them the most.

After entering the cultivation residence, Zhang Ruochen immediately took out the Monument Shield and placed it on the stone table. He reached out to press onto the Time and Space Crystal.

Whoosh!

The space trembled.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen entered the Time and Space Crystal. He sat cross-legged in the center.

He took out a bottle of Ning True Saint Dew and swallowed it, refining it.

In Zuling Field, Zhang Ruochen didn't lack any cultivation resources and he had a large amount of Ning True Saint Dew. But he lacked time.

Now, he finally didn't lack time, so he would naturally try to reach the peak of the Absolute Realm as soon as possible.

Two months later.

Zhang Ruochen refined 50,000 drops of Ning True Saint Dew. He emptied all the dew that he'd stolen from other Saints and reached the peak of the Absolute Saint Realm instantly.

His abilities improved greatly from the beginning level to the peak. The Rules of Saintly Way in his Sea of Qi had all gone to the extreme.

He was feeling great. "After reaching the peak," he murmured to himself, "I can't continue condensing the 372 Rules of Saintly Way inside. I can only improve by comprehending new rules."

Each of the 372 rules were different. It included rules of sword, space, time, speed, palm... They represented that Zhang Ruochen had melded 372 Rules of Saintly Way into his saint soul.

These 372 rules were Zhang Ruochen's foundation for the Saintly Way, known as the "rule seeds."

He could only reach the half-step Saint King Realm by letting the rule seeds take root.

"I choose the time, space, and sword rules as the root. I'll focus on these three ways. The other 369 will be the branches and leaves." Zhang Ruochen made this decision.

Usually, a cultivator would only choose one Rule of Saintly Way as the root.

Zhang Ruochen chose three simultaneously. It was undeniably a big challenge.

He had no other option though. First, time and space were both part of the Ancient Ways. He had to focus on them.

However, time and space were too difficult. If Zhang Ruochen chose them as the root, he would have to take forever to reach the half-step Saint King Realm.

Thus, he had to choose the Sword Way as support to help him improve quickly.

“The rules of time and space are too difficult to comprehend. It takes a lot of time too. I’ll study the Sword Way first and try to reach the half-step or even first step Saint King Realm first.”

“In the Heaven World, I can only become one of the strong by becoming a Saint King.”

The Sword Way was one of the 72 Supreme Saintly Ways. It was intangible but still truly existed in the world.

It would be very slow for a cultivator to merely use his Spiritual Power to perceive it.

The fastest way to comprehend the Sword Way was definitely to refine and absorb rules saint weapons of a swordsman. Then, they could transform those rules into their own.

But rules saint weapons were very hard to find. If he wanted to find a swordsman’s rules saint weapon, it would only be harder.

Suddenly, his heart jumped. He thought of that rules emperor weapon from Zuling Field.

The Wujin Ancestor had left that rules emperor weapon behind. It represented the crystallization of the cultivation of his entire life. It was probably made up of billions of rules and was a definite treasure.

Zhang Ruochen, Le, Han Qiu and the others had gone through much difficulty to take this weapon from Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field.

Chapter 1534 - Refine Sword Eight

Chapter 1534: Refine Sword Eight

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Rules Emperor Weapon, come out.”

Time and Space Martial Way Deity Print flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s forehead, forming bizarre engravings while giving out gleaming light.

A cluster of blue Divine Fire Jingmie flew out.

At the center of the flame floated a golden palace, and there were thirty-six pillars around the palace. The palace looked delicate, containing terrific supreme saints’ forces.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen had refined the Rules Emperor Weapon using Divine Fire Jingmie so that the supreme saints’ forces were less fierce, otherwise, he wouldn’t have been able to handle it that easily.

“This is a Rules Emperor Weapon that’s craved for even by supreme saints! It’s made of hundreds of millions of saintly way rules.”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit excited. He held the golden palace in his hand and released his mind power to feel the palace.

He then smiled. “Wujin Ancestor has also comprehended sword way before, and comparatively, he didn’t attain much on it. There’re only one hundred and twenty thousand sword way rules in it.”

However, even if a supreme saint barely refined a saint way, it was still far superior to an absolute saint.

There was only one sword way rule in Zhang Ruochen's body, yet there were one hundred and twenty thousand sword way rules in Wujin Ancestor's Rules Emperor Weapon.

This was the gap between the power of an absolute saint and a supreme saint.

Wujin Ancestor majored in Blazing Fire Way, so there were more than ten billion of those rules in the golden palace, which were the major components of the golden palace.

"Supreme saints are like the sun, while I'm just a firefly compared to that." Zhang Ruochen sighed.

When he got back to Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land, he received invitations from Supreme Saint Nine Spirits and Emperor Jimie, which actually made him proud. After all, he was qualified to be a guest of a supreme saint.

Yet after inspecting the Rules Emperor Weapon of Wujin Ancestor, Zhang Ruochen had a deeper understanding of the power of supreme saints, which made him realize how weak he was.

"Those supreme saints invited me to their banquets because I helped Guanghan Field win the Saints Merits Battle, which saved Guanghan Field from becoming the next battlefield. They might also recognize my talents and potential.

"But there's no way they approbate my power.

"I'm far from rivaling a supreme saint yet. I need to keep practicing."

Zhang Ruochen had a better understanding of himself. He calmed himself down, released mind power and started to comprehend the first sword way rule on the Rules Emperor Weapon.

Even if he had the Rules Emperor Weapon, he needed to comprehend the saintly way rules first.

Only after fully comprehending the saintly way rules could he transform them into his own saintly way rules.

If we treated the sword way rules in the Rules Emperor Weapon as one hundred and twenty thousand characters,

Zhang Ruochen needed to choose a character to study and comprehend until he could write it in his own way and explain what it meant. Only after this would that character belong to Zhang Ruochen.

Every sword way rule was a character.

“As long as I can comprehend three sword way rules and transfer them into Heaven Pass River, then I’ll have four sword way rules in my body, making me a half-step saint king.”

It was way easier said than done.

Zhang Ruochen devoted all his time to refining.

Aside from the Rules Emperor Weapon, he also took out three scrolls to comprehend Sword Eight.

They were ‘Sword Saint Xuanji Sword Eight Notebook,’ ‘Sword Emperor Hongchen Sword Eight Notebook,’ and ‘Empress Chi Yao Sword Eight Notebook.’

They represented the understandings of Sword Eight of Sword Saint Xuanji, Sword Emperor Xue Hongchen, and Chi Yao. They documented their perceptions when they were refining Sword Eight, and Zhang Ruochen had copied them when he was in Yin and Yang Sect.

He studied Sword Saint Xuanji because he was his disciple, and he was Zhang Ruochen’s most influential teacher when he started sword way.

He studied Xue Hongchen because he was the most gifted sword warrior since the ancient times, and his attainment in sword way had peaked.

No other sword warriors were called ‘sword emperors.’

He studied Chi Yao because he wanted to defeat her.

Sword Eight was the eighth level of ‘Wordless Sword Manual.’ Different people had different understandings of them, and they would follow every different path of sword way in the end.

Sword Saint Xuanji was influenced by Taoism, so he thought Sword Eight represented ‘Qian, Kun, Xun, Zhen, Kan, Li, Gen, and Dui,’ which were the eight trigrams, representing eight different locations. The eight trigrams evolved from his sword techniques, and the eight trigrams formed sword intent. In the end, he mobilized the power of heaven and earth, forming Sword Way Xuangang, which could break the land a thousand miles away.”

As for Xue Hongchen, he decomposed Sword eight as eight moves: wind, rain, thunder, lightning, star, moon, cloud, and light, including them in ‘Flying Fairy Sword Technique.’

He used sword intent to perform his techniques, and he deduced sword intent using sword techniques.

As for Chi Yao, she thought of Sword Eight as six directions, east, south, west, north, up, down, with herself and the sword in her hand. They were the eight poles. When she performed it, it would be like an entire earth crushing the enemies, who couldn’t dodge it at all. If they couldn’t ward it off, they would be killed.

They comprehended their sword way from ‘Wordless Sword Manual’ and perceptions of their seniors, and they transformed them into their own Sword Eight after mixing them with their own understandings.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen was studying their perceptions, trying to create his own Sword Eight.

“Although they have different understandings of Sword Eight, they all divide Sword Eight into six levels. Only after completing all the six levels can someone form Sword Way Xuangang.”

Zhang Ruochen saw Sword Saint Jiuyou perform Sword Way Xuangang before, and the power was irresistible and invincible. He craved that power.

Even though Zhang Ruochen managed to defeat Sword Saint Jiuyou, he still wasn’t able to ward off his Sword Way Xuangang.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes, mobilized saint Qi, and formed a being in his lower abdomen, practicing sword techniques.

This time, Zhang Ruochen decided to start with the notebook of Sword Emperor Xue Hongchen to deduce the sword intent in Sword Eight.

...

Time flew, and Zhang Ruochen had refined in the inner space in Time and Space Crystal for two months.

“I did it! Haha!”

Zhang Ruochen guffawed while holding the Rules Emperor Weapon.

It took Zhang Ruochen two months to add another sword way rule to his lower abdomen.

This seemingly easy part was actually the most difficult, and once he succeeded, whatever followed would be much easier.

If he added two more sword way rules, then the seed of rules would be rooted in his lower abdomen, which would mean he had become a half-step saint king.

Zhang Ruochen was close to becoming a half-step saint king.

“It seems I’ve made some breakthrough on Sword Eight. Perhaps I’ll have some better understandings if I perform the sword techniques again?”

Zhang Ruochen walked out of Time and Space Crystal, drew the Abyss Ancient Sword, and dived down the cliff like a trace of light.

He came to the saint spring under the cliff where there were all sorts of bizarre-looking plants of all colors with a pleasant scent. The saint light coming out of the petals made this space look like a wonderland.

Whoosh!

Just as Zhang Ruochen raised his sword, he felt a wind being formed, making whining-like sounds.

“Wind.”

Sword Emperor Xue Hongchen understood the first technique of Sword Eight as ‘wind.’

The wind would carry the sword.

Zhang Ruochen took a step and wielded his sword.

He didn’t activate the inscriptions on the sword, yet a trace of sword light flew out, trailing a curve, and it didn’t vanish until a breath of time had passed.

“Rain.”

He then changed his sword technique, then the space was twisted. The mist formed thousands of drops of rain floating in the air, glowing.

The raindrops also flowed as Zhang Ruochen changed his sword technique.

“Thunder.”

...

Zhang Ruochen performed all the eight sword techniques, wind, rain, thunder, lightning, star, moon, cloud, and light.

The eight sword techniques he comprehended were different from those of Sword Emperor Xue Hongchen.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t land back on the ground after performing the complete sword techniques.

Whoosh!

The petals flew from the ground, forming a trigram print, surrounding Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen put back his sword, smiled and thought, Now I’ve finally finished the elementary level of Sword Eight. This should be the first level.

It was terrific that he managed to finish the first level of Sword Eight.

It took Sword Saint Jiuyou two hundred years to complete Sword Eight.

Blackie showed up behind Zhang Ruochen with its wings covering its body, showing only its cat head. “Not bad. You’ve improved a lot.”

“Then let’s have a fight. I want to see how much I’ve improved,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“No need to rush. I’m here to tell you that Moon Goddess has sent all the half saints from Sacred Central Empire here.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I still need to spend time becoming a half-step saint king. You’ll be in charge of them. I’ll give you some refining resources. Cultivate them in the best way possible.”

Zhang Ruochen spent four months refining in the Time and Space Crystal, and it was one month outside.

“Don’t you want to meet them? Don’t you want to know who brought them here?” Blackie blinked, smiled, and dropped a hint to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly looked gentle. He flicked away the petals on his head and shoulders. “Let’s go, bring me to them.”

Chapter 1535 - Six Spots

Chapter 1535: Six Spots

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Main peak of the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

Thousands of meters up, there was an ancient pavilion in the middle of the mountain.

There was a 74-meter-tall stone statue before the pavilion. It wore saint armor, held a heavy sword, and looked very powerful. Strong Saintly Way aura spread out faintly.

That was the statue of Supreme Saint Manjian. There was one in the 14 saint territories within Red Dragon Saint Domain and it was like his saint body. When in danger, the statue could attack and kill the evil force in the saint territory.

Right now, the more than 200 Half-Saints of the Sacred Central Empire stood in neat lines under the statue. They were spirited and shone with white light, like all of them contained a moon inside.

A woman who seemed to be in her twenties wore a white dress and was gentle and beautiful. She had a third-level Half-Saint cultivation. She looked around with her bright eyes. “We’ll be able to see the Crown Prince later. I’m so excited.

Unfortunately, the Crown Prince is a dragon to the people. He won’t notice a mere Half-Saint like me.”

“I’m so lucky to be able to cultivate with the Crown Prince. With my talent before, it would’ve been difficult to reach the ninth-level Half-Saint Realm. I would need a great opportunity. But in the Universe World, I underwent the baptism of the world and my body went through amazing changes. Then in the Moon Goddess Mountain, I was baptized

by the power of the moon. My body and saint soul both improved. I think that, with my current talent, I can try for the Saint King Realm. This was all given to me by the Crown Prince.”

“My opportunity is even larger than you all. I found a rare saint medicine in the Universe World and refined it. I actually cultivated a quite special body.”

...

The more than 200 Half-Saints present weren't all old followers of the Sacred Central Empire. Some had also come from the Blue Dragon Void World, but now, they were all part of the Sacred Central Empire.

Actually, most of the old followers were still in Kunlun's Field. They hadn't come to the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

“Crown Prince, the Crown Prince is here...”

“No wonder he's the Crown Prince. He's still so handsome and attractive. He completely crushes the guys who think they're attractive. Plus, his Saintly Way aura is so strong. He's like a divine sun that can burn the world.”

As Zhang Ruochen arrived, the Half-Saints of the Sacred Central Empire were all terribly excited. The men worshipped him like he was a god. The women had heated gazes and their hearts beat quickly. They viewed him as their most respected hero.

“Greetings, Crown Prince.”

It was a deafening sound.

Zhang Ruochen walked with Blackie. Scanning the Half-Saints lowered onto one knee, he nodded in satisfaction. Indeed, he thought. Each Half-Saint's bodies and minds have improved. The Moon Goddess Mountain isn't just a mountain. After the Moon Goddess returned, it was turned into a great reassurance. It can quickly improve Guanghan Field as a whole.

A god wasn't able to fight in the Heaven World.

But a god's abilities weren't something a Supreme Saint could compare to.

For example, the Moon Goddess Mountain was just a nice cultivation land before the Moon Goddess returned. But after she returned, it became an extremely valuable place that could improve a Half-Saint's body, spirit, and saint soul.

One could imagine that Guanghai Field would become stronger and stronger as time passed.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the steps of the pavilion before stopping. He turned and said, "Today, I will lay down a rule. All cultivators of the Sacred Central Empire can be exempt from kneeling once they reach the Half-Saint Realm."

The Half-Saints who were lowered on one knee all stood up, feeling moved inside.

Those who could reach the Half-Saint Realm were all smart people. They knew that the Crown Prince wanted them to have strong hearts that didn't bow down to anyone.

"Since you've come to the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land," Zhang Ruochen said, "I have a welcoming gift for you all."

"The Crown Prince is very generous. Since he's giving a welcoming gift, it must not be anything simple."

"The Crown Prince is so handsome. If I could stay beside him forever, I'd be happy even if I was just a servant."

Zhang Ruochen looked at everyone's expectant eyes and smiled. He pulled out more than 200 storage bags from his spatial ring. Adding Holy Qi into them, he sent them out to everyone.

"You know that I am the Time and Space Descendant. I should've produced a better spatial treasure for you all, but your cultivations are too low. If I give you too great of a gift, it'll actually attract danger."

In the Heaven World, even many Saints didn't have storage bags, but Zhang Ruochen gave one to each Half-Saint. This was already very generous.

In the merits battle, each Saint of the Shatuo Seven Fields had a storage bag, but they were very small.

Plus, they were taken away after the merits battle ended.

Only the warriors who entered the merits battleground could temporarily receive a storage bag, because it greatly increased the efficiency of fighting.

The Half-Saints picked up the storage bags, naturally feeling excited.

But Zhang Ruochen's next words made them jump up in excitement.

"Each storage bag contains a saint source," Zhang Ruochen said. "With your current bodies, you should easily reach the Saint Realm with help from a saint source."

"What? Saint source?"

"There really is a saint source."

"With the help of a saint source, I should be able to reach the Saint Realm in ten years."

Seeing how happy they all were, Zhang Ruochen was genuinely happy too. He needed a group of cultivators who were truly willing to fight alongside him, instead of being forced to join the Sacred Central Empire.

Even though he'd given the Moon Goddess one million saint sources, he still had around 100,000.

These saint sources were enough for him to train a strong saint army that could strengthen gradually. In the future, he could lead them and fight against Chi Yao's First Central Empire army. They could even step onto the battleground and fight with the Hell World.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen smelled a familiar fragrance.

When he turned around, he saw Mu Lingxi's beautiful figure. She stood outside the pavilion like a fairy who'd come out of a painting.

After receiving the Ice and Fire Phoenix's heritage, her Ice Phoenix bloodline was completely awoken. Her skin was

translucent like spiritual jade and her wings shone with a dozen kinds of light. Her phoenix eyes were brighter than the stars in the sky.

After becoming the Moon Goddess's disciple, Mu Lingxi had obvious changes. Her aura became similar to the Moon Goddess, more divine and less worldly. But when she met eyes with Zhang Ruochen, she still had that lovely smile.

"So beautiful. Only the little Saintess's features match the Crown Prince."

"She's the god's disciple now. I heard that even a lot of Half-Saints from Guanghan Field say she's the top beauty of Guanghan Field. They call her Fairy Lingxi."

The Half-Saints who'd wanted to follow Zhang Ruochen and be his servant sighed softly. They felt like dust compared to Mu Lingxi.

Mu Lingxi was smiling, but there was annoyance in her eyes. "You insisted on leaving me with the Moon Goddess, but you didn't think I'd come back so shamelessly, right?"

"This is your home. You can come back at any time."

Zhang Ruochen walked over and stood across from Mu Lingxi. The two bathed in divine light and stared at each other. They looked like a perfect pair.

A clapping sounded.

Wu Hao walked out of the pavilion, clapping. "The priest is indeed generous. You give out hundreds of saint sources like this. Even I want to join the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land."

Zhang Ruochen quickly looked away from Mu Lingxi. Chuckling, he said, "Oh, the Heir is here too? Come, let's go talk inside."

After entering the pavilion, Zhang Ruochen realized that Wu Hao wasn't the only one who'd come. Su Qingling, Wen Shucheng, and Ling Mi had also come. They were all top prides of Guanghan Field.

In addition, there were two Saint Kings. They were both first step Saint Kings and seemed ancient but had strong auras.

The two had already accumulated a lot in the first step Saint King Realm. The people who'd just reached the first step couldn't compare to them.

"Everyone has gone through life-or-death experiences together during this Saints Merits Battle," Zhang Ruochen said. "We've also had great rewards and should all be trying to reach the Saint King Realm. So, you didn't come to the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land just to reminisce with me, right?"

Wu Hao was straightforward too and revealed his reason for coming. "The priest is extremely intelligent and quickly guessed our intent. Indeed, this is still related to the merits battle."

"Oh?"

"Many cultivators of Guanghan Field bravely killed enemies," Wu Hao said. "They collected many merits and contributed greatly to the Heaven World. Thus, the Truth Godly Palace has sent a god's decree to reward Guanghan Field six spots to cultivate there. This is a rare opportunity."

"Six spots for the Truth Godly Palace?"

Zhang Ruochen was tempted.

After all, the Way of Truth was one of the nine ancient ways.

Clearly, you had to go to the Truth Godly Palace to study the most orthodox Way of Truth.

The cultivation spots were extremely precious.

Usually, Guanghan Field only had three spots every decade.

It was because Guanghan Field had sacrificed too much in Zuling Field that the Truth Godly Palace gave them six spots as a reward.

"Perhaps you aren't as familiar with how precious the Way of Truth is," Wu Hao said. "However, I was lucky enough to have gone to the Truth Godly Palace once and comprehended some basics of the Rules of Truth. How about we have a battle? I'll also use the Way of Truth while fighting so you can have a more direct feeling."

“You’re challenging me?”

Even though Wu Hao made it sound casual, Zhang Ruochen could sense the competition.

After all, Zhang Ruochen had been too dramatic on the merits battleground and stole the Heir’s spotlight. Now, Zhang Ruochen’s fame in Guanghan Field had probably surpassed Wu Hao.

It was normal that he wanted to challenge Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1536 - The Fight Between the Heir and the Priest

Chapter 1536: The Fight Between the Heir and the Priest

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wu Hao's eyes were gleaming, gazing at Zhang Ruochen, who was standing across from him.

Zhang Ruochen had no intention of fighting him at all. He'd been low-key ever since he came back from the Merits Battlefield, as he didn't want conflicts like this.

He wasn't born and raised in Guanghan Field, so the more glorious he was, the less useful the monks from Guanghan Field would look.

Su Qingling didn't know why Wu Hao wanted to challenge Zhang Ruochen. She naively believed that it was just a game between two friends. She was suddenly hyped and said, "Fantastic! Both the heir and the priest are top-tier talents. A fight between you two is going to be spectacular."

Wu Hao stood up, spread his arms, and made a thunder-like sound. He laughed, "Please don't overthink it, priest. We're just playing around, and no matter who wins, our friendship is the most important."

Mu Lingxi saw through Wu Hao, who actually wanted to challenge Zhang Ruochen.

No matter who won, it would end badly for Zhang Ruochen.

If Zhang Ruochen was defeated by Wu Hao, everyone would say Zhang Ruochen was so mighty because he'd used other powers, and his strength wasn't at a top-tier level yet.

If Zhang Ruochen defeated Wu Hao, which meant an outsider defeated the greatest saint in Guanghan Field... What would the monks from Guanghan Field think about that? Zhang Ruochen would be elbowed out at least to some extent in Guanghan Field.

Mu Lingxi wanted to see neither of the cases.

Mu Lingxi said, "If the heir just wants you to practice rules of truth, how about having a fight against me?"

"Fairy Lingxi, your cultivation indeed surged after being taught by Moon Goddess, but I'm worried that you can't handle the power of rules of truth. If I harm you, then I'll offend the priest." Wu Hao smiled.

After getting the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix, Mu Lingxi obtained Sub-Complete Body Constitution, which was only slightly weaker than Wu Hao's Complete Body Constitution. And besides, she had the power of Pluto Ice and the Moon Goddess as her teacher. Chances are, she was Wu Hao's rival.

However, Wu Hao still thought of her being way weaker than him.

Just before Mu Lingxi wanted to say something, Zhang Ruochen stopped him. "If you really want to practice rules of truth, then I'll happily exchange moves."

"Okay then. I'll wait for you outside."

Wu Hao guffawed and walked out of the palace.

Wen Shusheng and Ling Mi exchanged eye contact and shook their heads, as they knew that their friendship would break down if they fought.

Mu Lingxi grabbed Zhang Ruochen's wrist and said, "Let me fight him for you!"

"No need. I can't avoid this fight. Just go ask the half saints from Sacred Central Empire to leave first."

Zhang Ruochen looked calm and walked out of the palace.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Wu Hao were standing under the statue of Supreme Saint Manjian. They were three hundred feet away from each other, and power saint might gushed out of their bodies, making cracking sounds.

“Aren’t you going to use your sword, priest?” Wu Hao shouted.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “I’m just as good at palm way as at sword way.”

“Really? I’m also very proficient in palm way.”

Wu Hao was wearing a pair of battle boots. After taking a step, a fiery cloud emerged under his feet. At the next moment, his body dimmed and showed up right in front of Zhang Ruochen.

He was faster than some of the first-step saint kings.

Wu Hao opened his hand, and a large handprint was formed where six fiery snakes flowed around with sparks.

“What a Flame Jing Palm... The heir might’ve refined palm techniques to perfection.”

Su Qingling’s eyes popped.

As for Mu Lingxi, she frowned, as she was worried about Zhang Ruochen.

She wasn’t worried that Zhang Ruochen would be defeated, and she was sure that Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t use all his power. Even if he was going to defeat Wu Hao, he wouldn’t crush him completely.

However, would Zhang Ruochen get injured by Wu Hao if he didn’t spare any effort?

Flame Jing Palm was one of the top-tier low-level saint spells.

Flame Jing Palm in its prime could rival half the power of a mid-level saint spell.

Mid-level saint spells were way stronger than low-level saint spells. The gap between them was like that between ten-

thousand-patterns saint weapons and thousand-patterns saint weapons.

It was difficult to both practice mid-level saint spells and perform mid-level saint spells. It would usually take a first-step saint king decades to finish refining a mid-level saint spell.

Mid-level saint spells not only required the saint power from saint kings, but also saintly way rules that were successfully integrated with the spells themselves. The more saintly way rules there were in a mid-level saint spell, the stronger it would be.

Even the weakest mid-level saint spells required ten saintly way rules.

There were only two sword way rules in Zhang Ruochen's body, so he wasn't able to perform any mid-level saint spell.

For example, the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm was a mid-level saint spell. Zhang Ruochen wouldn't be able to practice it until he became a half-step, or even a first-step saint king.

Flame Jing Palm that Wu Hao performed could rival half the power of a mid-level saint spell.

If it was just a friendly exchange of techniques between friends, why would he use such a forceful technique in the first strike?

Zhang Ruochen remained calm. He pinched a palm print, and then, a flexuous river showed up.

The river flowed forward as Zhang Ruochen wielded his fist.

Boom!

Wu Hao's palm and Zhang Ruochen's fist clashed with each other.

The six fiery dragons turned into six powerful fiery forces, hitting the river, disintegrating it.

The tumbling force hit Zhang Ruochen's fist, knocking him ten steps back.

“What happened, priest? Didn’t you use all your strength? I haven’t performed rules of truth yet.”

Wu Hao laughed, spread his arms and flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

The six fiery snakes showed up again, and they were a hundred times thicker than before, as if they were six fiery dragons flying around Wu Hao.

Meanwhile, Wu Hao’s saint armor gleamed, and some beast inscriptions emerged on it, strengthening his power.

Obviously, the saint armor Wu Hao was wearing was extraordinary, and could rival Hundred Saints Blood Armor.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want trouble, but he wasn’t scared of trouble either.

He wouldn’t lose to Wu Hao on purpose just to reconcile.

Howl!

A deafening dragon sound came out of Zhang Ruochen’s body, and masculine Qi ten thousand times stronger than ordinary people gushed out of all of his one hundred and forty-four apertures.

“Dragon and Elephant Divine Furnace.”

Zhang Ruochen looked ferocious. His long hair waved in the air while his body became like a bronze furnace covered with blue flames. He concentrated his strength on one spot and wielded it.

Boom!

All the six fiery snakes on Wu Hao’s body were crushed, and he bounced away, falling on the ground.

Although Zhang Ruochen failed to refine the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, his attainment in palm techniques provided him with many moves that were stronger than Wu Hao’s Flame Jing Palm.

If Zhang Ruochen actually managed to refine the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, it would definitely be one of the top-tier mid-level saint spells.

“Great. You’re finally serious. You were letting me down.”

Wu Hao looked kind of cold, yet he still tried to put a fake smile on his face. He mobilized his saint Qi, and godly prints emerged.

Those godly prints were everywhere on his body: his arms, legs, eyes, and ears. Some of the godly prints even flew out, floating around him like light spots.

Each light spot was the reflection of a God.

Wu Hao had reached Peak Realm in martial way, which meant he echoed with Gods four times. The shadows of the Gods formed godly prints in his body.

And now, all those godly prints flew out.

His palm had the most godly prints.

And after he waved his hand, countless godly prints flew out.

Zhang Ruochen started to get serious. A great many godly prints flew out of his body as well. He raised his arms and formed an elephant phantom and a dragon phantom.

Wu Hao mobilized rules of truth after seeing that, merging it with his palm.

Suddenly, the power in his palm was strengthened several times.

“He indeed mobilized the rules of truth.”

Zhang Ruochen had been cautious about it. Just as Wu Hao performed rules of truth, he activated Hundred Saints Blood Armor, which covered his body.

Meanwhile, the power of a hundred saints enveloped Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen bounced away and almost fell off Mount Yuanxu.

The Way of Truth was an ancient way, and after it merged with a saint spell, it could amplify its power.

At the same level, only those who also mastered rules of truth could rival that.

Because of that, the quota of Truth Godly Palace admission was very small. Many monks tried everything just to get in there to refine for a while.

“Priest, this is the Way of Truth!”

Wu Hao smiled smugly.

Chapter 1537 - Soul-Control Technique

Chapter 1537: Soul-Control Technique

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wu Hao didn't stop. Instead, he used extreme speed and struck with another palm.

Deity prints flew around the entire sky and many rules of truth fused into Wu Hao's palm, hitting toward Zhang Ruochen.

Right then, even Su Qingling realized something was amiss. She was no longer as happy as before and instead grew worried.

This wasn't a martial challenge.

This was a life-or-death fight.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the edge of the cliff and steadied himself. He circulated his Holy Qi and suppressed the bubbling Blood Qi inside of him.

Faced with the overpowering palm force, he didn't have any fear on his face. His eyes sharpened instead.

The Way of Truth was indeed an ancient way and squashed the other saintly ways, but Time and Space were ancient ways too.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed in the sky. The space before him became distorted instantly.

Wu Hao's palm force hit the distorted space. Instantly, the bounding power flew out from Zhang Ruochen's side. It hit the clouds in the distance, sending them tumbling.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, feeling a bit of regret.

“The spatial structure in the Heaven World is too stable. Even with my current attainments in space, I can only distort it slightly. If this was another world, I would be able to send the power back. No matter how strong Wu Hao’s attack is, I could send it back to him.”

But Zhang Ruochen was quite satisfied.

He could use spatial power to resolve Wu Hao’s Way of Truth. This meant he wouldn’t be defeated.

Boom.

Zhang Ruochen passed through the distorted space and struck with a palm.

Wu Hao’s expression changed slightly. He hurriedly activated the saint armor. His hands transformed into two fiery clouds and he defended himself.

Suddenly, the space became distorted again. Zhang Ruochen’s palm force dodged Wu Hao’s arms and hit him squarely in the chest.

But Zhang Ruochen didn’t humiliate Wu Hao too much. He pulled back part of the force. Wu Hao fell from the sky and quickly balanced himself. He landed steadily on the ground and wasn’t hurt, other than the pain in his chest.

“They’re both ancient ways. Why can Zhang Ruochen’s Way of Space fully suppress my Way of Truth?”

Wu Hao had always been the strongest Saint in Guanghan Field, so he naturally felt proud.

Even though Zhang Ruochen had crushed all his enemies in Zuling Field, Wu Hao only felt that he’d relied on outer strength to become so strong. If they really fought, he wouldn’t be weaker than Zhang Ruochen.

Wu Hao didn’t know that he was only a cultivator of the Way of Truth and his knowledge of it was still very basic.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen was a spatial controller.

Only a truth controller would be able to counter Zhang Ruochen’s spatial tactics.

Wu Hao wasn't satisfied, so he attacked again.

“Souls of Ten Ancestors.”

Behind him, ten huge figures appeared. Like ten mountains, they radiated with ancient and divine auras.

Those were ten Supreme Saint elders of the Wu Family.

Wu Hao had top talent, so he was naturally protected by the ancestors of the Wu Family. The portion of their soul powers left in the temple was fused into Wu Hao and accompanied him as he grew up.

When he activated the power of the ten ancestor souls, Wu Hao would be able to fight with someone with a Supreme Complete Body Constitution.

Unfortunately, the Souls of Ten Ancestors had just appeared when Zhang Ruochen already used the Spatial Move. He used it eight times in a row, leaving behind nine shadows. Finally, he stopped before Wu Hao.

Wu Hao's vision was covered with Zhang Ruochen's figure. Lips trembling, he went to attack.

Roar!

Zhang Ruochen attacked like lightning. A golden dragon flew out of his palm, hitting Wu Hao. The Souls of Ten Ancestors broke apart into strands of mist.

Wu Hao's organs all cracked open. He stumbled back pathetically and finally lowered himself onto one knee hundreds of feet away. Blood flowed out of his lips, dripping onto the ground.

Drip, drop, drip, drop.

There were specks of blood on the ground.

Wu Hao's eyes were very sharp and he continued to circulate Holy Qi.

But as soon as he tried, he felt stabbing pain in his abdomen. After checking, he realized that his meridians and Holy Meridians had all been damaged.

If he continued to fight forcefully, his injuries would only worsen.

“I failed just like this?”

Wu Hao clenched his fists. He had complicated feelings—humiliation, pain, helplessness, and also hatred toward Zhang Ruochen.

With today’s fight, Zhang Ruochen crushed his ego.

Wu Hao had a noble dream and wanted to revive Guanghan Field.

This was a very difficult path and needed strong talent and abilities as support.

But before he could display anything, he’d lost to someone of his own age. This made him realize that he couldn’t realize his dream with his own talent and abilities.

1

He couldn’t even defeat Zhang Ruochen. How could he revive Guanghan Field?

This was the cruel reality!

“Priest... Such powerful moves. Today, I...lost to you...”

Wu Hao tried to make himself seem not like a sore loser. He wiped away the blood on his lips and squeezed out a smile.

To outsiders, Wu Hao didn’t seem to care about the results of this battle. He looked very casual and he was still friends with Zhang Ruochen.

“You used the Souls of Ten Ancestors earlier,” Zhang Ruochen said. “It gave me great pressure and forced me to fight with all my might, so I couldn’t control my power...”

Wu Hao quickly stopped Zhang Ruochen. “No need to explain. If you didn’t use your full power, then you’d be looking down on me.”

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen and Wu Hao didn’t end their friendship, Su Qingling and Mu Lingxi were all relieved.

“Even though the Priest cultivates the Way of Time and Space,” Wu Hao continued, “the Way of Truth is also very powerful and the spots are very precious. I think you should visit the Truth Godly Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen replied without even thinking, “Using the Rules of Truth can help multiply a saint spell’s power. I’ll go to the Truth Godly Palace just for this.”

Wu Hao smiled again. “Then it’s set. One month from now, we’ll go to the Truth Godly Palace together. During this month, I will cultivate as hard as possible. If I have another breakthrough, I’ll come fight with you again.”

“It’s just friendly competition.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and nodded. He was about to send them off.

Suddenly, the hair on the back of his neck stood up and all his meridians were pulled taut. He felt two horrible bursts of murderous Qi spread out. Horrible waves of power came toward him.

“Who is it?”

Zhang Ruochen turned quickly. The Abyss Ancient Sword instantly appeared in his hands.

The two bursts of murderous Qi came from the two first-step Saint King elders. Their eyes turned dark purple as if they’d suddenly transformed into evil demons.

“Die!”

One of the elders held a bloody sword and drew a circle before him, enveloping Zhang Ruochen’s body.

The other elder clenched his hands into claws and a dark shadow appeared behind him. It was like a Ghost King dancing.

“This...”

This sudden change shocked everyone.

After all, the two first step Saint King elders were famous in Guanghai Field. The Wu Ancestor had sent them to protect

these prides of Guanghan Field.

Why did these two renowned elders suddenly change and try to kill Zhang Ruochen?

Wu Hao was very clear about their abilities. They'd become Saint Kings 100 years ago. Though they were stuck on the first step, they had great accumulations.

With Wu Hao's level as a half-step Saint King, he wasn't confident in defeating either of them.

Seeing the two attack Zhang Ruochen at the same time, he was very surprised, but he also grew a bit excited. With their abilities, it wouldn't be hard to kill Zhang Ruochen.

But...

As soon as Wu Hao got this idea, he saw Zhang Ruochen pick up the Abyss Ancient Sword and send one of the elders flying horizontally.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen attacked once again. This time, wind screamed through the entire Yuanxu Peak. The wind forces wrapped around the sword and forced another elder to the ground.

Before the two elders could attack again, Zhang Ruochen struck out with two Saint-binding Chains and tied up their bodies.

"How is this possible?"

Wu Hao widened his eyes, feeling disbelief at this scene. Zhang Ruochen had taken down two strong first step Saint Kings with just a few moves.

This is his true level. Earlier, he was going easy on me.

Wu Hao's eyes grew dull. He dug his nails inside his palms, feeling even more humiliated.

1

Earlier, he'd still had hope that he could work hard and have a chance at defeating Zhang Ruochen. After witnessing Zhang

Ruochen's true abilities, he felt extremely hopeless.

Zhang Ruochen is too strong. I won't be able to defeat him even if I work hard for my entire life.

He swallowed his spit. Murderous intent grew in him.

But he hid it deep within and didn't reveal it.

Zhang Ruochen locked the two first step Saint Kings onto Supreme Saint Manjian's statue. With his hands behind his back, he studied them. "These two seniors seem to be controlled by some strange power."

Wen Shucheng, Ling Mi, Mu Lingxi, and Su Qingling used physical techniques and streaked over, appearing under the stone statue.

Of them all, Wen Shucheng was the most learned. He quickly discovered something wrong and his face paled. Voice trembling, he said, "Could it be...the taboo spell of Soul Field, the Soul-Control Technique?"

Chapter 1538 - Enemies Are Coming

Chapter 1538: Enemies Are Coming

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Soul Field was also one of the secular fields under Heaven World, and it was one of the top hundred fields in the western world. Even all the saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields combined couldn't rival Soul Field.

Soul-Control Technique was a terrific skill even in Soul Field. It was one of the forbidden techniques.

Wu Hao asked, "Are you sure it's Soul-Control Technique?"

"That's right. Both Wu Qingkong and Li Zhi's eyes were dim, covered by dark purple light. Obviously, a great being from Soul Field has controlled their saint souls and used them as puppets to try to assassinate our priest."

Wen Shusheng's heart was pounding so fast that he could hear its sound coming out of his body.

He looked around as if he were searching for something.

Everyone present was terrified.

Saint king's saint souls had tremendous willpower. Unless a supreme being from Soul Field had arrived, there was no way their saint souls could be controlled.

And besides, that supreme being must have attained great things in terms of 'Soul-Control Technique.'

Zhang Ruochen noticed Wen Shusheng's being unsettled. He asked, "What're you looking for?"

Wen Shusheng tried to calm himself down. “One needs to be close enough to perform Soul-Control Technique. It’s not an easy task to control the saint souls of two saint kings. I reckon the person is around Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes, and his mind power turned into light spots, spreading from Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

Heaven World was way superior to Kunlun’s Field, so the mind power of a monk would be suppressed. Even so, Zhang Ruochen was able to inspect an area of a thousand square miles.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen retracted his mind power, looked to everyone and shook his head.

Su Qingling’s face paled. “If he or she could control the saint souls of two first-step saint kings, does that mean ours might be controlled as well?”

Mu Lingxi was very worried. She said, “Even Zhang Ruochen wasn’t able to find that person, and that means that person is a supreme being. Let’s ask Supreme Saint Manjian to kill him since he’s in Red Dragon Sacred Domain.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded, walked to the statue of Supreme Saint Manjian, and mumbled.

Whoosh!

The clouds quickly piled up above the statue, turning into an enormous gleaming saint cloud.

And then, power saint might burst out of the statue. Zhang Ruochen and other saints were still able to handle the supreme saint forces, but the half saints in Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land all kneeled on the ground.

The statue suddenly opened its eyes and said, “Why did you ask me to be here, Zhang Ruochen?”

“Supreme saint.”

Zhang Ruochen bowed respectfully, and then, he pointed at the two first-step saint kings and said, “Please take a look at them, supreme saint.”

“Oh? Soul-Control Technique.”

Obviously, Supreme Saint Manjian was a bit surprised, as he didn't expect a great being from Soul Field to trespass on Dragon Sacred Domain and take over the saint souls of two saint kings.

Whoosh!

A circle of saint light gushed out of the statue and hit the two first-step saint kings.

And then, two traces of purple mist emanated from the two first-step saint kings, and after staying in the air for a breath of time, they withered away completely.

“What happened?”

“My head hurts so bad, and my saint soul is damaged... Wait... Why am I tied up on the statue?”

Both first-step saint kings regained their consciousness, yet their brains were still in a mess as they didn't know what happened.

Zhang Ruochen didn't take back the two Saint-binding Chains and release them after they recalled what happened.

...

There was a mountain called 'Gui Mountain' that was a thousand miles away from Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

Gui Mountain was more than ten thousand miles long, connecting Red Dragon Sacred Domain and Liku Sacred Domain. There were ancient trees growing on the mountains, and the saint beasts that were born because of the saint Qi from Heaven World made this place look exceptionally hazardous.

Deep inside Gui Mountain were more than ten beings, led by Shang Ziyan. They were standing at the foot of the mountain, looking at Mount Yuanxu from afar.

There was a layer of purple light under their feet.

They were actually thin purple engravings that looked like earthworms, and those engravings formed a huge formation

with a diameter of sixteen hundred feet.

The space was entirely purple inside the formation.

A slender man in purple was standing at the center of the formation. Half of his body was flesh and body, but the other half was purple mist, which looked incredibly bizarre.

He was half human and half soul.

He was holding a bloody bone scepter, standing at the center of the formation.

The bone scepter was made of a spine, and the joints still looked distinct. At the top of the scepter was a skull with black hair that was glowing with phosphorescence.

Both the bone scepter and that purple-caped man looked creepy.

The purple-caped man said, “Both Wu Qingkong and Li Zhi had great cultivation, and they can even rival second-step saint kings who’re relatively weak, yet Zhang Ruochen easily defeated them. That Zhang Ruochen does have impressive power.”

Shang Ziyan stood there with silver hair and a red three-feathered hat. He smiled, holding a jade scroll. “I wouldn’t have asked you to help me if he were weak.”

Two beautiful girls were standing behind Shang Ziyan, and both of them were first-step saint kings. They were Tian Shu and Tian Miao, respectively.

Tian Shu looked elegant. She asked, “Does that mean Zhang Ruochen can rival a second-step saint king?”

“Not quite.”

Shang Ziyan said, “After all, Wu Qingkong and Li Zhi were nothing but puppets, which means their power was largely discounted. If they teamed up with their peak power, it wouldn’t be easy for Zhang Ruochen to defeat them.”

Tian Shu was relieved and said, “Good, then I should be strong enough to suppress Zhang Ruochen.”

As a saint king from Merits Godly Palace, Tian Shu was confident that she could easily defeat Wu Qingkong and Li Zhi, which meant it wouldn't be hard for her to fight Zhang Ruochen.

“Though Wu Qingkong and Li Zhi failed to kill Zhang Ruochen, they forced him to show his power. They still helped us some though,” Tian Miao said.

Shang Ziyan shook his head and said, “Sadly, they didn't force Zhang Ruochen to perform Sword Technique of Time.

“Sword Technique of Time slays in one strike. It's already a known fact among the saints. I really want to have a try.” A slightly disdainful laughing sound came out of the purple halo.

Shang Ziyan shot a glance at the purple halo and smiled. “You haven't become a saint king, have you, Xu? Where're you on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’?”

“Seventh. I was in sixth place, but that Zhang Ruochen got too many merits in Zuling Field and surged into first place, making me fall one rank behind.”

Obviously, that man ‘Xu’ didn't recognize Zhang Ruochen's power, as he thought Zhang Ruochen only got the merits by luck as opposed to how he accumulated his merits through time.

“You guys will have a chance to have a fight,” Shang Ziyan said.

“Perhaps you'll kill him before I have a chance to do so.” The same laughing sound came out of the purple halo again.

Tian Shu looked confused, “King Hun, if you're able to control the saint souls of two saint kings, why didn't you just control Zhang Ruochen's directly?”

The purple-caped man called ‘King Hun’ smiled sneakily. “Zhang Ruochen's ranked first on the ‘Saints Merits Rank.’ His willpower is so robust that even my senior sister might not be able to control it. The more gifted someone is, the more difficult to control him.

“Wu Qingkong and Li Zhi are different. Although their cultivation gets better as they grow, they still couldn’t make it to second-step saint kings. In fact, that made their willpower weaker and weaker. They can’t even compare with those talented saints from Guanghan Field, so it’s way easier to control their saint souls.”

“I understand now,” Tian Shu said.

King Hun said, “My Soul-Control Technique isn’t brilliant enough yet. I still need soul formation to control Wu Qingkong and Li Zhi. If it were my senior sister, she could control it in an instant.”

“King Sunlight won’t give a damn about a saint. She wouldn’t have come even if we asked her to.” Xu laughed in the purple halo.

Whoosh!

A glowing saint light came from the peak of Mount Yuanxu, and one could see it even if it was three thousand miles away.

Shang Ziyan looked serious. “Supreme Saint Manjian is trying to find us.”

King Hun smiled. “Supreme Saint Manjian is indeed a force to be reckoned with. However, he’s quite mediocre when it comes to mind power attainment. I’ve brought my ancestor’s Broken Natal Way Charm. Even if he actually shows up, he won’t be able to find us.”

King Hun in purple opened his right hand where there were three thousand bizarre golden engravings.

He put his hand on the ground, and Broken Natal Way Charm merged with the purple formation.

The saint light from the statue of Supreme Saint Manjian swept across the purple formation, yet it failed to detect their traces.

Chapter 1539 - Wang Xu

Chapter 1539: Wang Xu

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Mount Yuanxu.

Supreme Saint Manjian's stone statue dimmed and spoke again. "The other must have a treasure that can cover their aura and intent. I can't find them."

All of the Saints were shocked.

Even if a Supreme Saint didn't specialize in Spiritual Power, they were still very strong in that aspect.

In addition, a Supreme Saint's saint intent could pass through the entire world and perceive intents. It was practically impossible for someone not in the same realm to go under a Supreme Saint's radar.

"What kind of powerful figure has arrived?"

"Such a terrifying figure must be hiding near Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. It's like a sword hanging over Zhang Ruochen's neck that can fall at any time."

"Why would strong cultivators of the Soul Field kill Zhang Ruochen?"

...

Zhang Ruochen held his chin, deep in thought.

According to the Moon Goddess, there was a dark force in the Heaven World that had been cleaning out the worlds related to Kunlun's Field. Zhang Ruochen had been forced away by Chi Yao, but he still had the label of Kunlun's Field on him.

Zhang Ruochen had received more than 400 million merits in Zuling Field, rushing straight to the first spot of the Saints Merits Record. He'd become the most popular Saint of the Heaven World.

How could the dark force let him go?

A horrible force must come and kill him to stop his rise to power.

Of course, he had other enemies in the Heaven World.

For example, Hell Blade Field and Purple Mansion Field.

The cultivators of Hell Blade Field especially hated Zhang Ruochen. It was because of him that they'd fallen to last place in the merits battle. They would now fall into flames and be sacrificed in the war between the Heaven and Hell World.

It wasn't impossible for Hell Blade Field to hire a Soul Field cultivator with a high price to kill Zhang Ruochen.

In addition, some spies from the Hell World could come to kill Zhang Ruochen too.

It must be one of the three parties.

Zhang Ruochen made this guess.

Mu Lingxi was a bit worried. "Zhang Ruochen, you shouldn't stay in the Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. Come with me to Moon Goddess Mountain. No matter how powerful the Soul Field is, they won't dare to approach the mountain."

"Even if you don't go there," Su Qingling said, "you can come to Red Dragon Saint Palace and cultivate alongside Supreme Saint Manjian. I doubt they're brave enough to go kill someone in a Supreme Saint's cultivation zone."

The Soul Field's cultivator was too strong and unsettled everyone.

Zhang Ruochen looked very composed. Smiling, he shook his head. "I can't keep hiding behind the Moon Goddess and Supreme Saint Manjian, right? Plus, Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land has the protection of the Nine-level Cloud Tower

Formation. Supreme Saint Manjian can appear at any time too and kill him.”

Supreme Saint Manjian was clearly annoyed. A booming voice came from the stone statue. “Red Dragon Saint Territory is my land. I will definitely protect you. It’s okay if that rat from the Soul Field doesn’t show up. As soon as I track him down, he will be destroyed.”

The divine voice transformed into waves and rippled to thousands of miles away.

Deep within, a dozen figures stood inside a purple formation map. They all heard Supreme Saint Manjian’s voice, but they didn’t show any fear.

Under purple light, Xu laughed and said, “King Hun, Supreme Saint Manjian just claimed he’ll destroy you. Are you scared?”

“Yes, how can I not be scared? He’s quite strong, but he doesn’t even know who I am. How can he kill me? Haha.”

King Hun had the Broken Natal Way Charm and wasn’t afraid of Supreme Saint Manjian, so he laughed freely.

...

At noon, Wu Hao, Su Qingling, Wen Shucheng, Mu Lingxi, Ling Mi, and the two first step Saint Kings left Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

Supreme Saint Manjian sent a branch of his consciousness to follow them and ensure their safety.

The Soul Field cultivator didn’t appear, even after they left Red Dragon Saint Territory.

“It seems that their target is very obvious. They want to kill Zhang Ruochen and won’t go after Wu Hao and the others at all.” Supreme Saint Manjian pulled his mind away and stopped following them.

After leaving Red Dragon Saint Territory and entering another territory, Wu Hao and the others sped up. They only wanted to get back quickly.

Suddenly, white mist rose up from the ground before them. In the span of a few breaths, the mist shrouded the entire mountain and sky.

“Everyone, be careful! This white mist is a bit strange,” Wu Hao called out with Holy Qi.

“Everyone, be careful! This white mist is a bit strange.”

“This white mist is a bit strange.”

“Strange...”

A string of echoes sounded. Before Su Qingling, Wen Shucheng and the others could reply, Wu Hao’s expression changed dramatically. He realized that he’d ventured into a very special area.

“This isn’t good.”

He hurriedly stopped and quickened the circulation of Holy Qi within him. Saintly light poured out of his eyes. Then he slapped to the side.

Boom!

The palm print only flew out a few feet before it was stopped by a sheet of water. A vortex appeared in the water, swallowing the palm print.

Wu Hao’s eyes grew solemn. Careful of his surroundings, he said strongly, “Who are you? Come out if you dare and fight with me fairly.”

Mocking laughter sounded in the mist. “Ha, with your amateur skills, you’re like a poor monkey before Zhang Ruochen and can’t even fight back. And you still want to fight with me? You overestimate yourself.”

Hearing this, Wu Hao turned livid. He gritted his teeth and flames surged from his eyes.

“What, you don’t think so? Can you defeat Zhang Ruochen? Even if Zhang Ruochen only uses one hand, you’re still not his match.” Laughter rang out again.

Before Zhang Ruochen appeared, Wu Hao had always been a pride that countless cultivators worshipped and looked up to.

When did he ever get insulted like this?

All 144 apertures on Wu Hao's body opened and 144 beams of Holy Qi poured out. He stomped on the ground. The entire world shook.

"Come out!" he yelled.

"Hey, since you don't accept it, then I'll grudgingly accept. I'll let you know what true skills are."

An ear splitting sound of wind appeared in the white mist behind Wu Hao.

He reacted as quickly as lightning. Forming a palm print with his five fingers, six fiery snakes emerged from his palm. They transformed into six rivers of fire and struck backward.

"Too slow!"

That voice changed location, appearing behind him.

Thud!

Wu Hao didn't have time to change his attack. Dark sword light cut across his left calf, cutting his flesh in the crack of the armor. Blood splattered.

The Holy Meridian and muscle in his left leg were sliced.

This kind of injury was nothing to a Saint, naturally. But a gust of sword Qi rushed into his body from the injury. It was frigid and made half of his leg lose feeling.

"Such terrifying sword techniques. Both the shocking speed and precise sword angle definitely contain Sword Way Rules to reach this extent." Wu Hao was very surprised.

"You have the Complete Body Constitution. You shouldn't be this weak. Or is it because Guanghan Field's top techniques and spells were stolen by other worlds, so they couldn't train an actually good fighter?" The voice in the mist seemed to be talking to itself but also mocking Wu Hao.

"Disgusting."

Wu Hao widened his eyes in anger. He put his hands together to activate the Souls of Ten Ancestors.

But the sword light flew over first. It cut across his right calf and brought out more blood.

The stinging pain in his leg made him grunt and his features twisted. The next moment, both of his legs lost feeling. They kept trembling.

But he still worked hard to support himself and remain standing.

“Your cultivation is far above me. So what if you kill me? I wouldn’t lose to you if we were in the same realm.”

Sweat beaded on Wu Hao’s forehead. Blood kept flowing out of his calves, pooling under his feet, but he still wouldn’t accept defeat.

Finally, that figure appeared around ten feet away from Wu Hao. The shadow was unclear due to the mist.

The figure held a crescent blade. “You’re a half-step Saint King and so am I. How can we not be in the same realm?”

“No way. If you’re a half-step Saint King, how can you be so strong?”

Wu Hao couldn’t believe the other. After all, he was the Heir of Guanghan Field and the strongest figure among all Saints in this world. How could he get the Holy Meridians in both legs cut without even seeing the other person if they were in the same realm?

This was impossible!

“It’s not that I’m too strong. You’re just too weak.”

Tap, tap.

The figure walked toward Wu Hao.

Gradually, he was able to see the man’s features clearly. His expression grew more and more shocked. He couldn’t even breathe anymore. A moment later, he finally squeezed out, “You’re seventh on the Saints Merits Rank... Wang Xu...”

“Hey, you actually recognize me!”

Wang Xu laughed. He walked over to Wu Hao and reached out, pressing a hand onto Wu Hao's shoulder. "Why are you still resisting? What meaning does that have? If you want to kneel down to me, then kneel!"

He tapped Wu Hao's shoulder lightly, but a huge burst of power came out, pressing down like a divine mountain.

Wu Hao's body cracked and he knelt heavily onto the ground with a thud. The ground around him caved in.

This kneel fully broke down Wu Hao's pride and ego.

This kneel also completely collapsed his mind.

Chapter 1540 - Instigatin

Chapter 1540: Instigatin

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“How could you treat brother Wu like that, Xu? He’s my friend, and I let you ask him to join us.”

A cold voice came out of the white mist.

Shang Ziyan walked out and to Wu Hao’s side. He bent over and helped Wu Hao stand up. He looked very concerned. “Are you okay, brother Wu?”

Wu Hao looked at Shang Ziyan. He was surprised and confused.

Wang Xu said, “I thought you asked me to kill him.”

“Brother Wu is the heir of Guanghan Field, a talent of our Heaven World. I’ve been wanting to befriend him for long. How could I have asked you to kill him...”

Shang Ziyan shook his head, took out a saint pill the size of an egg and gave it to Wu Hao. “It’s all my fault that I didn’t make it clear to Xu. I apologize for his behavior, brother Wu. Here’s a Merit Recovery Pill which can dissolve the power of Xu Moon Sword and help you recover.”

Shang Ziyan was the leader of the new generation from Merits Record Palace. His status was as noble as some supreme saints.

Also, Wu Hao knew that Shang Ziyan was very meticulous. There was no way he didn’t tell Wang Xu in detail what to do.

Besides, Wang Xu wasn’t Shang Ziyan’s subordinate.

Shang Ziyan and Wang Xu are playing good cop and bad cop here, and they want me to do something secret for them.

Wu Hao knew their goal exactly.

However, he couldn't do anything about it.

Wu Hao looked around. Other than Wang Xu and Shang Ziyan, he saw more than ten people, all of whom had horrific power.

There was no way that ordinary monks could befriend Wang Xu and Shang Ziyan.

Wang Xu himself had such solid background that the entire Guanghan Field couldn't match it.

Of course, the rules in Heaven World were very strict, and no monks were allowed to break them. No matter how much power Wang Xu could mobilize, he still needed to keep it contained to a certain extent.

Once he broke the rules, he would be executed.

Shang Ziyan is forcing me to make a choice here, either to be his enemy and be humiliated and tortured or to become his ally.

Wu Hao forced a smile as he realized he didn't have a choice at all. He felt helpless and desperate, yet he couldn't do anything about it.

Wu Hao took a deep breath and took the Merit Recovery Pill in Shang Ziyan's hand. "It's a misunderstanding... Then we shall just let it pass, haha..."

The monks standing behind Shang Ziyan all smiled with satisfaction, as this was the result they wanted.

Shang Ziyan burst into laughter. He tapped Wu Hao on his shoulder and said, "You're so forgiving. I admire that."

Wu Hao swallowed the Merit Recovery Pill, and then, his skin glowed with saint light. Within the blink of an eye, the blade Qi in his body was expelled, and his legs quickly recovered.

Gradually, Wu Hao could feel his legs again.

Wu Hao could also sense that his saint Qi became purer, and a mysterious energy came into being in his blood, which made him more vigorous. “No wonder it’s a Merit Recovery Pill. Is that the Power of Merit?”

Shang Ziyan nodded and said, “Exactly. What do you think about it, brother Wu?”

“It does live up to its fame. It has the greatest power from the heaven and earth and is unfathomably powerful. It didn’t just clean up the filth in my body, but also strengthened my body constitution. It can even help monks comprehend saintly way,” Wu Hao said.

Shang Ziyan said, “What a shame... What a shame!”

“Why a shame?” Wu Hao asked.

Shang Ziyan said, “Brother Wu, you’ve missed a wonderful opportunity. Otherwise, you could have obtained something thousands of times better than Merit Recovery Pill, and with that, your body constitution and saintly way power would surge. You could easily crush Zhang Ruochen after that.”

Wu Hao asked, “What’s that? What’s thousands of times better than a Merit Recovery Pill? And why did you say I missed it? Did it belong to me?”

Shang Ziyan seemed to treat Wu Hao as a confidant. He said, “You’ve heard of Merit Saint Tablet, right?”

“Of course, I have.”

Wu Hao looked excited. “I heard that only monks who’ve made significant contributions to Heaven World can get a Merit Saint Tablet

“If a monk integrates it with his or her body, the body will become a Merit Treasure Body with unfathomable power.

“Meanwhile, monks who have Merit Treasure Bodies have lots of privileges, which grant them access to many beneficial refining lands to practice... In all, it’s something countless monks crave.”

Shang Ziyan said, “Heaven World was established to fight against Hell World, and the most important part is Merits

Godly Palace, which was built by many Gods, and it has the supreme status. It collects the Power of Merit and makes valuables like Merit Recovery Pills and Merit Saint Tablets.

“These valuables don’t belong to Merits Godly Palace. They belong to the monks who’ve made significant contributions to Heaven World. The more you’ve contributed, the more you’ll gain.

“We collect from the world and give them back to the world. This is the purpose of Merits Godly Palace.

“This time, the monks from Shatuo Seven Fields suffered from a tremendous loss on the Merits Battlefield, and to make up for you guys, Merits Godly Palace took out a lot of merit valuables for you.”

Wu Hao frowned and asked, “Why haven’t I heard of it?”

Shang Ziyan shook his head and said, “Actually, everyone saw that the monks from Guanghan Field fought bravely, so you should’ve been bestowed a large number of merit treasures. As for you, as the heir of Guanghan Field, you led a hundred thousand saints and killed so many Luosha marquises. You should’ve been given a Merit Saint Tablet.

“Unfortunately, Moon Goddess made a huge mistake by charging Merits Godly Palace to save Zhang Ruochen.

“Then, Merits Godly Palace rescinded the valuables they were going to give you, including the Merit Saint Tablet that was supposed to be yours.”

Wu Hao had been craving a Merit Saint Tablet to improve his body constitution so that he could surpass the talents with Supreme Complete Body Constitution.

But now, Shang Ziyan told him that he’d missed the opportunity of obtaining one.

Shang Ziyan said, “Brother Wu, I wasn’t kidding. After all, Wan Zhaoyi, the heir of Kunlun’s Field, Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, the heir of Great Devil Ten Square Field, and the heirs from Eight Ministry Field, Hell Blade Field, Purple Mansion Field, and Tianmu Field all got a Merit Saint

Tablet, but you, as the heir of Guanghan Field, didn't get anything."

Wu Hao clenched his fist. He was trying to control his emotions, but he still looked resentful.

Shang Ziyan continued, "If Moon Goddess saved another person, Merits Godly Palace wouldn't have been that angry. However, it was Zhang Ruochen that she saved. You saw the interactions between Zhang Ruochen and Princess Luosha, and one might wonder whether they'd known each other or not. Besides, Zhang Ruochen killed a large group of saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields and robbed them of their merits, which was totally against the rules of Merits Godly Palace and Heaven World. He should've been executed instead of saved, not to mention sacrificing the entire Guanghan Field for him."

"That's the decision of the Moon Goddess..." Wu Hao said.

Shang Ziyan suddenly looked solemn and whispered, "We've received information that the Moon Goddess has been trapped in Hell World for a hundred thousand years, and it's kind of fishy that she suddenly came back to Heaven World out of nowhere."

Wu Hao was shocked. He said with his eyes popping, "What did you mean?"

Shang Ziyan said, "Nothing. I'm just curious whether it would change a God or not. Has Moon Goddess defected to Hell World? Will Guanghan Field be doomed if it keeps following Moon Goddess?"

Even Wu Hao was astounded hearing such thrilling news.

To him, the Moon Goddess had been the greatest and the noblest God. He must revere her all the time, yet the Moon Goddess had been staying in Hell World for a hundred thousand years.

Wu Hao felt that his belief had started to crumble.

Shang Ziyan paused for a second and said, "Actually, I came to Shatuo Heavenly Domain under the verdict of Gods. I'm here to kill the spy from Hell World, Zhang Ruochen."

“Zhang Ruochen is a spy from Hell World?” Wu Hao asked.

Shang Ziyan nodded and said, “We’ve received news that Zhang Ruochen went to Hell World before, and he even gained a divine pill that can bring people back to life. If he didn’t have someone to help him in Hell World, how did he get the divine pill in the first place?”

Wu Hao’s eyes squinted, and his hostility finally burst out.

Shang Ziyan could feel Wu Hao’s belligerence, so he continued, “In Shatuo Heaven Domain, Moon Goddess and Supreme Saint Manjian are always protecting Zhang Ruochen, so it’s almost impossible to kill him.

“If you can help me kill Zhang Ruochen, then it’ll be a huge contribution to Heaven World. I’ll definitely inform Merit Godly Place, and you can probably get a Merit Saint Tablet.”

“Really?” Wu Hao was tempted.

Shang Ziyan said, “I never lie.”

After an hour, the white mist was dispersed. Su Qingling and Wen Shusheng found Wu Hao, who was standing under the tree, and they left together.

Chapter 1541 - Arrival of the Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi

Chapter 1541: Arrival of the Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Inside the towering saint palace at the mountainside of Yuanxu Mountain.

“Even Supreme Saint Manjian can’t find that great being from Soul Field. The person coming at me might have some solid background.”

Zhang Ruochen stood at the center of the saint palace with his hands behind his back, looking at the views outside the saint palace.

He thought they might be the assassins from Hell Blade Field, but now, it seemed those coming against him were more powerful than he thought. They were perhaps part of the sinister power from Heaven World.

That sinister power could make Kunlun’s Field and Guanghai Field fall from their prime, which showed how terrific it was. Even the youngsters were able to annihilate Zhang Ruochen.

Blackie didn’t know anything about the sinister power, so it wasn’t worried about it at all. It lay on a golden chair and said, “Supreme Saint Manjian can show up at any time. Anyone who dares trespass in Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land will be killed. Besides, my Nine-Level Cloud Tower Formation is sturdy.”

“I don’t want to hide in Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land forever.”

Zhang Ruochen looked fierce.

Blackie stood up from the golden chair and said, “You’ll be in danger if you leave Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. After all, we don’t even know how powerful our enemies are. We don’t even know how many there are. If someone who’s stronger than a third-step saint king shows up, we’ll both get killed.”

“I’ll leave Red Dragon Sacred Domain for Truth Godly Palace in a month. That’ll be the most dangerous time for me,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Blackie started to get a bit worried as well. It said, “How about asking a saint king from Sacred Central Empire to protect us. The vice leader of Guarding Dragon Pavilion or the ancestor from Murong’s family. Both of them are very powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen was also worried. Sacred Central Empire didn’t have a strong foundation, so it’d better not involve them if it wasn’t absolutely necessary.

If they could invite someone from Soul Field to fight Zhang Ruochen, they could definitely invite more powerful beings to fight the vice leader and Murong Yefeng.

The more power Zhang Ruochen showed, the fiercer his enemies would get.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “Guanghan Field will have a great being to protect us when we’re going to Truth Godly Palace, but I also need to do some preparations myself.”

Zhang Ruochen took out two signal flares, wrote some words on them and sent them both out.

“Who’re you sending them to?” Blackie was a bit curious.

“I’m just asking the Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi to come to Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land,” Zhang Ruochen said.

After arriving in Guanghan Field, the Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi had been staying in Tongyou Sacred Domain and making ‘Six Saints to Heaven Wine’ and ‘Hua Saint Pills’ for the Moon Goddess, and because of them, Guanghan Field’s power had been improved every day.

Even the Moon Goddess needed their ability to make wine and pills, which showed how incredible their techniques were.

Zhang Ruochen wanted them in Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land because he needed their power.

“I’ll keep comprehending sword way. I need to become a half-saint king before getting to Truth Godly Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen felt that the danger this time was more horrible than ever before, so he needed to seize every second to make himself more powerful.

Three days later, the Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi came to Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

Both of them looked vigorous and well-dressed. They were no longer sloppy and untidy like before, and they finally looked like real senior saint kings.

They gained a very high status after coming to Guanghai Field. They didn’t need to hide like before. If they needed any ingredients to make wine and pills, all they needed to do was to give an order. They were living their best lives.

There was a red gourd at the Crazy Alcoholic’s waist. He laughed as he saw Zhang Ruochen. “I heard someone tried to assassinate you, Zhang Ruochen. Do you want us here to protect you?”

Zhang Ruochen was so close with them both that he didn’t need to cover his intent. “I want Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine and a Tiangang Purple Fire Rune.”

Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen was ranked the seventeenth in Kunlun’s Field. It not only tasted wonderful, but could also improve the power of a monk twofold during his fight.

Countless monks were crazed by it.

Even monks who didn’t like to drink would love the wine.

The Crazy Alcoholic knew what Zhang Ruochen wanted. He said, “The wine did improve your power twofold when you were a half saint, but you’re an absolute saint now.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, “Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine does nothing to absolute saints?”

“It’ll do almost nothing to you, probably only ten percent, if not less. If you become a saint king, the effect will only get weaker,” the Crazy Alcoholic said.

Zhang Ruochen was a bit disappointed.

He wanted Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine because he needed to deal with those talents who had comprehended Rule of Truth. After all, it could improve the power of saint spells by several times.

Wu Hao’s power after mobilizing Way of Truth was stronger than even Zhang Ruochen’s. He only defeated Wu Hao after he used the power of time and space.

If he had Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine, he was confident that he could fight Wu Hao even without using the power of space and time.

However, Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine meant nothing if it could only improve his power by ten percent.

“But...”

The Crazy Alcoholic said, “You have something that can amplify the power of Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine.”

“What’s that?” Zhang Ruochen’s eyes glinted.

“Buddha sarira.”

The Crazy Alcoholic said, “The two most important ingredients to make Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine are saint-level Dragon Spirits and Mad Oxen Marrow.

“Buddha sarira was refined by a golden dragon, and it contains the dragon spirits from a supreme saint, much stronger than that at saint level. Dragon spirits were made of dragon spirits Qi.

“If I put Buddha sarira in Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine and remake it, I can definitely boost the strength of Wine Spirits Mad Oxen Wine. However, we don’t have supreme-saint-level

Mad Oxen Marrow, so I can't say for sure by how much I can improve it."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "We've got to have a try. Tell me the ingredients needed to make Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine. I'll tell Blackie to help you get them."

The Crazy Alcoholic stroked his beard and said, "I have seventeen bottles of Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine. Ten thousand saint stones a bottle. Do you want them? If you buy them all, I can help you make higher-class Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine for free."

Blackie yelled, "You're robbing us, old guy. It's more than a hundred times pricier than those sold in Kunlun's Field. I'll activate the formation, suppress you, and seize your Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine."

"Ten thousand saint stones is not that expensive. We're indeed friends, but we need to be meticulous when it comes to price," the Crazy Alcoholic said calmly.

Blackie couldn't be more irritated. Its claws glowed with saint light,

"Wait."

Zhang Ruochen stopped Blackie.

"Don't stop me, Zhang Ruochen. This guy's insane. We can't be tricked like this."

Blackie flapped its wings, and a horrific beast king force gushed out of its body.

That force felt like that of a supreme saint, which dazed the Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi. Unfortunately, they knew Blackie was only strong when it came to its forces, so it wasn't likely that they'd actually be scared.

"That owl is so bizarre. Its forces are stronger than those of Supreme Saint Manjian. Other creatures might be terrified by it."

"They're only to scare people off. It might be weaker than me."

Zhang Ruochen asked Blackie to tone down its beast king forces. He then looked to the Crazy Alcoholic and smiled. “You were right. Even if we’re friends, we need to settle our accounts carefully, and besides, I don’t find ten thousand saint stones to be expensive.”

The Crazy Alcoholic said, “Are you going to buy them all?”

Heaven World was the center of ten thousand fields, and it had many refining materials from all the fields.

There were a great many ‘saint markets’ and ‘field markets’ where monks could purchase refining materials, and the currency in those markets was saint stones.

If a monk had enough saint stones, he or she could totally buy invaluable treasures in Heaven World.

The Crazy Alcoholic went to the field market in Guanghan Field before. He was so mesmerized by all the goods being sold in the market. Unfortunately, he was too poor to buy those he wanted, so he really wanted to make a fortune off Zhang Ruochen.

Although the Crazy Alcoholic attained a high status for making Six Saints to Heaven Wine for the Moon Goddess, that status didn’t translate into wealth.

“Of course, I’ll buy all of them, but I also have something that needs your inspection.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a Honghua Vine from his space ring that was more than thirty feet long. It looked like a seven-colored trunk of a tree.

The Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi’s eyes popped. They yelled, “Honghua Vine!”

They rushed toward the Honghua Vine and started to touch it. The way they stroked the vine made them look like two sexual predators preying on the body of a teenage girl.

The Crazy Alcoholic had seen the Honghua Vine in the market of Guanghan Field before, but that one was more than ten times lighter than the one he was looking at now.

Besides, the monks went crazy the second it was released, and a mysterious man bought it for twenty thousand saint stones.

Honghua Vines could help saints comprehend saintly way, so they were invaluable even in Heaven World.

Zhang Ruochen crossed his arms in front of his chest and said, "Help me make one hundred bottles of Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine and one thousand bottles of Six Saints to Heaven Wine, then I'll give this Honghua Vine to you."

"I can make as much Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine for you as you want, but I can't make Six Saints to Heaven Wine for you. The Moon Goddess explicitly forbid me from doing trades on Six Saints to Heaven Wine with any monks. I need to hand it all over to her."

The Crazy Alcoholic would've been much more comfortable if he could sell Six Saints to Heaven Wine.

Chapter 1542 - Two Weaknesses

Chapter 1542: Two Weaknesses

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Drinking Six Saints to Heaven Wine could transform the body constitution of low-level refiners into saint bodies, which was extremely valuable to any large field. They could continuously cultivate elite monks using that.

If Chi Yao knew that the Crazy Alcoholic was able to make Six Saints to Heaven Wine, she would've never let the Moon Goddess take him.

Zhang Ruochen said, "How about me giving you the ingredients?"

"Still no, unless you get the approval from the Moon Goddess."

The Crazy Alcoholic valued the Honghua Vine a lot, and he feared that Zhang Ruochen might seize it from him.

"Okay, I'll have to wait then."

Universe World was sealed in Heaven World, so Zhang Ruochen could bring Six Saints to Heaven Wine in, which was why he didn't need Six Saints to Heaven Wine that much.

Zhang Ruochen then said, "Then could you make me a hundred batches of Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine?"

"Sure!"

The Crazy Alcoholic immediately agreed and asked, "Then this Honghua Vine?"

“It’s yours now!” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Crazy Alcoholic was so happy that he almost jumped up, putting the Honghua Vine in his space ring.

The Crazy Alcoholic touched his ring with a smile. He was afraid that Zhang Ruochen might be upset, so he said, “Zhang Ruochen, this Honghua Vine is worth more than two hundred thousand saint stones on the market, but my one hundred bottles of Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine aren’t cheap either. It’s a fair trade.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t care whether it was fair or not. To him, anything that could be solved by saint stones was a minor issue. Those who only cared about benefits could never attain something great.

Blackie sneered as it thought Zhang Ruochen shouldn’t just let the Crazy Alcoholic slide that easily as it reckoned he should at least make a thousand, or even ten thousand bottles of Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine.

The Crazy Alcoholic shot Blackie a glance and said, “I’m the only one from Kunlun’s Field who can make Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine, which means I can set its price. Even if you sell it for ten thousand saint stones a bottle, there’ll be buyers.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Why did you even say something like that? Our friendship can’t be measured by saint stones. You’re helping me by making Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine, and I’m helping you by giving you the Honghua Vine.”

The Crazy Alcoholic knew what kind of a person Zhang Ruochen was, and he knew that Zhang Ruochen would always stand by his friends’ side. He said, “Okay, I’m taking advantage of you this time. If you need my help in the future, just ask.”

“That’s more like it.” Blackie smiled.

Zhang Ruochen had faith in the Crazy Alcoholic’s character. Although he could be a bit greedy sometimes, he would never cross the bottom line.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen gave the Buddha sarira to the Crazy Alcoholic and said, “Can you make the high-class

Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine in a month?”

The Crazy Alcoholic’s eyes glowed when he held the Buddha sarira in his hand as he really wanted to swallow it in his stomach. But he suppressed the greed, nodded and said, “Of course.”

Gu Songzi was anxious seeing the Crazy Alcoholic get a Honghua Vine. He said, “Don’t you want a Tiangang Purple Fire Rune, Zhang Ruochen? I can make them. How many do you want?”

“How many can you make in a month?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Gu Songzi said, “As long as you can prepare the materials as soon as possible, I can make three.”

Gu Songzi wasn’t good at combat, but he was highly-achieved in mind power, pill way, poison way, and runes. Zhang Ruochen had seen Gu Songzi use Tiangang Purple Fire Runes before, and its power posed a threat to even saint kings.

Zhang Ruochen obtained lots of attack runes in Zuling Field, but they could only be used to fight ordinary saints. They couldn’t do any damage to saint kings.

Any attack rune that could fight against a saint king could be sold at a terrifically high price in the market, much more valuable than hundred Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine. Ordinary saints wouldn’t be able to afford them.

“What kind of materials do you need?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Gu Songzi hesitated a bit and said, “There’re four main materials required to make a Tiangan Purple Fire Rune, and each of them is invaluable. When I was in Kunlun’s Field, I spent all my savings and only managed to make five.”

And then, Gu Songzi wrote down the names of the four main materials. “Tiangang Stone, Thousand-Year Purple Flame Flower, Fire Dragon Blood Incense, Ground-Level Rune Paper.”

Zhang Ruocen took the paper, thought for a while and made some changes to it.

The final four materials were, Supreme Tiangang Stone, Ten-Thousand-Year Purple Flame Flower, Saint King Purple Flame Flower, and Sky-Level Rune Paper.

Gu Songzi's heart skipped a beat after reading the paper.

The four materials he just wrote down would already cost a lot, and the materials Zhang Ruochen wrote down were of a higher class, which might cost dozens of times more.

Ordinary saint kings would go bankrupt before they could afford them.

Of course, the better the materials were, the stronger the Tiangang Purple Fire Runes would be.

Zhang Ruochen gave Blackie the paper and said, "Spend all the treasures in Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land buying all these materials. If you don't have enough saint stones, then come to me. I stored a lot of saint stones."

Zhang Ruochen had obtained the entire treasury of Blue Dragon Dynasty in Blue Dragon Void World, and it had a lot of saint stones. He had also seized lots of saint stones in Zuling Field.

This meant saint stones were one of the last things Zhang Ruochen was worried about now.

Power!

If he could gain more power using saint stones, then he would be willing to spend as many as he could.

Money also mattered a lot in Heaven World.

"I don't have enough people."

It was such an important matter, yet he had to leave it to Blackie, who wasn't dependable. Zhang Ruochen could feel that he needed many more people.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen summoned Demonic Sound and asked her to do it with Blackie. Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen also thought about whether he should ask Han Qiu, Le, and Princess White Li to come to Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land or

not. He might also be able to select some talents with great cultivation from Sacred Central Empire.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

Now, Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land was being spied on by a group of enemies he didn't know of. If he asked them to come here, they might get killed, which would be a huge loss for Zhang Ruochen.

I'll wait for a while first. I at least need to figure out who they are and how strong they are, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen took out a Honghua Vine and gave it to Gu Songzi, and then, he stepped into the inner space of the Time and Space Crystal and kept studying sword way.

He stayed in the Time and Space Crystal for a month.

With the help of Honghua Vines and a Rules Emperor Weapon, Zhang Ruochen finally added two more sword way rules to his body, which meant he had become a half-step saint king.

"I only became a half-step saint king by refining four sword way rules. I still have a long way to go before becoming an actual saint king."

Every saintly way monk needed to merge a different number of saintly way rules in their saint souls. The quality of their saintly way rules was also different, so their seeds of rules were never the same.

The seeds of rules of some monks only had twenty kinds of saintly way rules.

As for talents like the heirs, their seeds of rules had over a hundred kinds of rules.

This was why every creature who had become a half-step saint king was an individual being, and they would start to refine different saintly ways following different paths. They needed to comprehend by themselves to develop a new way.

Certainly, there were monks who had exactly the same kind and quality of saintly way rules, but it wasn't easy to meet a pair. Besides, even if they had the same seeds of rules, their

race, body constitution, character, and sex would also have an impact on their saintly way paths.

If everyone's saintly way was different, how could someone tell whether a creature was a saint king or not? And how did people classify saint kings using their power?

No monks were able to give an accurate answer. They could only extrapolate.

In Kunlun's Field, only one of the ten godly weapons, Emperor Divine Ruler, was able to measure the level of a saint king accurately.

In Heaven World, saint kings needed to go to 'Nine Steps to Sky Path' to accurately measure their levels.

Otherwise, even saint kings themselves could only approximately measure their levels. Some people would overestimate themselves, while some would do the opposite, and when it came to a battle of life or death, those who overestimated themselves would mostly get killed.

There were three hundred and seventy-two saintly way rules in Zhang Ruochen's body, including two ancient ways and several supreme saintly ways. He had an immensely powerful seed of rules, which meant it would be difficult for him to refine.

Zhang Ruochen had no idea how to become a first-step saint king, but he knew that there was a huge gap between half-step saint kings and first-step saint kings.

"I need to have ten palm way rules first, then I can refine the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and perform a mid-level saint spell."

Zhang Ruochen was only able to perform low-level saint spells so far, which was a huge disadvantage.

He could easily deal with normal talents, but if he encountered those who were ranked in the top one thousand on the 'Saints Merits Rank,' those heirs who had supreme complete bodies, this disadvantage would show.

There were more than eight thousand secular fields under Heaven World, so even if someone picked the most powerful being from each field, there would be more than eight thousand of them. And besides, the more effective the refining environment a field had, the more talents and great beings the field would produce.

People like Wu Hao and Fang Yi were ranked low among the real top-tier beings at the state of saint. To put that into perspective, they couldn't get into the 'Saints Merits Rank' at all.

Those who were ranked in the top one thousand all had extraordinary talents, body constitution, opportunities, and backgrounds.

"I haven't comprehended the rules of truth, and I still haven't refined mid-level saint spells. These are my two biggest weaknesses. Fortunately, I can still use the power of time and space to make them up, but what if I run into other people who also master the ancient ways? Like Princess Luosha...I've never actually defeated her yet."

Zhang Ruochen knew that he would run into the real talents from Heaven World, and he would be challenged by countless people, as he was ranked in first place on the 'Saints Merits Rank.'

He had to make up for his weaknesses if he didn't want to lose.

Chapter 1543 - The Eleventh Palm

Chapter 1543: The Eleventh Palm

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen spent all his energy on comprehending palm way rules, studying the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and practicing Sword Eight.

Palm way was one of the seventy-two Supreme Saintly Ways like sword way.

Palm way was listed as one of the Supreme Saintly Ways not because of how mysterious it was, but because of how many people practiced it. Many great talents studied palm way through and through and created many horrifically powerful palm techniques.

Because of the seniors' efforts and creation, the people of younger generations could practice palm way at a much higher level, which was why palm way was included in the seventy-two Supreme Saintly Ways.

The seventy-two Supreme Saintly Ways surpassed the three thousand Major Ways because the monks who practiced Supreme Saintly Ways had more potential than those who practiced Major Ways.

If a creature practiced one of the three thousand Major Ways and became one of the most top-tier beings in the world, the Major Way he practiced would attract more and more refiners, and it would probably be included in Supreme Saintly Ways.

It was either that palm way was easier to practice than sword way, or because the seed of rules was already rooted, but

Zhang Ruochen was very efficient in comprehending palm way in the following two months. He refined eight palm way rules.

He now had nine palm way rules.

“Palm way rules are the Supreme Saint Way. It might be easier to comprehend other Major Ways.”

He was one step away from having ten rules, so Zhang Ruochen was quite content.

However, he had a hard time practicing palm techniques. It took him a lot of time, yet he still hadn't finished the elementary level of the eleventh palm.

The eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm was called 'Dragon and Elephant Heaven Pass.' Once they succeeded, his palm technique would become a mid-level saint spell, and the refiner's body would also go through a tremendous change.

First of all, the refiner's masculine Qi would surge by tenfold.

Also, their body sturdiness would also be greatly improved. Each tendon would be as strong as a dragon, and each bone would be as vigorous as a giant elephant.

It was called Dragon Tendon Elephant Bone.

Refining such impressive saint spells could be beneficial to the refiners overall, improving at least one aspect of the refiner. It could even help the refiner to attain a special body characteristic.

If Zhang Ruochen could reach ultimate completion of the eleventh palm, his body would rival that of a pseudo true dragon and Extreme Masculine body.

However, it was both difficult and dangerous to practice the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

Even Death Zen Elder almost died when he was practicing the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

Zhang Ruochen only saw Wan Zhaoyao perform the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, but Wan Zhaoyi

only attained initial completion of it.

Only after attaining ultimate completion of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm could the refiner have a hundred thousand times more masculine Qi than ordinary people.

Zhang Ruochen forced a smile. “The eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm is more difficult than I thought! I reckoned I could reach the initial completion, as Wan Zhaoyi succeeded, yet it’s very hard even to get to the elementary level. Perhaps ‘Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm’ collected by the royalties misses a crucial part.

“When I was practicing the ninth and the tenth palm, I refined a saint-level dragon soul and a saint-level elephant soul into my arms to succeed. I probably need to improve the strength of my arms if I want to refine the eleventh palm.”

Zhang Ruochen did read ‘Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm’ in his last life, but that was recorded by the royalties of Sacred Central Empire.

The more advanced the technique was, the more notes there were. One palm technique might have dozens of chapters of notes, so they lacked a lot of details.

The original copy of ‘Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm’ was stored in Chaozong Pavilion in Thousand Buddha Way.

Zhang Ruochen was only a teenager back then. He would’ve never expected himself to achieve so much, and he would’ve never imagined that he would refine the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

“It’s very dangerous to practice the eleventh palm. I might ask someone first.”

Zhang Ruochen walked into the inner space of Time and Space Crystal, took out a signal flare, and sent it to Master Yintuoluo.

Whoosh!

The signal flare flew out like a trace of light.

Yintuoluo was a disciple of Buddha Emperor, and he was one of the top-tier beings in Thousand Buddha Way, so he must’ve

read the original copy of ‘Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.’

Although Zhang Ruochen joined Guanghan Field, making him a traitor to lots of monks in Kunlun’s Field, Yintuoluo might actually help Zhang Ruochen solve his confusion about ‘Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm’ because of Zhang Ruochen’s connection with Buddha Emperor and Golden Dragon.

“Has senior Yintuoluo become a supreme saint yet?”

Zhang Ruochen looked to the sky.

After a long time, Zhang Ruochen still hadn’t seen a signal flare. He couldn’t help getting anxious and upset. Was Master Yintuoluo let down by what he did? Was it because he helped Guanghan Field win the merits battle, which almost turned Kunlun’s Field into a warzone?

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and forced a smile.

It didn’t matter how other people viewed him; he felt that he’d done everything without regrets.

If Kunlun’s Field was rendered a warzone someday, Zhang Ruochen would definitely rush to the front to protect those he wanted to protect.

Suddenly, he saw a light spot in the sky.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes wide and grabbed the signal flare, thrilled.

After confirming that it was a signal flare from Master Yintuoluo, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t be happier.

That meant there were some monks from Kunlun’s Field who understood him. There were some people who knew that he was just a wanderer who was forced to leave his hometown instead of a traitor.

The signal flare was filled with small characters written by Master Yintuoluo, which perfectly explained the practicing way of the eleventh palm.

In the end, Master Yintuoluo added, “Stick to your heart.”

“Stick to your heart.”

Zhang Ruochen mumbled and squeezed the signal flare in his hand.

He did have to refine a saint-king dragon soul and a saint-king elephant soul into his arm if he wanted to complete the eleventh palm, and it'd be easier for him if he took some extremely heated and extremely masculine saint pills.

“No wonder it'll take some saint kings decades, sometimes even a century to finish a mid-class saint spell.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help admiring Wan Zhaoyi. He was indeed someone who overpowered Chen Wutian and Buddha Xinshu and became the representative of Kunlun's Field. No wonder he was able to fight Emperor Qing when he was only a saint.

“I can also do it.”

Zhang Ruochen was very confident in himself.

He suddenly heard the voice transmitted from the Crazy Alcoholic. “Zhang Ruochen, I've made the higher-class Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine. Come give it a try.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped overthinking and vanished.

He showed up right beside the Crazy Alcoholic in the next moment, smiled, and said, “My saint Qi flowed much more quickly by just smelling it.”

There was a giant bronze cauldron that the wine fragrance came from.

“Of course. Nobody has used the sarira of a Buddha Emperor to make Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine before.”

The Crazy Alcoholic smiled, waved his hands, and opened the cauldron. The fragrance surged, permeating the entire Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land and leaking out of the sacred land.

Whoosh!

A cluster of Buddha light flew out of the cauldron, falling back to Zhang Ruochen's hand, turning back to a sarira.

Zhang Ruochen found that the sarira wasn't changed much. Obviously, making Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine didn't

consume it a lot.

“It smells so good. Everyone, come have a drink.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't be more satisfied. He took out a desk and a couple of wine glasses from his space ring.

Blackie and Demonic Sound followed the wine fragrance.

Even Demonic Sound, who didn't know anything about alcohol, was tempted.

“Haha. I've made three Tiangang Purple Fire Rune. Can I have a drink as well?” Gu Songzi sat down without even asking.

The wine fragrance permeated very fast. Each trace of wine Qi was like a mad ox raging to a thousand miles away.

Wang Xu was holding a rules saint weapon, comprehending the saintly way inside a purple formation near Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. Suddenly, He opened his eyes, sniffed a bit and walked to the edge of the formation, catching a trace of wine fragrance.

“Amazing wine. Where did it come from?”

Wang Xu swallowed the wine fragrance and couldn't enjoy it more.

King Hun who was standing at the center of the formation looked into the distance as if he could see the other end of the space. He said, “Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.”

“Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land? Zhang Ruochen? Where did he get such wonderful wine?” Wang Xu sneered.

King Hun said, “Perhaps he realized he's going to die, so he took out the wine to have a drink. Wu Hao said they'll be heading to Truth Godly Palace tomorrow, and it's Su Jing who'll be their guard. He's a seventh-step saint king. Wu Hao will tell us their take-off time and route in advance. I can announce that Zhang Ruochen is basically dead.”

“I'll get his wine after we kill him.”

Wang Xu couldn't help sniffing it again and said, “Su Jing is a seventh-step saint king. It's going to be hard to deal with him.”

“Don’t worry. Lord Ziyang has invited someone who’s a ninth-step saint king, who’s more than strong enough to deal with him. Besides, there are centuries of enmity between that ninth-step saint king and Su Jing. So it wouldn’t be against the rules for him to kill Su Jing,” King Hun said.

Chapter 1544 - Take Off

Chapter 1544: Take Off

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine was ranked seventeenth in Kunlun's Field, and compared to the Buddha sarira, it was stronger. Normal half saints weren't able to handle it.

Only Zhang Ruochen, Blackie, the Crazy Alcoholic, Gu Songzi and Demonic Sound could taste it.

After sipping it, they all felt a burning sensation in their stomachs, and soon, the wine Qi merged with their bodies, entering their three meridians.

Zhang Ruochen drank three cups of the wine, and the heat gushed out of his pores. The blood in every vein in his body flowed rapidly, and the saint Qi in his meridians and saint meridians ran rampant.

Zhang Ruochen jumped up while his body made a dragon and elephant sound. He performed Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm to dissolve the heat coming from the alcohol.

Bang Bang!

He hit again and again, shaking the destruction Qi in the entire Mount Yuanxu Saint Land, forming storms.

All the half saints refining in the sacred land were astounded. They immediately walked out and looked toward the distance.

“How powerful our prince's palm power is.”

“The space structure in Heaven World is very stable, and can suppress the power of a monk, yet his highness's palm strength is still enormous.”

...

Zhang Ruochen performed all ten palms, and then, he tried to perform the eleventh palm as if he had unlimited strength.

After performing it countless times, masculine Qi gushed out of Zhang Ruochen's body. His body was engulfed in flames. He yelled, "Dragon and Elephant Heaven Pass."

He waved his palms.

His left hand wielded a dragon shadow and his right hand wielded an elephant shadow. They spun rapidly and merged with each other, forming a circle.

Boom!

Crackings sounds came, and the trees in the sacred land trembled.

Gu Songzi and the Crazy Alcoholic looked at each other as they both saw how surprised each other was.

Zhang Ruochen was only a half-step saint king, yet his palm strength was already this incredible. Even though he performed it with the help of Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine, it was still amazing.

"How powerful. Even I might be unable to defeat him with full strength," the Crazy Alcoholic said.

Gu Songzi nodded and said, "Perhaps we can't think of ourselves as his seniors anymore."

Zhang Ruochen retracted dragon Qi and elephant Qi and stopped performing. He laughed, "Great wine! Strong wine! I've learned the basics of the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm."

In the past couple of months, Zhang Ruochen had been studying the move 'Dragon and Elephant Heaven Pass.' He'd already accumulated enough, and drinking Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine was just an opportunity for him to make a breakthrough.

Now, it was just the basics.

He still had a long way to go before the initial completion, which required him to refine the dragon soul and the elephant soul at saint-king level into his arms.

As for the ultimate completion, it would only be more difficult.

The Crazy Alcoholic also had a sip of Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine. His face blushed while his eyes glinted fiercely. “How much more strength have you got?”

Zhang Ruochen thought for a second and said, “Twice as much. If I’d drunk more and the wine were stronger, I would’ve improved more.”

The Crazy Alcoholic was ecstatic, as he thought he’d found a way to make money. “How about I make more of it and sell it in the market of Guanghan Field?”

“Don’t even think about it,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine could only greatly improve saints’ power after being made with Buddha sarira. Without it, it would only work on half saints.

Half saints were nothing but the lowest-class monks in Heaven World. They didn’t have much wealth.

After subtracting the cost, they weren’t able to make enough saint stones. Instead, it would take them lots of energy and time, which could be spent on improving their cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen used Buddha sarira to make high-class Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine only to deal with the current dangers. He didn’t want to consume Buddha sarira to earn saint stones.

For one thing, he had abundant saint stones.

For the other, Buddha sariras were much more valuable to Zhang Ruochen.

The Crazy Alcoholic was a bit upset, but then, his eyes gleamed again. He said, “If you can find some supreme-saint level mad oxen marrow, its effects will only get better. Your strength might be improved several times after taking it.”

Zhang Ruochen's interest was piqued.

However, every treasure that belonged to a supreme saint had to be invaluable. No monks would be willing to sell them. Even if they actually showed up on the market, they would be purchased by the top powers instantly. Zhang Ruochen wouldn't have a chance.

Unless he had incredible luck, he wouldn't be able to buy supreme-saint level mad oxen marrow no matter how many saint stones he had.

Meow!

Zhang Ruochen heard a weird scream.

He looked to where the weird scream came from, and he only saw Blackie throw away an empty wine bottle.

"You... You drank a whole bottle. I'll expel you from Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land..."

Zhang Ruochen was so pissed that he was shivering.

The Crazy Alcoholic had only made seventeen bottles of high-grade Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine in his first batch. Every bottle was extremely precious.

Zhang Ruochen originally just wanted to let them have a couple of cups of wine, yet that owl finished a whole bottle.

The Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine was so strong that not even Zhang Ruochen dared drink too much, yet Blackie drank it like water. The alcohol hit it so strong that Blackie ran around Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land with a burning sensation in its stomach. It sometimes made a cat noise, and sometimes made a bird noise.

"I have to hide the wine now. Blackie doesn't even know how to control itself."

Just as he turned around, a girl threw herself into his arms.

Demomic Sound had also drunk a fair bit. Her face was blushing, and she was moaning with a melodious sound.

Zhang Ruochen tried to push her away, yet she kept winding on Zhang Ruochen's body.

“Why’re you pushing me away, my lord?”

Demonic Sound whimpered as she couldn’t articulate her thoughts.

She wrapped her arm around Zhang Ruochen’s neck and stroked Zhang Ruochen’s waist with the other arm, smiling seductively.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen was also turned on after drinking Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine, and after being flirted with by Demonic Sound, he had some crazy and dirty thoughts in his mind.

However, both Gu Songzi and the Crazy Alcoholic were sitting beside him, and there were loads of half saints watching him in the distance. He must control his desire if he didn’t want to humiliate himself.

“I really shouldn’t have had alcohol.”

Zhang Ruochen forced a smile, took a deep breath, and tried to calm himself down. He then pressed Demonic Sound’s back, turning her back into a Carnivorous Holy Flower.

He was only relieved after doing that.

Zhang Ruochen spent the entire day listening to Blackie scream in agony, and it didn’t stop until it was late at night. He then picked up that owl, whose body was soft, and brought it back to the saint palace at the mountainside.

The Crazy Alcoholic and Gu Songzi said goodbye to Zhang Ruochen the next day, as they needed to get back to Tongyou Sacred Domain to make the Hua Saint Pill and Six Saints to Heaven Wine for the Moon Goddess.

The Crazy Alcoholic said, “Zhang Ruochen, I’ll bring you the other eighty-three bottles of Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine when you come back to Truth Godly Palace.”

Obviously, the Crazy Alcoholic recognized Zhang Ruochen’s power and stopped treating him like a junior.

Yesterday, Gu Songzi had given the three Tiangang Purple Fire Runes to Zhang Ruochen.

Before he said goodbye, he gave Zhang Ruochen a metal ball after hesitating for a while.

“What’s this?” Zhang Ruochen asked, confused.

Gu Songzi said, “This is a great object I made using Blood Poison of Pluto. If you encounter an enemy you can’t fight against, this might be able to save your life.”

Gu Songzi wasn’t a martial warrior. He had very weak fighting strength, yet he was still willing to give something that could help him survive to Zhang Ruochen, which was precious.

Zhang Ruochen was naturally moved. He said, “Thank you. Please be careful when you’re leaving Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. There might be immensely powerful enemies preying on you.”

“Don’t worry. We have valuables to cover our forces and valuables, and they don’t know when we’re leaving Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. As long as nobody leaks our traces, we don’t need to worry about any enemy.”

Just as the Crazy Alcoholic said that, his and Gu Songzi’s bodies started to dim until they disappeared completely.

Zhang Ruochen was certainly still able to sense that they were around and walking down the mountain, until they were a thousand feet away.

“The Crazy Alcoholic is correct. As long as I can hide my body and forces using my twelve Buddhist beads, that great being from Soul Field will never know when I leave Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land and how I’m heading to Truth Godly Palace no matter how strong he is.”

Zhang Ruochen felt a bit relaxed and smiled.

Meanwhile, he heard Mu Lingxi transmitting him a voice.

“We’re right outside Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. Go get prepared. We’re heading to Truth Godly Palace now.”

Zhang Ruochen had prepared everything he needed. He made some arrangements with Blackie before he performed spatial twist to head down.

Blackie really wanted to follow them to Truth Godly Palace, but it wasn't listed. It had to guard Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land.

Guanghan Field selected six monks to go to Truth Godly Palace. They were Zhang Ruochen, Wu Hao, Mu Lingxi, Wen Shusheng, Ling Mi, and Su Qingling.

There was another tall middle-aged man guarding them to Truth Godly Palace.

That middle-aged man looked sophisticated, with a tall nose. He was holding an ancient iron saint lantern. The light emanating from the saint lantern formed an invisibility reticle that was two hundred square feet.

As long as the monks were staying inside the reticle, those who were outside wouldn't be able to see or feel them.

Zhang Ruochen walked into the reticle, stopped using space power and showed his body.

“No wonder you're the genius my father always praises. Your hiding skills are so great that even I wasn't able to detect you before you went into the reticle.”

That middle-aged man looked at Zhang Ruochen and praised him.

Zhang Ruochen was also attracted by that middle-aged man.

There weren't any powerful forces coming out of his body, yet he still caused Zhang Ruochen a lot of pressure, as if he wasn't a person but a towering saint mountain, an enormous dragon, or even a blazing sun standing in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1545 - Lord Liaosang

“What should I call you, senior?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

That middle-aged man smiled. “Su Jing, from the Nine Spirits Divine Bird Clan.”

“Also from Nine Spirits Divine Bird Clan?”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help it. He then looked to Su Qingling, and he found some similarities between Su Qingling and Su Jing.

Could it be...

Su Jing figured out what Zhang Ruochen was thinking. He laughed and said, “That's right. I'm Qingling's father. You don't need to be so polite around me since you're a good friend of Qing Ling. Just call me Uncle Jing.”

He was indeed Su Qingling's father, which meant Su Jing was Supreme Saint Nine Spirits' son.

Su Jing had an incredible status in Guanghan Field. If he were from Kunlun's Field, he would've had more power than Zhang Ruochen, the crown prince of Sacred Central Empire.

After all, Nine Spirits Divine Bird Clan ruled more than half of the bird clans in Guanghan Field. Even Sacred Central Empire wasn't that influential in its prime.

Everyone could tell that Su Jing was looking at Zhang Ruochen as if he would be his future son-in-law.

Su Qingling knew some of the arrangements in her clan, so she was so shy that she stood behind Su Jing the entire time. She shot a glimpse or two at Zhang Ruochen, but then, she would look away.

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel pressured at all. He asked, “Is Guanghan Field really struggling now, Uncle Jing? Even you

needed an invisibility lamp to cover our tracks after walking out of Shatuo Heavenly Domain.”

Zhang Ruochen heard from the Moon Goddess that the sinister power in Heaven World had been suppressing Guanghan Field. Once the monks from Guanghan Field walked out of Shatuo Heavenly Domain, they would be attacked, and even assassinated.

Zhang Ruochen originally thought that the Moon Goddess was exaggerating, as he reckoned Heaven World shouldn't be this dark.

After hearing Zhang Ruochen's question, all the other talents were disheartened.

Heaven World was boundless, yet the monks from Guanghan Field couldn't even make it out of Shatuo Heavenly Domain. How pathetic was that...

Su Jing said, “I surely have a way to protect myself, so I can still get out of Shatuo Heavenly Domain. However, I heard some great beings from Soul Field are coming at you, so I need to be careful and brought the invisibility lamp.”

Wu Hao said, “The light can cover our forces, and Uncle Jing is protecting us. We definitely won't run into danger.”

“Hopefully.”

Su Jing took out a piece of silver metal and infused his saintly way power into it. Following a clacking sound, a Refiner Dragon showed up in front of everyone.

“Let's go.”

Su Jing hopped on the back of the dragon first, and then, Zhang Ruochen, Wu Hao, and the others followed.

Truth Godly Palace was in Truth Heavenly Domain in Western Ox State, which was very far from Shatuo Heavenly Domain. Without space transportation formation, it would take Zhang Ruochen's group several years to get there.

Fortunately, there was a space transportation formation in every heavenly domain in Heaven World. In some prosperous

heavenly domains, there was a space transportation formation in every sacred domain.

The space transportation formation in Shatuo Heavenly Domain was located in Anbing Sacred Domain, which was more than three hundred thousand miles away from Red Dragon Sacred Domain. Even the Refiner Dragon would need five or six days to get there.

Mu Lingxi was sitting beside Zhang Ruochen with her eye closed. It seemed that she was comprehending saintly way, but she was actually communicating with Zhang Ruochen using her mind power. “I heard Nine Spirits Divine Bird Clan wanted to befriend you, even using marriage.”

Zhang Ruochen knew what she was worried about. He said, “Don’t overthink it. Refine and comprehend the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix to become a saint king first.”

Mu Lingxi couldn’t help grinding her teeth, as she felt like Zhang Ruochen was trying to change the subject.

And then, Zhang Ruochen said to her, “I hate being united through marriage.”

Mu Lingxi felt that Zhang Ruochen got kind of emotional. She immediately looked to him. Zhang Ruochen looked a bit aloof but dazed as if he was recalling something.

“That’s right. Both his union through marriage with Chi Yao and Sister Chen ended in tragedy. I was also a victim of union through marriage.”

Mu Lingxi grabbed Zhang Ruochen’s hands, and the warmth from her palm healed Zhang Ruochen’s pain.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and looked at her. He looked more and more amiable. He smiled and tried to say something.

Suddenly...

Boom!

The ground shook.

Two saint power storms rushed toward the Refiner Dragon from the front and back, making earth-shattering noises.

Wu Hao smiled weirdly, sitting on the back of the Refiner Dragon.

Su Jing looked solemn. He put back his invisibility lamp, opened his wings and flew up.

Meanwhile, he reached his left hand downwards, and six traces of saint Qi gushed out.

The six traces of saint Qi wound around Zhang Ruochen, Wu Hao, Mu Lingxi, and the others like six threads, bringing them up into the sky.

Bang!

The Refiner Dragon was crushed into pieces after being hit by two bolts of saint Qi.

Even Zhang Ruochen was horrified after seeing that.

The Refiner Dragon could rival a saint king, and it was sturdier than most thousand-patterns saint weapons, yet it was dismantled like bean dregs.

What was more surprising was that the ground around them also ascended as they flew up, turning into mountains and surrounding them.

Zhang Ruochen looked up, and he saw a giant fierce head above the mountains, and there were thorns all over the head.

It was a giant beast that was as tall as the sky, looking at them as if they were crickets in a bowl.

Horrific saint might gushed out of that head, covering the sky and land. Wen Shusheng, Ling Mi, and Su Qingling, who were relatively weaker, went pale.

Su Jing yelled, "Lord Liaosang."

A thunderous voice came from above. "Su Jing, you killed my son, Yin Ji, two hundred years ago. Today, I'll avenge him by eating you alive."

Su Jing found it bizarre, as Lord Liaosang hadn't seemed to have come for revenge.

The incident happened two hundred years ago. Why would he pick today?

And besides, they were still in Shatuo Heavenly Domain, which meant Lord Liaosang was taking a huge risk coming at him.

Su Jing said, “We’re very careful with our tracks, and I even have the invisibility lamp to cover our forces. How did you find us?”

“No need to explain something to a dead man.”

A giant black hand extended out of the top of the mountains and pressed down.

Everyone except Su Jing lost their sight, as they were all petrified by the saintly way power from that giant hand. They couldn’t even breathe.

“Damn it. Shang Ziyan promised me he’d only kill Zhang Ruochen. Now it seems Lord Liaosang is going to kill us all.”

Wu Hao had known that Shang Ziyan wasn’t an honorable person and that he shouldn’t easily believe what he said, but he didn’t expect him to be this ruthless.

Boom!

Su Jing’s body bulged, turning into a Nine Spirits Divine Bird glowing with nine colors of saint light, rushing toward the mountain at the northwestern side. They went through the mountains after a huge tumble.

“We’ve finally made it out.” Su Lingxi took a long breath.

“Not that easy perhaps.” Zhang Ruochen stood on Nine Spirits Divine Bird’s back, looked at the sky and couldn’t be more serious.

The entire sky was covered by dark clouds, and there was a glass dome engulfed in golden light floating above the clouds. There were rule engravings on the glass dome, which covered the area of several hundred square miles.

From the outside, the area looked exactly the same with sunshine and woods.

However, the earth was being shattered while saint power tumbled inside the glass dome.

The Nine Spirits Divine Bird couldn't make it out of the glass dome. It hit an invisible wall as it flew to the edge.

Bang!

Thickly-dotted saintly way rules emerged on the light wall. They spread from the ground and connected with the glass dome in the sky.

The Nine Spirits Godly Bird's body quickly shrunk and turned back into that of a human male. He looked at the saintly way rules in front of him and said, "Sky-Sealing Glass Dome."

Su Jing turned around and yelled at Lord Liaosang, "There's no way you obtain a valuable like Sky-Sealing Glass Dome. Who asked you to come kill us? Aren't you afraid you'll be punished by death for disobeying the heavenly rules?"

There was a layer of evil clouds around Lord Liaosang. He said sarcastically, "First of all, I came here to kill in order to avenge my son. The heavenly rules can't do anything about it!

"Secondly, I have Sky-Sealing Glass Dome to block the sight. Who will know that it's I who killed you?"

Chapter 1546 - Dangers Everywhere

Chapter 1546: Dangers Everywhere

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Lord Liaosang was the hierarch of an ancient sect from Ruiya Field. He was a ninth-step saint king.

Ruiya Field had been suppressing Guanghai Field for a long time. The feud between the two fields was ancient and deep. Two hundred years ago, Su Jing went to the Merits Battlefield, and he was suppressed and humiliated by the son of Lord Liaosang. He had to kill Yin Ji for self-protection, and the grudge between them dated back from then.

Lord Liaosang went to Shatuo Heaven Domain after that, trying to avenge his son, but Supreme Saint Nine Spirits wasn't someone who he could easily mess with, as he was one of the strongest supreme saints, so he warded Lord Liaosang off.

Since then, nobody had brought it up.

After two hundred years, Lord Liaosang suddenly came to Shatuo Heaven Domain seeking revenge, and he even brought the Sky-Sealing Glass Dome, which looked very suspicious.

Wu Hao was very anxious, as he would immediately be killed by Su Jing if he found out he was the defector.

Fortunately, Su Jing was focusing on Lord Liaosang, so he hadn't had the time to think about how exposed their trace.

“Although the Sky-Sealing Dome was a true treasure to seal the sky and land, I've prepared something to deal with it too.”

Su Jing was the king of a large land, after all, so he still looked pretty calm facing an enemy like Lord Liaosang.

Lord Liaosang guffawed. “The Sky-Sealing Dome was used to bring about heavenly mysteries on the space. Even supreme saints will find it difficult to break it. Do you think your cultivation is enough to break it?”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the saint Qi in his body and utilized the space power. He wielded his fingers, and he tore the space apart a little bit in front of him.

As the crack approached, the saintly way rules flowing on the reticle gleamed with saint light, closing the space crack.

“Even space power can’t tear it apart.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately retracted his saintly way power and stepped back.

Lord Liaosang guffawed. “Your space attainment is far from enough to break the Sky-Sealing Glass Dome, kiddo.”

“Although the Sky-Sealing Glass Dome has the power to trap a supreme saint, it also depends on who’s the one using it. I reckon I can break it since you’re the one operating it,” Su Jing said.

“You dare look down upon me?”

Lord Liaosang was furious, standing in the evil clouds.

Su Jing’s wings spread again, and they now spanned more than a hundred feet.

There were nine different colors of light spots on the feathers.

The light spots were nine feathers.

Whoosh!

The nine feathers detached from Su Jing’s wings, floated in the air, and became larger and larger, giving out terrific supreme saint forces, forming nine whirlpools.

Lord Liaosang yelled, “The original nine feathers of Supreme Saint Nine Spirits!”

“Break!”

Su Jing mobilized all his saint power, and there were dozens of traces of lightning flowing around his body. He put his hands together, controlling the nine enormous feathers as if they were nine blades, slashing the reticle.

Saintly way rules emerged on the reticle again.

Sizzle!

Su Jing was mobilizing the original nine feathers that belonged to Supreme Saint Nine Spirits which contained the saintly way rules of Supreme Saint Nine Spirits, and on each feather were tens of thousands of rules flowing.

Gradually, the reticle formed by saintly way rules was actually cracked, and they could see the outside.

Su Jing knew it wasn't easy for him to control the original nine feathers. His veins were popping, and his eyes turned red. "Run!"

Everyone knew that Su Jing wouldn't be able to hold it for too long, and that crack torn by the original nine feathers was the only chance they could survive it.

Run!

Led by Wu Hao, Ling Mi, Mu Lingxi, and Wen Shusheng all performed their body techniques and rushed out.

Su Qingling stared at Su Jing and said, "Father, what about you? Come with us..."

Su Jing also wanted to get out with them, but when he looked at the original nine feathers, he looked bitter and helpless. He could barely sustain that crack with all his strength. If he tried to run out, the crack would close up.

He was the only one who couldn't try to run.

Howl!

Lord Liaosang yelled from the back.

Su Jing said, "Zhang Ruochen, take her and leave."

Zhang Ruochen gave Su Jing a deep look, nodded, grabbed Su Qingling's left shoulder and rushed out with her.

Whoosh!

The crack disappeared.

Zhang Ruochen took a look behind him. He saw a blue mountain behind him, and it was peaceful and tranquil. It didn't look like there were two great beings fighting each other at all.

“Father... Father... Zhang Ruochen, let me go.”

Su Qingling teared up. She clenched her teeth, mobilized her saint power and tried to get out of Zhang Ruochen's grasp.

He had to let her shoulder go.

Su Qingling then rushed forward, but she quickly hit an invisible space wall.

Bang!

Su Qingling kept making attacks and palm prints, and using saint weapons, hitting the transparent space wall, but she couldn't break it at all.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to talk her out of it. Instead, he took out a signal flare, wrote a help-seeking message and sent it out.

They were still very close to Red Dragon Sacred Domain, so he was asking Supreme Saint Manjian for help.

However, it only flew a couple thousand feet before it was slowed down and stopped completely. A giant hand formed by purple mist showed up and grabbed it.

“I knew there was more to it.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at that purple hand, as he had expected something like that to happen.

He just didn't know who he was.

Both Ling Mi and Wen Shusheng looked anxious. They both performed secret techniques, trying to ask for help from the great beings from Guanghan Field, yet they were all stopped by an invisible force.

“There's no use. None of you are surviving today!”

King Hun laughed hoarsely as his body emerged. Half of the body was flesh and blood while the other half was soul. He was wearing a large purple cape that was waving in the air.

King Hun was holding a bone saint scepter, and he abruptly stuck it into the ground.

And then, a purple formation with a diameter of more than a thousand feet showed up, centering on the bone scepter, covering Zhang Ruochen, Wu Hao, Mu Lingxi, Ling Mi, Wen Shusheng, and Su Qingling.

There were soul shadows on the purple formation making shrill sounds.

Zhang Ruochen was the only one who could still stay calm. He stared at the bizarre man standing at the center of the formation and asked, “Are you the one who wants to kill me?”

“Not me, but someone far stronger than I am.”

King Hun’s voice echoed as if there were hundreds of him talking at the same time.

There was mind attack power in the voice. Mu Lingxi, Ling Mi, and Su Qingling, who had weaker mind power, had huge headaches, falling.

“How great the mind power is...”

Zhang Ruochen also felt a mild headache. He immediately bit his tongue, took out the Buddha sarira and infused it with his saint Qi.

Whoosh!

The Buddha sarira gleamed with golden light, and thousands of Buddha sounds quickly suppressed the sound of King Hun.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Golden Dragon Carriage, went in, and said, “The enemies are very well-prepared and want to kill us all. Get into the Golden Dragon Carriage and get out now.”

“That guy is someone from Soul Field called King Hun. We can’t fight against him. Follow Zhang Ruochen and get out of here as soon as possible.” Wen Shusheng was worried that Su

Qingling was reluctant to leave, so he grabbed her and got into the Golden Dragon Carriage together.

And then, Wu Hao, Mu Lingxi, and Ling Mi all boarded, and under their control, the Golden Dragon Carriage made deafening dragon sounds.

Whoosh!

Two circles of saint power gushed out, and the Golden Dragon Carriage's Second-Yao Complete Power was triggered. The great saintly way power twisted the purple formation as if it could tear it apart.

King Hun smiled and said, "Wu Hao, what're you waiting for. Are you really going to sit by and let Zhang Ruochen run away?"

"What do you mean?"

Wen Shusheng, Ling Mi, Su Qingling, and Mu Lingxi were all dazed hearing that.

Wu Hao looked irritated, as he thought King Hun shouldn't have exposed him, but now that he was exposed, he didn't have any other option.

Once he made the wrong choice, he could only spiral further and further into the darkness.

Boom!

Wu Hao stared at Zhang Ruochen, rushed forward and tried to hit Zhang Ruochen's back with his palms.

Wu Hao was very decisive and he did that almost at the second when King Hun exposed him.

And besides, Wu Hao was standing right behind Zhang Ruochen, and his palm print could hit Zhang Ruochen instantly.

However...

Wu Hao only managed to hit a shadow of Zhang Ruochen.

"How is that possible... No way..."

Wu Hao looked horrified, as he hadn't managed to hit Zhang Ruochen. Instead, he lost his balance as he didn't retract his power in time and stumbled.

Meanwhile, he heard Zhang Ruochen say, "I knew there was a defector among us the second Lord Liaosang showed up. How could I not beware of you?"

Wu Hao tried to use his protection rune to save himself.

"Die!" Zhang Ruochen yelled furiously.

He hit Wu Hao's back and slapped him onto the ground, nailing him in the huge pit, and Wu Hao started to bleed non-stop.

At the next moment, Zhang Ruochen stood back in the Golden Dragon Carriage, took a look at the pit, and rode the Golden Dragon Carriage toward King Hun, who was standing at the center of the formation.

Chapter 1547 - Light Way

Chapter 1547: Light Way

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Boom!

Nine overbearing dragon shadows dragged the carriage, and two layers of saint power ripples permeated. As the carriage moved forward, its saint might became stronger.

Even King Hun, who was standing at the center of the purple formation, found it hard to balance himself.

King Hun's purple veil was lifted, showing a handsome face with green eyebrows and glinting eyes. He smiled. "Great carriage. Unfortunately, you're not strong enough to wield its real power. Second Yao Complete Power can't hurt me at all."

"Dark."

"Limit."

"Hard."

"Horror."

King Hun mumbled four words.

And then, he grabbed the white bone saint scepter, and his mind power gushed out like a storm.

The purple formation under his feet was rolled like a piece of paper, crushing toward the Golden Dragon Carriage. Suddenly, the carriage was slowed down while shaking fiercely.

"That person's mind power is probably at level fifty-six now."

Zhang Ruochen stood at the front of the carriage, holding his Buddha sarira, and he felt intimidated.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't figure out who would ask someone so powerful to kill him.

However, King Hun was obviously using most of his mind power to operate the purple formation which could cover the fact that he was trying to kill Zhang Ruochen and the others here.

Which was why his attack power was discounted.

Wen Shusheng knew King Hun's power very well. He said with his face paled, "Even if we team up, he can annihilate us in a second. Let's just get out of the purple formation first."

"Do you really think you can survive me? A bunch of kids who haven't even become saint kings yet?" King Hun smiled gloomily.

Each inscription on the purple formation had destructive power.

Zhang Ruochen looked up, and all he could see was purple light. The sky was covered by lightning. Even Wen Shusheng, Ling Mi, and Su Qingling felt desperate.

"Break." Zhang Ruochen mobilized the space power and pointed at the sky. The space around his finger shook fiercely, which cracked the space and clashed with the purple formation.

Boom!

The purple formation crumbled at the next moment, and the Golden Dragon Carriage rushed out of the purple mist.

The formation was still intact on the ground.

King Hun was standing at the center of the formation and said, "He managed to get out. No wonder he's the Time and Space Descendant."

Before the Golden Dragon Carriage got far, the ground rose, following a rumbling sound. Soon, the mountains that looked like bamboo shoots stopped the Golden Dragon Carriage from running forward.

"Other great beings?"

Everyone in the Golden Dragon Carriage was in despair.

There was a woman in white on each of the two stone mountains. They were both wearing golden masks, and their saintly way ripples were both at saint king level.

Although he hadn't fought them yet, Zhang Ruochen could feel the dangers coming out of them. Each of them was at least as powerful as Sword Saint Jiuyou.

They were Tian Shu and Tian Miao, who followed Shang Ziyan.

They were definitely extraordinary, as they could follow the young leader from Merits Godly Palace. They at least had the talent and body constitution like Su Qingling and Ling Mi. Being able to fight those one level superior to them was the basic requirement.

Wang Xu walked out of the two stone mountains and smiled. "King Hun, you've been practicing for so many years, yet you still have a hard time taking down a half-step saint king. Even I feel ashamed for you."

Wang Xu was also wearing a mask.

"I've underestimated him. He's someone who's ranked in first place on the 'Saints Merits Rank,' not someone I can slaughter like a cat," King Hun said.

Wang Xu could tell that King Hun was smearing him as well.

After all, he was only ranked seventh place on the 'Saints Merits Rank'.

Wang Xu said, "The 'Saints Merits Rank' is based on merits, not power. Those who have more merits don't necessarily have stronger power. Those who focus on practicing don't bother with the rank. There're many great beings who rarely go to the battlefield to collect merits."

Zhang Ruochen looked at the man in front of him. It seemed he was also on the 'Saints Merits Rank'.

They're wearing masks when they want to kill someone. They must have some solid backgrounds. Perhaps they're worried

they might be punished by the heavenly rules if they fail, Zhang Ruochen thought.

“Why don’t you let me test Zhang Ruochen’s power before you kill them.” Wang Xu smiled.

Zhang Ruochen said, “There’s going to be a huge price to pay if you want to test my power.”

“Really? I’ll have a try.”

Wang Xu’s body started to dim.

Wang Xu had wielded the blade against Zhang Ruochen’s neck, horrifically fast.

“Light Way.” Zhang Ruochen felt intimidated.

Light Way was one of the seventy-two Supreme Sainly Ways. It was said that if a monk managed to practice it to the perfect level, he could be as fast as light, after which even space and time would find it difficult to suppress him. It was the strongest speed type saintly way.

Few monks were able to comprehend Light Way, but once one did, he could defeat almost everyone at the same level with one strike.

Speed was the most difficult to conquer among all the techniques.

Light Way was the fastest.

Zhang Ruochen remained alert. He immediately performed spatial move and dodged Wang Xu’s blade and pointed forward with his finger.

He didn’t use the Abyss Ancient Sword because it would only slow Zhang Ruochen down as he fought someone like Wang Xu.

Even if he was just slightly slower, he might be killed by Wang Xu.

Whoosh, Whoosh!

After seven moves...

Zhang Ruochen seized a chance to point at the blade, knocking Wang Xu away.

The whole fight lasted for half a breath's time. Even Su Qingling and the others were only able to see some shadows. As for Mu Lingxi, she had great sight after getting the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix, yet she only managed to see how they tried to attack each other, and there was no way she could defend herself against any of those moves.

They all felt pretty let down after witnessing that.

They were all the best talents from Guanghan Field who took great pride in themselves. However, they might be killed by one strike from that masked man.

“Zhang Ruochen is able to take several moves from such an incredible person, and he managed to overpower him. He's indeed the pride of Guanghan Field. It probably takes ten thousand years to have such a great being in Guanghan Field.”

“That masked man is definitely someone who's ranked high on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’. Who can that be?”

“Less than ten on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ can be that fast, and he is quite proficient in using blades. It's easy to guess.” Wen Shusheng's eyes glinted.

Zhang Ruochen and Wang Xu were still standing in the same spots as if they'd never moved.

Wang Xu twisted his arm and smiled. “You didn't let me down. You can indeed rival me. However, that was only a trial.”

“I look forward to your real power,” Zhang Ruochen said.

After attaining Five Elements Chaotic Body and God's Destiny, Zhang Ruochen was able to defeat everyone at the same level. Even Qiu Yu, who was deemed to be the top among his peers, couldn't survive three of his moves.

However, Wang Xu was the first one at the same level who intimidated him.

Although Princess Luosha was also formidable, she had better cultivation than Zhang Ruochen, and she didn't want him

dead. When Zhang Ruochen was fighting her, he didn't feel that it was dangerous at all.

The universe was boundless, and Heaven World had more than eight thousand fields. Those who were ranked among the top were all forces to be reckoned with.

Wang Xu smiled and said, "I've watched every clip of your fight in Zuling Field, and I've studied every single one of your moves. I know how to fight and what your trump cards are, but you know nothing about me."

Wang Xu wasn't an arrogant person. Instead, he thought highly of Zhang Ruochen, "You were only an absolute saint when you were in Zuling Field, which means you just became a half-step saint king. As for me, I've been a half-step saint king for three years. I have more saintly way rules in my body, so you can't perform mid-level saint spells. This is my second advantage."

Zhang Ruochen's fighting spirit couldn't be higher. He smiled and said, "So what?"

"You don't understand. The fact that I talk about advantages means you can rival me. This is incredible!" Wang Xu said.

King Hun got a bit impatient. "Why are you talking so much with a dead man?"

Wang Xu shot King Hun a glare and said, "You don't understand either. This is called showing my enemy respect. After all, it's exhilarating to run into someone who can rival me. How do you want to die, Zhang Ruochen?"

Chapter 1548 - The Power of Mid-Level Saint Spells

Chapter 1548: The Power of Mid-Level Saint Spells

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Su Qingling said in the Golden Dragon Carriage, “Do you really think we can’t fight back?”

“Ugh.”

Wang Xu looked disdainful as he didn’t even consider Su Qingling a threat.

Obviously, Su Qingling had some sort of trump card that could save her life. She mobilized her saint Qi, gathering it in her back, and then, mysterious engravings emerged on her back, forming a rune.

Boom!

And then, an overpowering saintly way force gushed out of her body.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes gleamed and whispered, “It’s a Saint Figure Rune, and an exceptional one. No wonder she’s a granddaughter of Supreme Saint Nine Spirits.”

The power of Saint Figure Runes wasn’t able to deal with pinnacle saint kings like Lord Liaosang, but they were more than enough to fight against ordinary saint kings.

Both Wen Shuhsheng and Ling Mi also had Saint Figure Runes, so they immediately triggered them.

Soon, the power coming out of their bodies completely suppressed Wang Xu, Tian Shu, and Tian Miao.

However, Wang Xu wasn't scared at all. Instead, he chuckled, "How naïve you all are. Do you really think we haven't thought that you'll carry Saint Figure Runes?"

"So everyone has Saint Figure Runes now. It's not that easy for you to kill us." Wen Shusheng's Saint Figure Rune formed a saint tree, and the silver light coming out of it flowed like water in rivers.

"Sorry, but I don't have a Saint Figure Rune," Wang Xu said.

Su Qingling, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi all looked confused. Their enemy entered the 'Saints Merits Rank,' which meant he must be at a high status. How could he not be carrying a Saint Figure Rune?

And besides, how was he still so calm without a Saint Figure Rune?

Weird!

It was just weird!

Meanwhile, Tian Shu and Tian Mao both laughed as if they were laughing at their ignorance, and then, they looked up at the sky.

The dark clouds covered the sky completely.

Zhang Ruochen was also staring at the sky, and he located a 'star.' "That's a circular stamp..."

Whoosh!

The light hit Su Qingling, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi, then their bodies all made a cracking sound.

Their Saint Figure Runes were all crushed, turning into light spots.

Wen Shusheng took a look at the star in the sky and looked to Wang Xu. "I know who you are now. You're from Merits Godly Palace."

Zhang Ruochen didn't know much about Heaven World, but he reckoned Wen Shusheng was correct as only merit valuables made by Merits Godly Palace were able to crush Saint Figure Runes.

Zhang Ruochen's Saint Figure Rune was destroyed when he entered the Merits Battlefield.

"You guys are relentless. Are you targeting Guanghan Field?" Su Qing's eyes glared at Wang Xu.

Wang Xu sneered and said, "We're just here to kill Zhang Ruochen. It has nothing to do with you guys, but now that you've learned something you shouldn't have, we have to kill you all."

Boom!

The next moment, glowing godly prints emerged on Wang Xu's body, and lots of saintly way rules gushed out of his body, forming a True Shadow that was more than ten feet tall.

After the True Shadow emerged, the saint Qi in the heaven and earth gathered toward Wang Xu, making the energy ripples on Wang Xu stronger and stronger.

Zhang Ruochen also formed his True Shadow.

His True Shadow was the body of Unmovable Emperor Ming, and its force wasn't weaker than that of Wang Xu, and it kept surging.

They were already in a fight.

There were dozens of electric snakes and fiery dragons in the space around them, and they made clashing sounds.

Wang Xu found that his True Shadow was at a disadvantage. He stopped smiling and got more serious. "Zhang Ruochen, which book of 'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank' did you practice?"

"'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank?'" Zhang Ruochen said.

Wang Xu said, "'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank' documents eighty-one kinds of extraordinary books, and Kunlun's Field has six of them. There's no way you've never heard of them. Besides, if it weren't for a divine technique on the 'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank,' how could you be so powerful as only a half-step saint king?"

Zhang Ruochen was a complete stranger to what Wang Xu said.

Zhang Ruochen only knew the Six Extraordinary Books from Kunlun's Field, all of which were pinnacle techniques, and many famous refining techniques came from those Six Extraordinary Books.

As for the 'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank,' he had never heard of it.

Wang Xu realized that Zhang Ruochen really didn't know what the 'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank' was, so he continued, "I guarantee you've practiced one of the Extraordinary Books from the 'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank'. The more powerful the techniques you practice, the more strength you have, and so it is with your True Shadow."

A monk's fighting power didn't only depend on his or her body constitution, but was also subject to the techniques and saint spells he or she practiced.

They were equally important.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Are you saying the technique I practiced is on the 'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank'?"

"Of course."

Wang Xu stopped using his True Shadow against Zhang Ruochen as he found that Zhang Ruochen's True Shadow got stronger and stronger as if it could completely suppress his.

If he went on with it, he might be crushed by Zhang Ruochen before they actually made a move.

"First move of Broken Space, Space Slay."

Wang Xu dashed toward Zhang Ruochen like a fierce storm, carrying his True Shadow.

He didn't mobilize the rules of light, so he wasn't very fast.

However, his Xu Moon Blade gleamed brighter and brighter.

Broken Space Blade Techniques was a mid-level saint spell refined by Wang Xu. It had seven moves in total, and each one was mysteriously powerful, unfathomable, and capricious.

With this set of blade techniques, Wang Xu was invincible on the merits battlefield. Even some saint kings needed to hide from him.

“He’s performing a mid-level saint spell. Is he trying to kill me as fast as possible?”

The power of mid-level saint spells was much greater than low-level saint spells, so even Zhang Ruochen felt pressured by Wang Xu’s blade.

Zhang Ruochen activated his Hundred Saints Blood Armor, raised his arms and wielded a dragon and an elephant, following their deafening sounds.

Boom!

The blade light hit Zhang Ruochen’s palms.

The power from the blade spread through Zhang Ruochen’s entire body, before it roamed the space around him, crushing two mountains that it touched.

Tian Shu and Tian Miao immediately landed on the ground, performing body techniques.

They both looked surprised. “These two are just half-step saint kings, yet their power can already rival ours.”

“Perhaps only our Lord can beat them at the same level.”

Wang Xu laughed, floating in the air. “Your palm technique is so impressive that it warded off the first move of Broken Space Blade Techniques, but the power of mid-level spells isn’t as weak as you think.”

“Second move of Broken Space Techniques, Chaotic Space.”

Twenty-one saintly way rules flew out of Wang Xu’s body, merging with his blade techniques and turning into seven fragmented shadows.

His Xu Moon Blade looked like a black crescent, giving out a chill and slashing toward Zhang Ruochen at a cunning angle.

It was as if he wielded the blade seven times.

When he performed the first move, Wang Xu only merged it with fourteen saintly way rules, but in the second move, he used twenty-one saintly way rules, which made it much more powerful than the first move.

Zhang Ruochen yelled and activated the second level of the Hundred Saints Blood Armor, and then, the power of a hundred mid-level saints merged with his own power.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

Seven levels of blade power fell, knocking Zhang Ruochen back, following a deafening clacking sound.

Zhang Ruochen felt extreme pain in his arms after holding off that move, and his blood Qi was in a turmoil.

I'm indeed at a disadvantage without a mid-level saint spell. If I can complete the eleventh palm, Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm will become a mid-level saint spell, which can definitely overpower his Broken Space Blade Technique, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm after the ultimate completion of the tenth palm was one of the most top-tier low-level saint spells, yet it still couldn't compare with mid-level spells.

After all, mid-level spells could merge with saintly way rules.

"The third move of Broken Space Blade will only be more forceful."

Zhang Ruochen decided to stop Wang Xu from performing his blade techniques. He summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword and performed spatial move, and at the next moment, he showed up behind Wang Xu and wielded his sword.

Inscriptions emerged on the Abyss Ancient Sword, gleaming.

Wang Xu then mobilized rules of light and turned right.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen hit the purple formation, and the sword light tore the formation slightly.

King Hun murmured, "No."

King Hun didn't think Zhang Ruochen had the ability to break the purple formation, but once the formation was cracked, there would be saintly way ripples spreading out.

If a monk walked by and sensed it, this assassination plan would fail.

“Seal.”

King Hun pressed the bone saint scepter, and his mind power spread like waves, sealing the formation.

The purple formation only became larger and more stable.

Zhang Ruochen knew that his enemies were all great beings, so they wouldn't give him a chance to run away.

He had to spread the news, hoping someone would come help them.

Zhang Ruochen used all his strength to break the purple formation and let out a trace of sword way destruction Qi because he wanted to spread the news.

“We're in the north of Red Dragon Sacred Land, which is within Kuli Sacred Domain, belonging to Uncle Ling Xiu.

“Perhaps other supreme saints aren't able to detect my sword Qi, but Uncle Ling Xiu is a mind power supreme saint. Perhaps he'll be able to do that.”

Zhang Ruochen put half his hope in Ling Xiu.

As for the other half, he put it in himself. He might actually stand a chance escaping with Mu Lingxi and the others.

Chapter 1549 - Crush Him

Chapter 1549: Crush Him

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

King Hun yelled, “Can you please take him down as quickly as possible? If you can’t, team up with Tian Shu and Tian Miao.”

“Shut up! This is a fight between me and Zhang Ruochen. I’ll kill anyone who dares interfere.”

Wang Xu was very proud, and he knew that he must kill Zhang Ruochen himself to defend his reputation.

Wang Xu was the youngest son of a God from Ruiya Field, so even Tian Miao and Tian Shu didn’t dare offend him. They could only stand aside, watching the fight.

Actually, Wang Xu also wanted to finish the fight as fast as possible, yet Zhang Ruochen was stronger than he thought. He wielded the Broken Space Blade against him twice, yet he didn’t even touch Zhang Ruochen.

Although there were seven moves in Broken Space Blade Techniques, the number of saintly way rules in his body only allowed him to perform the first three moves.

The latter four moves needed lots of saintly way rules to perform.

“Zhang Ruochen, you have Hundred Saints Blood Armor that can mobilize the power of a hundred saints. I’ll use my Godly Blood Battle Suit, which is stronger than your Hundred Saints Blood Armor.”

Wang Xu opened all his apertures, and black saint light shone upon his saint suit. Blood-red engravings emerged on the saint

suit, releasing dimming saint might.

“Don’t you have the so-called invincible Sword Technique of Time? I’ll give you the chance to perform it now, otherwise, you won’t have it to perform again!” Wang Xu was holding his blade, wearing a blood-red battle suit.

“If I perform Sword Technique of Time, you won’t have any chance to use your blade again,” Zhang Ruochen said while taking out a wine bag that was made of the skin of a saint beast. He opened the bag and had a drink.

Grunt!

The Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine went into his system, and the heat spread. A rumbling sound came out of Zhang Ruochen’s body as if his meridians and veins turned into a roaring river.

Humh!

Wang Xu mobilized twenty-eight blade way rules, merging them with his sword technique.

“Third move of Broken Space, Space Split.”

After drinking the Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine, Zhang Ruochen’s eyes glinted madly. His strength surged as he grabbed the Abyss Ancient Sword and performed Sword Seven at the ultimate complete level.

Boom!

The blade and the sword clashed with each other, and countless traces of blade Qi and sword Qi spread.

“He warded it off again. How did Zhang Ruochen get so strong? Did he use Way of Truth?” Wang Xu Refused to believe that Zhang Ruochen was able to ward off his third move using only Sword Seven.

Mow!

Wang Xu then heard oxen scream from Zhang Ruochen’s body. He immediately understood. “It’s the wine’s power...”

After a short stalemate, Zhang Ruochen knocked Wang Xu away using his arms.

Howl!

He raised his head and yelled. Countless mad oxen phantoms rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's mouth. Zhang Ruochen rushed forward and fully utilized the power of the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Before he wielded the sword, the sword Qi made the air around it tumble.

Wang Xu didn't dare confront Zhang Ruochen directly, so he had to mobilize light rules to dodge Zhang Ruochen's move.

Zhang Ruochen's sword techniques were like waves, and there wasn't any pause among them. After more than ten moves, Wang Xu started to have a hard time dodging them.

The sixteenth move.

Sizzle!

The tip of the Abyss Ancient Sword touched Wang Xu's body, scratching it and making an ear-piercing metal sound.

Although it only scratched his body, the power in the sword was incredible as it knocked Wang Xu away like artillery fire. He hit the light wall of the purple formation.

King Hun was shocked, as he had never seen Wang Xu suffer from such a great loss. No matter how powerful his enemy was, Wang Xu could manage to kill him with one strike.

"Zhang Ruochen's too powerful. Is he really a half-step saint king?"

"Even our lord might not be able to overpower him if they're at the same level."

Both Tian Shu and Tian Miao held their breath and felt pressured. They both took out a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon so that they were prepared for anything to come.

Wen Shusheng had figured out Wang Xu's identity, so he was more thrilled than everyone else. "Priest. He's indeed our priest. After this fight, nobody in Heaven World will ever doubt his power again."

Ling Mi was always quiet and aloof, but now, her hope was ignited. “Please win, priest. Once you defeat Wang Xu, nobody will look down upon Guanghan Field anymore.”

Wang Xu landed on the ground with his black hair waving in the air. “Zhang Ruochen, you’ve ignited my fighting spirits.”

Whoosh Whoosh!

Wang Xu rushed forward again, trailing dozens of shadows and focusing all his power into his Xu Moon Blade.

“Take another strike.”

It was still a move from Broken Space Blade Technique.

However, Wang Xu mobilized Rule of Truth, strengthening the power in the Xu Moon Blade and making it faster.

Even second-step saint kings might not be able to ward off the power.

Zhang Ruochen had no intention of confronting that move directly. He held the Abyss Ancient Sword in his right hand while pressing the space with his left hand, trying to ward off Xu Moon Blade with his palm.

“Is he being suicidal? Wang Xu has mobilized Rule of Truth. Even if he’s wearing Hundred Saints Blood Armor, his arm might be crushed into pieces.” Tian Shu was confused.

Wen Shusheng, Ling Mi, and Su Qingling were all worried. Their eyes popped while they tensed their muscles as if the space was frozen.

Just as the Xu Moon Blade was about to strike Zhang Ruochen’s palm, space ripples emerged in front of his palm, turning the Xu Moon Blade toward King Hun, who was standing nearby.

King Hun, Wang Xu, Tian Shu, and Tian Miao were all dazed and performed their skills to deal with it.

King Hun drew dozens of engravings in the sky which formed a shield, warding off the blade Qi coming from Wang Xu.

As for Wang Xu, he threw away the Xu Moon Blade, used light rules, and showed up above Zhang Ruochen.

Tian Shu and Tian Miao both used a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon to help Wang Xu attack Zhang Ruochen.

“Three-on-one? Aren’t you shameless?”

Mu Lingxi didn’t want to see Zhang Ruochen being encircled. She immediately drove the Golden Dragon Carriage toward Tian Shu and Tian Miao. She knew they were both saint kings, but she would still do that without regrets.

Even if she could stall them for a second, it would be easier for Zhang Ruochen to fight them.

Wen Shusheng and Ling Mi also understood this. They then teamed up with Mu Lingxi.

Wen Shusheng slashed his wrist, and saint blood dripped. He pressed the ground with his palm and groveled, “God, I worship you. Everything grows.”

Whoosh!

Ancient trees grew from the blood-red ground, and vines that looked like dragons surged into the sky, blocking the ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons wielded by Tian Shu and Tian Miao.

Ling Mi turned into a glittering jade, hitting the iron token from Tia Shu.

They managed to stop the two ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons.

Meanwhile, the fight between Zhang Ruochen and Wang Xu was heating up. One of them mobilized Rule of Truth, performing blade technique that had tremendous power, while the other one was mobilizing space rules, performing either spatial move or space twist.

Both of them were highly focused. If either was distracted by anything, he would be killed.

Boom!

Tian Shu and Tian Miao were too formidable. They kept attacking using the two ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons,

and eventually, they knocked Mu Lingxi, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi away, injuring them seriously.

The cultivation gap between them was enormous. It was already impressive that they could stall them for seconds.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help shooting a glance at Mu Lingxi and the Golden Dragon Carriage as they bounced away.

“You got distracted!”

Wang Xu seized the chance and dashed toward Zhang Ruochen like a shadow.

Meanwhile, Tian Shu and Tian Miao blocked the back way for Zhang Ruochen while glowing with saint light like two giant white light balls.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen being encircled by three great beings, Wen Shusheng, Ling Mi, and Mu Lingxi were all horrified.

However, Zhang Ruochen was still very calm. He stared at the blade light and said, “I did that on purpose to lure you into attacking me. You said you wanted to see Sword Technique of Sword, didn't you? Let me show you.”

Wang Xu, who was going to charge Zhang Ruochen, felt that his blade technique was paused for an instant.

Wang Xu would never forget what happened next. Zhang Ruochen's sword gleamed with light, which was all he could see.

Sizzle!

He stabbed Wang Xu's forehead with the Abyss Ancient Sword, spilling blood from his brain.

Wang Xu yelled in agony. It was blood-curdling as if he was shouting for help. He kept stepping back, trying to get away from the Abyss Ancient Sword.

He did stab Wang Xu's forehead with his sword, yet he didn't pierce through his entire head. The Abyss Ancient Sword was warded off by a solid bone.

“Is he some mutant creature instead of a human being?”

Zhang Ruochen kept increasing his strength, trying to kill Wang Xu once and for all.

However, Tian Miao and Tian Shu caught up with him, and the two ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons glowed with saint might, seeming to annihilate Zhang Ruochen.

He had to slap the handle of the Abyss Ancient Sword with tremendous power, and then, Wang Xu's forehead cracked, and the cracks covered most of his head.

“Fight!”

Zhang Ruochen yelled and turned around. He was holding the Buddha sarira with one hand and the purple godly stone with the other. He focused all his saint Qi in his hands, clashing with the two ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons wielded by Tian Shu and Tian Miao.

Chapter 1550 - Five Elements Woman

Chapter 1550: Five Elements Woman

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Bang Bang!

The iron token and the saint sword, with their complete power utilized, clashed with Zhang Ruochen's palms, and they were equally strong.

Even Tian Shu and Tian Miao were horrified. "Is Zhang Ruochen made of godly iron...is he completely indestructible?"

Although they were first-step saint kings, both of them could rival second-step saint kings for a while, and they wielded their weapons with their full strength, yet Zhang Ruochen had managed to ward them off, which was completely beyond their expectations.

Tian Shu and Tian Miao exchanged eye contact and rushed toward the two Ten-Thousand Patterns Saint Weapons like two traces of light. One of them was holding Xinkong Iron Token and the other was holding Miaoji Saint Weapon. They tried to suppress Zhang Ruochen with greater power.

Boom!

Those two forces shook Zhang Ruochen's body, making his bones crack. He had to step back to dissolve the two forces.

However, every step Zhang Ruochen took back, they would follow.

Zhang Ruochen had to try to defend himself with full strength, which deprived him of any capacity to use space skills.

Although both Tian Shu and Tian Miao were wearing masks, Zhang Ruochen could still see their sexy bodies, smooth skin, and intelligent eyes. Without a doubt they had beautiful faces.

Zhang Ruochen stared at them in their eyes, and then, he opened the fourteen apertures on his palm. Fourteen traces of Divine Fire Jingmie gushed out.

Meanwhile, Carnivorous Holy Flower climbed out of Zhang Ruochen's back, forming dozens of vines and attacking Tian Shu and Tian Miao.

Both Tian Shu and Tian Miao had protection valuables, but they didn't dare touch Divine Fire Jingmie. They immediately put back their Xinkong Iron Token and Miaoji Saint Weapon, trying to dodge the fire.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Their body techniques were so capricious that each step they took looked mysterious. People couldn't figure out where they were heading next.

Zhang Ruochen didn't dare attack them directly. He stood still while letting out his mind power and space domain, cautious about everything around him. Carnivorous Holy Flower's vines surrounded him like dozens of hands.

Any power that dared approached Zhang Ruochen would be fought back by him.

"Zhang Ruochen, our lord told us to send you the message that if you're willing to submit to him, you'll have a chance to survive today," Tian Shu said.

Every word she said came from a different direction.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't think that the 'lord' they mentioned was Wang Xu. After all, Wang Xu had been severely injured by him. He didn't have the power to make him deflect.

Zhang Ruochen already had someone in mind, but he still asked, 'Who's your lord?'

Tian Shu threw out a Saint-binding Chain and said, “If you wear this, I’ll take you to him.”

“You want me to be captured willingly?”

Zhang Ruochen sneered and held his Buddha sarira and the purple godly stone more tightly. One of his hands glowed with golden light while the other glowed with purple light.

Tian Shu said, “Our lord said that you’re a space manipulator, and that it’s very difficult to trap you. We can only bring you there if you’re wearing a Saint-binding Chain.”

“Huh.”

Zhang Ruochen chuckled.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen performed spatial move and disappeared.

Tian Shu was dazed. Before she realized what had happened, Zhang Ruochen had already showed up right in front of Tian Shu.

The eyes behind the golden mask were filled with astonishment. “How did you know where I am.”

“You’re in my space domain. Why wouldn’t I?”

Zhang Ruochen wielded his golden fist which carried hundreds of ancient Sanskrit characters.

Bang!

Tian Shu used her Xinkong Iron Token as a shield.

The original power of Buddha Emperor gushed out of the Buddha sarira, and as for Xinkong Iron Token, there were supreme saints’ original powers emerging. The two forces clashed together, making thunderous noises.

Although Tian Shu had tremendous cultivation, her power was still inferior to Zhang Ruochen’s. She was knocked back, and her hands were in too much pain to even hold Xinkong Iron Token steady.

“Again!”

Zhang Ruochen prepared to take a second strike.

Tian Shu clenched her teeth, and her eyes turned gold.

And then, two golden rosefinches flew out of her eyes, making shrill noises and dashing toward Zhang Ruochen. Both of them were ten feet tall, and their mouths and claws were sharp like the tips of a sword, while their feathers looked like golden blades.

Wen Shusheng said, "Careful, she's one of the Five Elements Women working for Shang Ziyang, the leader of the new generation from Merits Godly Palace, Golden Soul Woman, Tian Shu. Her golden pupils are immensely powerful."

Bang!

When Zhang Ruochen hit Xinkong Iron Token the second time, those two golden rosefinches also jumped on his body.

Zhang Ruochen was scratched both on the left side of his left chest and his right shoulder, and he felt extreme pain.

Even though he was wearing Hundred Saints Blood Armor, the power still scratched his body.

Fortunately, it was just a shallow wound.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen managed to knock Tian Shu away. Her golden mask was destroyed, and her exquisite but nonchalant face was revealed, bleeding.

Before the two golden rosefinches came back, Zhang Ruochen tried to strike at Tian Shu again.

Ding!

He sensed danger coming.

A weird but thin shadow showed up behind Zhang Ruochen, and she tried to stab Zhang Ruochen with her sword.

Zhang Ruochen immediately turned around and turned the purple stone into a godly mountain, throwing it toward the saint sword, forcing Tian Miao to show her true body.

"Let's strike together," Tian Jiao yelled again.

Tian Shu was Golden Soul Woman while Tian Miao was Water Soul Woman. Neither of them was a human being, and instead, they were a gold spirit and a water spirit with special body constitution.

Zhang Ruochen was confident that he could severely injure either of them.

However, they were great at cooperating with each other as if they knew exactly what each other was thinking about. They seemed to be performing some mysterious formation technique that was able to rival someone stronger than them individually.

Golden Soul Women didn't just have two golden rosefinches at the saint-king level, but her golden eyes could stiffen Zhang Ruochen's body if she stared at him, and turn his body golden.

Someone was said to be able to turn stone into gold.

As for Golden Soul Woman, her golden pupils were able to turn things into gold once she saw them.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen's techniques were special enough to help him recover, but that Golden Soul Woman still managed to suppress Zhang Ruochen's real abilities.

King Hun standing at the center of the purple formation picture thought, Golden Soul Woman and Water Soul Woman only manage to rival Zhang Ruochen after they team up. It seems Lord Ziyan has miscalculated. Zhang Ruochen's stronger than he thought.

The rules in Heaven World were very strict, and Shang Ziyan had a very special identity, so he couldn't be here to kill Zhang Ruochen himself. If the assassination failed, Shang Ziyan would be imprisoned forever, if not executed.

As for Wang Xu, it was different. Both he and Zhang Ruochen were half-step saint kings. Even if he failed, people could just claim that he was trying to challenge Zhang Ruochen.

The rules in Heaven World only restricted the monks from slaughtering, but they didn't prohibit two monks from challenging each other.

For example, if a second-step saint king killed a first-step saint king, Heaven World wouldn't punish him for doing so, as the gap between their cultivation wasn't large, and it was possible that one killed the other accidentally during the challenge. And besides, it was entirely possible that a first-step saint king managed to escape a second-step saint king.

However, if a fifth-step saint king killed a first-step saint king, then he or she would definitely be punished, as this was slaughter. If this was permitted, there would be bloodshed all the time in Heaven World, as a supreme saint could just easily massacre a great number of saints and half saints.

Only the heavenly rules knew where their limits were.

Shang Ziyan didn't dare take the risk, so he asked Lord Liaosang, who was an enemy of Su Jing, which was the first part of the plan.

And then, he sent Wang Xu, Tian Shu, and Tian Miao, together with 'King Hun,' who belonged to an assassination group, which was the second part of the plan. Shang Ziyan reckoned this was more than enough to kill Zhang Ruochen.

"Lord Liaosang still hasn't killed Su Jing yet. Lord Ziyan has totally overestimated his power."

King Hun knew that if Lord Liaosang was able to kill Su Jing soon, he would 've killed Zhang Ruochen easily a long time ago.

King Hun decided to kill Zhang Ruochen himself, as he wanted to finish his task as quickly as possible.

"Spirit King Out, All Spirits Greet Him."

King Hun pinched his fingers and pressed the tip of the bone saint scepter. King Hun was still standing still, but a black soul walked out of his body.

His flesh and soul were separated.

All the soul shadows on the purple formation picture growled, and they all groveled on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen was horrified seeing that. "Is he a human being or a soul?"

“Now that I’m fighting you, you won’t stand a chance!”

The black soul opened his hands, and a lightning rune that was three feet long was formed in his hands. The soul shadows on the picture formation all gathered toward the lightning rune.

Chapter 1551 - The Mantis Stalks the Cicada, Unaware of the Oriole Behind

Chapter 1551: The Mantis Stalks the Cicada, Unaware of the Oriole Behind

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A terrifying power gushed out of the lightning rune, and all of a sudden, the saint souls of all the monks in the formation were frozen.

“Is that a Soul Suppressing Rune?”

Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling, and Wen Shusheng felt that their saint souls were about to be crushed, and they couldn't move a single muscle.

Obviously, that lightning rune attacked people indiscriminately, so even Tian Shu and Tian Miao were having a hard time putting up with it. They put back their ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons, mobilizing their saint Qi to resist the power from that rune.

Zhang Ruochen's saint soul was also suppressed, and his saint Qi almost stopped flowing.

“Can't believe how powerful a level-fifty-six mind power saint king is.”

Zhang Ruochen's face paled, and he looked at the front and saw that black soul body holding his lightning rune and walking toward him as if he was the God of Death.

“My saint soul is different from others’ as it’s been divided into six parts, including four saint sources, Time Saint Look, and Space Saint Look. Even if he’s actually using a Soul-Suppressing Rune, it can only suppress the saint souls in my saint sources, not those in Time Saint Look and Space Saint Look.”

Zhang Ruochen tried to stay calm. He took a deep breath, mobilizing his mind power to communicate with his Time Saint Look and Space Saint Look.

That black soul body saw Zhang Ruochen completely petrified. He laughed and said, “I’ll seize your soul today and inherit your identity as Time and Space Descendant.”

The black soul body walked to Zhang Ruochen and looked at Zhang Ruochen’s body as if he were looking at an ant. He nodded and said, “Supreme Complete Body Constitution and Time and Space Descendant. This should be one of the most top-tier bodies in the entire universe. I’m just so lucky.”

“Zhang Ruochen...”

Mu Lingxi’s fingers became claws. She clenched her teeth and triggered the inheritance power of the Ice and Fire Phoenix, and the phoenix wings on her back glowed with light. A tumbling power of a supreme saint gushed out.

The inheritance power of the Ice and Fire Phoenix was stored in the wings, and it merged with Mu Lingxi’s body through time.

She could trigger that power if she paid a price for temporary great strength. However, Mu Lingxi’s body was still very weak, so there was no way she could handle the power of a supreme saint. Even if she didn’t explode, all her meridians and saint meridians would be crushed.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen’s soul was about to be seized, Mu Lingxi tried to trigger the inheritance power without thinking about her own safety.

However, before she managed to trigger the inheritance power, the light from the shining star above the formation shone upon Mu Lingxi, suppressing the inheritance power.

Whoosh!

Mu Lingxi was struck by her own inheritance power, spit out blood, and fell onto the ground.

That black soul body sneered, “Merits Godly Stamp was right above you. You can’t use your saint figure runes and inheritance power, but I just discovered that you’re the one who gained the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix among the fight between the Luosha race and the saints from the seven large fields. Impressive.

“There must be a special bond between you and Zhang Ruochen, and you look very beautiful. I’ll conquer you after I seize Zhang Ruochen’s soul.”

The black soul body stopped talking and reached his dark hand toward Zhang Ruochen’s forehead and his hand became sharper and sharper like an awl.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen’s eyes gleamed fiercely again. He said, “Die!”

Time Saint Look and Space Saint Look showed up behind him, forming two invisible whirlpools and striking the black soul body.

“How can it be?”

The black soul body yelled as it realized a danger was coming. It wielded a lightning rune to ward off the Time Saint Look and Space Saint Look.

Meanwhile, it turned into wind and backed off.

Zhang Ruochen knew the power of the lightning rune, so he didn’t use Time Saint Look and Space Saint Look to confront it. Instead, he took out a Tiangang Purple Fire Rune, pinched it, and wielded it forward.

Boom!

The two runes clashed with each other, making an earth-shattering sound.

Gu Songzi wasn’t good at fighting, yet his mind power was incredible, so the Tiangang Purple Fire Rune he made was

naturally powerful. It tore the lightning rune apart instantly.

The purple fire hit that black soul body like a heatwave.

The black soul body screamed in agony, and its voice echoed in the space. It rushed back to its original body.

The power coming out of the two runes could rival that from two great beings stronger than third-step saint kings.

Zhang Ruochen was close to it, so he was knocked away. As he fell onto the ground, he felt that his organs were all twisted, and he couldn't stop bleeding or balance himself.

“The Tiangang Purple Fire Rune made by Gu Songzi is extraordinary. It can rival a full-strength strike from a fourth-step saint king. I should've just wielded it instead of spending so much time fighting.” Zhang Ruochen felt a bit upset.

Zhang Ruochen saw Gu Songzi use Tiangang Purple Fire Rune in Kunlun's Field before, but it was only enough to fight a first-step saint king.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen'd been keeping it as his last resort to stall his enemies.

Little did he know that Gu Songzi was quite able to make stronger Tiangang Purple Runes; he was just too poor to buy those top-tier materials. He could only use mid-tier materials to make Tiangang Purple Fire Rune when he was in Kunlun's Field, and those materials couldn't handle the incredible inscriptions, so Gu Songzi wasn't able to show his real abilities.

This time, Zhang Ruochen spent all the saint stones in Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land, together with some of his own saint stones to buy the best materials for him, which made Tiangang Purple Fire Runes completely different.

Even Zhang Ruochen underestimated its power, so he was severely injured as well.

Tiangang Purple Fire Rune even knocked Tian Shu and Tian Miao away. Even though they'd used their protection runes, they were still seriously wounded and lying on the ground, bleeding.

The fire coming out of the Tiangang Purple Fire Rune kept burning that black soul body and made it more and more transparent. In the end, the black soul body had to get back to its original body.

That half-human and half-soul body picked up the bone saint scepter.

Whoosh!

The skull at the top of the bone saint scepter glowed with purple light, forming a screen that warded off the purple fires.

The two powers stayed in a stalemate for fifteen minutes.

King Hun kneeled on the ground with one knee, using that bone saint scepter to support himself. His body kept shaking, and he squeezed out his words. “Why didn’t you use that rune in the first place, Zhang Ruochen? Did you keep that as a trump card against me?”

Zhang Ruochen felt speechless as well, but he wouldn’t say the real reason. “It cost too much to make a rune like that, and I only have one, so I wouldn’t have used it unless I had no other choice.”

Tian Shu and Tian Miao were both furious, but they didn’t question what Zhang Ruochen said. After all, they could in no way afford to make a rune like that.

That rune cost a mountain of saint stones.

And besides, materials were only a part of the total cost; what was more was hiring a rune master to make them. Top-tier saint-king level rune masters were scarcer than supreme saints.

Everyone was seriously injured, but Zhang Ruochen still had another trump card: Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Just as he was about to summon Carnivorous Holy Flower, he realized something was wrong and looked to that palm pit.

“Haha!”

Someone laughed in that pit.

King Hun, Tian Shu, and Tian Miao were all alert, looking to where the laughter came from.

A person with messy hair walked out of the palm pit.

It was Wu Hao, who had been slapped into the ground by Zhang Ruochen.

However, Wu Hao didn't seem to be injured at all. He did look kind of awkward, with some bloodstains on his body though, yet he looked vigorous, with a smile on his face. "Impressive, Zhang Ruochen. You crushed four great beings working for Shang Ziyan, which is so beyond my expectations."

"You're still alive?" Zhang Ruochen was dazed.

Wu Hao laughed with his hands behind his back. He felt like he was the winner of the entire battle. He looked at Zhang Ruochen, King Hun, Tian Shu, and Tian Miao as if they were nothing. "How would I die? You only killed a puppet self I made. You're the ones dying."

Tian Miao said, "Wu Hao, why don't you kill Zhang Ruochen now?"

Wu Hao walked to Tian Miao, grabbed her neck and picked her up from the ground all the way to above his head. "How dare you order me to do anything. You're nothing but Shang Ziyan's puppet. He wants to use me to get rid of Zhang Ruochen, but I want to use him to get rid of Zhang Ruochen as well."

Wu Hao suddenly exerted his strength and smashed Tian Miao onto the ground, which caused her pain so severe that she was twitching.

Chapter 1552 - A Terrific Sword

Chapter 1552: A Terrific Sword

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wu Hao was threatened by Shang Ziyan and his sidekicks, so he had to acquiesce to save his life.

However, he was furious about the humiliation.

Wu Hao was an ambitious man and didn't want to be restrained by others, which was why he was very well-prepared after a month, and he wanted to get rid of Zhang Ruochen and the great beings working for Shang Ziyan.

The valuables Zhang Ruochen and Wang Xu had were precious. If he could obtain them, he wouldn't need to be scared of Shang Ziyan anymore. Although something off had happened, it was still within his control.

To Zhang Ruochen, Wu Hao was more despicable than King Hun and Wang Xu.

"I'm curious. When did Shang Ziyan get into contact with you?"

"A month ago, right after I left Mount Xuanxu Sacred Land. You have no idea what kind of humiliation I endured." Wu Hao clenched his teeth and his fingers.

King Hun said, "What makes you think you can eradicate all of us?"

Wu Hao suppressed his anger and guffawed. "Even Zhang Ruochen has the rune scroll to injure you. How would I not have some trump cards if I've decided to kill all of you?"

“Which means your trump card is enough to kill me?” King Hun wanted to know more about what weapons Wu Hao had.

“Of course.”

Wu Hao was confident enough to let him know.

King Hun looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “I know you still have some skills you haven’t performed. How about us teaming up and getting rid of him first?”

To King Hun, his biggest enemy now was Wu Hao, so he needed to kill him as soon as possible.

Zhang Ruochen tried to support himself with the Abyss Ancient Sword and smiled, “I don’t mind it.”

“Do you really think you can kill me?”

Wu Hao’s hair waved, and there were cracking sounds coming out. His hands gleamed with saint light, and he waved them against King Hun.

King Hun was a mind power saint king whose mind power had reached level fifty-six. Even though he was severely injured already, Wu Hao still needed to be cautious of him, so he saw him as his greatest enemy at the moment.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he was way too wounded to be considered a threat.

Zhang Ruochen happily stood aside and wanted to see what kind of skills they hadn’t used yet.

“Time to be awakened, Yi Emperor!”

King Hun sat on the ground, mumbled, and the rest of his mind power gushed out, rushing into the bone saint scepter.

Black engravings emerged on the bones on the saint scepter, forming a black skull. Meanwhile, the skull at the top of the saint scepter was raised, and there were two balls of ghost fires in its eyes.

The saint might coming out of the skull was enough to shake Wu Hao’s saint soul as if an overbearing emperor was staring at him.

The bone finger pointed forward.

Bang!

The bone finger pierced through Wu Hao's hand, leaving a bloody hole, knocking him back.

“My saint scepter was made of the spine of the head of a human supreme saint, and there's a trace of saint soul sealed in the head. It only needs a bit mind power to trigger it.” King Hun smiled.

Wu Hao raised his hand, looked at the hole that was at the size of a wine glass and said, “Supreme saints are indeed the emperors among the saints. However, a dead saint with nothing but a spine and a head can only be that powerful. I don't want to be in a stalemate, and I'm going to finish the fight now.”

Wu Hao put his hands together, and a scroll flew out of his head.

The scroll was opened gradually, emanating crimson light. Ten beast shadows emerged around the beast shadows, and each of the beasts had saint might that could rival a saint king.

“You brought ‘Ten Spirits Battle Scroll,’ the guarding true treasure of your family?”

Even King Hun, who had been calm the whole time, was terrified.

“It's just a copy, not the real scroll, but it's more than enough to deal with you guys.”

Wu Hao held it above his head and yelled, “The souls of ten ancestors, the bodies of ten spirits, help me kill my enemies.”

Howl!

And then, saintly way power spread.

“These guys are all well-prepared to kill.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately rushed into the distance and told himself to be careful all the time in Heaven World.

He then took out a Tiangang Purple Fire Rune, trying to find the best opportunity to kill them both.

Suddenly, he heard a shrill noise coming from afar.

Whoosh!

A trace of gleaming sword light tore the black clouds apart above the purple formation picture as if a heavenly river flowed to the ground.

It seemed that the sky was divided into halves, which thrilled both Wu Hao and King Hun, who were fighting each other. They retracted their saint power and stepped back.

And then, a beautiful and slender woman in purple rushed out.

The beautiful woman in purple had a lithe and graceful body, and her purple cape was giving out lightning as if she was a fairy from the heavens or the Goddess of Lightning from the ancient times.

However, her eyes were gleaming more sharply than her sword Qi. No man would dare look her in the eyes.

King Hun knew that the assassination plan had failed when he saw her.

Wu Hao also realized that something was off, and besides, that beautiful woman seemed to have profound cultivation.

Only Zhang Ruochen smiled when he saw the woman in purple, and he put away his Tiangang Purple Fire Rune.

The woman in purple landed beside Zhang Ruochen. Seeing him safe, she looked softer.

Although she couldn't be more worried, she still tried to look nonchalant and only said coldly, "Are you okay?"

"Yes," Zhang Ruochen answered.

The woman in purple knew that Zhang Ruochen hated showing his weak side. However, seeing that the woman Zhang Ruochen cared about the most, Mu Lingxi, had fallen in a pool of blood, she knew that he'd encountered extreme dangers today.

“Who was trying to kill you?” the woman in purple asked.

Zhang Ruochen shrugged his shoulders and said, “You’ll find it hard to believe, but the two people who want to kill me were just fighting each other. Interesting.”

The beautiful woman in purple glanced around King Hun and Wu Hao, and her saint sword made a sound again.

“Let’s go, Yi Emperor.”

King Hun could sense the power coming from that beautiful woman in purple, and besides, the assassination plan had failed. He immediately grabbed the spinning black skull and started to flee.

“You tried to kill someone in Kuli Sacred Domain, and you think you can survive it?”

The beautiful woman in purple wielded her sword, and Sword Way Xuangang hit King Hun as he was trying to fly away.

King Hun yelled and raised the bone saint scepter above his head, trying to ward it off with the leftover supreme saint power in the scepter.

Sizzle!

Sword Way Xuangang crushed the leftover power of the supreme saint. It slew King Hun, cutting his body in half. Saint blood was spilled.

King Hun’s saint soul was already damaged, and after being hit by Sword Way Xuangang, it crumbled.

A famed being from Soul Field was annihilated.

Wu Hao couldn’t be more terrified.

He’d fought the bone saint scepter for a long time, so he knew how potent it was, yet that beautiful woman in purple easily tore it apart.

She then aimed her saint sword toward Wu Hao.

Wu Hao’s face paled, but he tried to stay calm and said, “Zhang Ruochen, I’m the heir from Guanghan Field. Even if I did something wrong, only the Moon Goddess can put me on

trial. If you kill me, then you'll make yourself an enemy of the entire Wu family. Do you know what kind of power I hold in Guanghan Field? You won't have any place in Guanghan Field if you offend my family."

Guanghan Field was indeed full of talents at the moment, and Wu Hao was one of the top-tier talents, and besides, the Moon Goddess wouldn't kill him for the sake of Wu Zu.

Wen Shusheng also warned Zhang Ruochen, "Priest, no matter what kind of crimes Wu Hao has committed, he's the heir of Guanghan Field after all. If you kill him, you'll be in a lot of trouble."

Whoosh!

The beautiful woman in purple looked scornful. She wielded her sword toward Wu Hao without any hesitation.

Wu Hao didn't expect that the beautiful woman in purple wanted him dead so much. He had to mobilize the power of Ten Spirits Picture and Ten Ancestors Souls to ward it off.

Whoosh!

Sword Way Xuangang crushed all ten of the beast shadows and hit Wu Hao. His saint armor was pierced through, and he was cut in half also.

And then, his body fell, with his organs spilling everywhere.

The beautiful woman in purple put back her sword, stared at the body on the ground and said, "I'm not a monk from Guanghan Field."

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to stop her. Instead, he smiled and exclaimed, "Sword Saint Feiyu is indeed powerful. I can only look up to your sword way attainment. Thank you for what you've done this time!"

Chapter 1553 - Bring Lord Liaosang Under Control

Chapter 1553: Bring Lord Liaosang Under Control

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The assassination failed completely after King Hun and Wu Hao died.

Mu Lingxi, Wen Shusheng, and Su Qingling took the healing pills, sat on the ground, and used their techniques to recover.

The purple formation disappeared, and the clouds dissipated, showing the sky and the clouds. Only an eye-piercing light spot was still floating in the sky.

It was the ‘Merits Godly Stamp’ mentioned by King Hun, and it had mysterious power which could crush monks’ saint figure runes.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t be more curious about the Merits Godly Stamp, so he mobilized saintly way power and tried to grab it.

The Merits Godly Stamp started to shake as if another power was on it, trying to seize it from Zhang Ruochen.

“Spatial twist.”

Zhang Ruochen pressed both his hands forward.

The space trembled fiercely, and at the next moment, the Merits Godly Stamp fell into Zhang Ruochen’s hand. It looked like a circular token with a five-colored cluster of air inside. It looked like a glowing nebula without mythical power.

Zhang Ruochen released Divine Fire Jingmie to suppress the Merits Godly Stamp, trying to refine it. Meanwhile, he looked to a direction in the distance and said, "I'll take this Merits Godly Stamp!"

Shang Ziyan clenched his hand, standing at the top of a snow mountain thousands of miles away. His eyes glinted fiercely, and he said, "Go, let's leave Liku Sacred Domain now."

Fire Soul Woman Tian Yu said, "Are we going to let it go like this?"

Shang Ziyan tried not to show any negativity. He said calmly, "I miscalculated this time as I didn't expect the leader of Liku Sacred Domain to be a supreme saint, and it seems he's close to Zhang Ruochen."

If someone was able to control his indignation, he was definitely a deep and ruthless person.

Which made him the scariest person.

"But Wang Xu, Tian Shu, and Tian Miao are still in their hands. Are we just going to let them go?" Fire Soul Woman asked.

Shang Ziyan said, "I've already passed the word to Ruiya Field. The great beings will definitely try to save Xu given his identity and talent. As for Tian Shu and Tian Miao, I'll do my best to save them as long as they don't betray me."

Shang Ziyan didn't mention that he would kill them both if Tian Shu and Tian Miao turned on him.

This was the first time Shang Ziyan suffered such a huge blow, as he had lost both his soldiers and his weapon, yet he had to deal with it.

"We'll see if you can be so lucky next time, Zhang Ruochen. We'll meet in Truth Godly Palace." Shang Ziyan gazed into the distance and left with Fire Soul Woman and the others.

He didn't have an option, as the leader of Liku Sacred Domain was a mind power supreme saint. Even if they had the valuables to cover their forces, they might be spotted.

The best plan was to leave Wang Xu, Tian Miao, and Tian Shu and get out of Liku Sacred Domain.

After leaving Liku Sacred Domain, Shang Ziyan gave three orders.

“Fire Soul Woman, send someone to find out information about the leader of Liku Sacred Domain and that woman in purple. The more detailed, the better.

“Wood Soul Woman, head to Soul Field and tell King Daxi that King Hun was killed, and Yi Huang Bone Scepter fell into Zhang Ruochen’s hands.”]

“Mud Soul Woman, head to Zhixu Saint Market and give a list of everyone related to Zhang Ruochen to Heavenly Assassination Organization. Tell them to kill as many as they can, and we’ll pay them double. We need to make him pay for what he did.”

...

Sky-Sealing Glass Dome was floating in the sky. It could cover a space of hundreds of square miles.

Zhang Ruochen was just about to ask Ling Feiyu to ask Ling Xiu to deal with Lord Liaosang. Suddenly, he saw a huge saint hand form above the cloud and seize Sky-Sealing Glass Dome.

Cough Cough.

Only then did Zhang Ruochen see Ling Xiu standing nearby.

Ling Xiu was a mind power monk without any saintly way forces, so Zhang Ruochen didn’t notice him before.

Ling Xiu looked very sick from his appearance, and he had a hairpin to do his hair. The monks who didn’t know him would’ve never guessed he was a mind power supreme saint.

At this moment, Ling Xiu was studying the Sky-Sealing Glass Dome.

On the other side, the area covered by Sky-Sealing Glass Dome was revealed.

The entire area was scorched, and all the mountains were leveled, and there were some horrifying gullies on the ground

with burning flames.

Su Jing was beaten back to his original form, which was a Nine Spirits Divine Bird. He was only using his nine feathers to survive.

Lord Liaosang mobilized his flames to refine the original nine feathers, yet Sky-Sealing Glass Dome was taken away right before he succeeded.

Ling Xiu looked at them and said, “How dare you trespass in Liku Sacred Domain to kill people? Are you insulting me?”

Lord Liaosang looked to Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi, and he saw King Hun, who was dead in the blood. “Damn it, the leader of Liku Sacred Domain is a mind power supreme saint. Why didn’t Shang Ziyang tell me earlier?”

Lord Liaosang lost all his might and fighting spirit in front of a supreme saint. He immediately triggered tens of thousands of saintly way rules to protect himself.

Run. He had to run.

“Mist Run.”

Lord Liaosang turned into a cluster of demonic mist and disintegrated into more than a hundred traces. Some flew up to the sky while some sneaked underground.

Mist Run was the best fleeing skill Lord Liaosang knew. Even if only half the demonic mist managed to get away, he would be able to condense his original body. Even if only one trace of demonic mist got out, he could get back to his current level. It’d just take some time.

Even supreme saints would find it difficult to block all the demonic mist.

Ling Xiu took a look at Sky-Sealing Glass Dome in his hand, smiled, and flicked it away.

Sky-Sealing Glass Dome covered a larger area this time, and the saintly way rules became denser. This time, Sky-Sealing Glass Dome exerted ten times stronger power.

None of the traces of demonic mist managed to get out, so they had to form a body again.

Lord Liaosang couldn't hate Shang Ziyan more. If Shang Ziyan didn't give him Sky-Sealing Glass Dome, he would've made it out safe already.

Lord Liaosang knew he wouldn't be able to get away, so he kneeled on the ground. "Please, supreme saint. Spare my life."

Ling Xiu walked into Sky-Sealing Glass Dome to Lord Liaosang. He pointed at the front, and then, Lord Liaosang's body became larger and larger, turning back to its original form.

It was a black beast that was more than seventy miles long. It looked like a leopard, yet its head was covered by thorns, which made it ferocious.

"Give me a trace of your original saint soul and become my ride. Do you want it?" Ling Xiu said.

He sounded very calm, yet to Lord Liaosang, it was deafening. To him, Ling Xi's body looked like it was a hundred thousand feet tall, and his saintly way forces didn't allow Lord Liaosang to resist at all.

"I... I do."

Lord Liaosang gave Ling Xiu a trace of his original saint soul.

From now on, its life and mind were both in Ling Xiu's control.

It was a saddening thing for a ninth-step saint king, yet it was the only way for it to survive. After all, Lord Liaosang wasn't someone like Death Zen Ancestor, and a supreme saint was able to suppress him with a finger.

After refining Merits Godly Stamp completely, Zhang Ruo Chen walked toward Tian Shu and Tian Miao. He said, "I know you're here because of Shang Ziyan's order. As long as you can identify Shang Ziyan and let the heavenly rules punish him, I won't ascertain your responsibilities."

Tian Miao and Tiao Shu knew how terrific the power behind Shang Ziyan was. If they dared identify Shang Ziyan, they

would've been annihilated before they saw the heavenly rules.

Even if the heavenly rules punished Shang Ziyan, the power behind him would make their lives a living hell.

They took a look at each other and both looked desperate.

Zhang Ruochen immediately wielded two saint-binding chains, trying to use their power to prevent them from blowing up their saint sources and lower abdomens.

Unfortunately, it was one step too late. Two great saintly way powers gushed out of their bodies.

Ling Xiu looked in that direction. He didn't attack them at all. Instead, he released mind power and restrained the energy storm coming out of Tian Shu's and Tian Miao's explosion to less than one hundred square feet.

Boom!

Two saintly way powers tumbled in that small area.

If it weren't for Ling Xiu, the destructive power from Tian Shu and Tian Miao could've killed a third-step saint king.

"I should've been more careful. Can't believe they'd rather blow themselves up than identify Shang Ziyan." Zhang Ruochen shook his head.

"Even I, as a mind power supreme saint, didn't expect them to blow themselves up. After all, they were gold spirit and water spirit without families and clans. Why would they be restrained by others? Unless..."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Unless the power behind Shang Ziyan was so great that they had to blow up their saint sources instead of being alive."

Ling Xiu was a mind power supreme saint, which meant he could've used his mind power to prevent them from blowing up their saint sources if he was alerted.

Unfortunately, both Zhang Ruochen and Ling Xiu underestimated Shang Ziyan's control over them and their fear of Shang Ziyan.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes glinted, and he looked to Lord Liaosang.

Lord Liaosang knew what Zhang Ruochen meant. He said, "It's useless. Shang Ziyang did ask me to kill you guys, but I never knew him before, and he didn't leave any evidence of us meeting. Even if we go accuse him, with the power behind Shang Ziyang and Merits Godly Palace, those who enforce the heavenly rules will only trust him."

"It seems the power behind Shang Ziyang terrifies even you," Zhang Ruochen said.

Lord Liaosang smiled. "If you knew how strong your enemy is, you would be terrified too."

Chapter 1554 - Merit Qi

Chapter 1554: Merit Qi

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After Tian Shu and Tian Miao blew themselves up, the gold energies and water energies they formed were collected by Ling Xiu, who turned them into a cluster of black mist and golden mist.

It was very difficult for golden spirits and water spirits to be born, and even more so for them to become saint kings.

Take Tian Miao as an example. She was originally a trace of origin Qi of water spirits under a saint lake. After hundreds of years of absorbing spiritual Qi and essences from the sun and moon, she gained a bit of intelligence.

After being instructed by a great being, she started to refine.

Only after countless years of refining was she able to form a human body, after which her refining speed got faster.

Because of all these years of refining, the origin Qi of water spirits that formed her body was a true treasure among the Five Elements Valuables.

Ling Xiu looked to Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu and said, “Water spirits origin and golden spirits origin with such high purity are the best for you to improve your body constitution.”

Those two clusters of light mist were definitely incredible given the comments from a mind power supreme saint.

Zhang Ruochen held his fist to show his respect for the supreme saint, then he said, “Please give both the origins to Palace Leader Lin. I’ve already gotten Five Elements Chaotic

Body, so there's no need for Five Elements Valuables to refine my body.”

Ling Feiyu and Zhang Ruochen followed the same path on body refinement.

She refined ‘Four Spirit Treasured Body,’ which was slightly weaker than ‘Five Elements Chaotic Body.’

The five Elements were all interconnected. Gold, wood, water, fire and gold formed a circle, and they could be transformed into each other.

Monks who had Four Spirit Treasured Body could get closer to having Five Elements Chaotic Body if they absorbed enough Five Elements Valuables, and at some point, they could even turn their bodies into Pseudo Five Elements Chaotic Body.

Ling Xiu said, “Feiyu’s Four Spirit Treasured Body can’t absorb that much of the water spirits origin and golden spirits origin, and besides, she needs your help to refine Pseudo Five Elements Chaotic Body.”

Ling Feiyu stood aside, looking kind of discontent with Zhang Ruochen. “Five Elements Chaotic Body isn’t that amazing, is it?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to set himself against Ling Feiyu. He smiled. “Then thank you for your help. I’ll definitely do my best to help Palace Leader Ling to refine Pseudo Five Elements Chaotic Body.”

Ling Xiu took a look at Zhang Ruochen and smiled. “Her highness has sent some godly blood to me. I can merge the blood with the origins so that you can absorb the godly blood when refining those two origins, which can greatly improve your body constitution.”

Zhang Ruochen felt repulsed instinctively knowing he needed to drink the godly blood of Chi Yao.

At the same time, he noticed that Ling Feiyu was staring at him.

She looked very sharp.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to dodge her. Instead, he looked back at her.

They didn't talk at all, but Zhang Ruochen understood that Ling Feiyu wanted him to face the past bravely instead of running away from it.

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen felt less repulsed and said, "I'm curious. Now that Kunlun's Field is ranked twenty-seven hundred and forty-fourth, your guys can totally leave Shatuo Heaven Domain and head to a better one. Why haven't you left yet?"

Liku Sacred Domain was beside Red Dragon Sacred Domain, so Zhang Ruochen knew that Ling Xiu and Moon Worship Demonic Sect hadn't left Liku Sacred Domain yet.

Ling Xiu sighed and said, "Heaven World is a ruthless place. Kunlun's Field only gained its status in Shatuo Heaven Domain because the other six fields in the domain are relatively weak, so Kunlun's Field can still manage to fight back even though they're trying to suppress us.

"If we head to the domain that has a better refining environment, the fields there will definitely be much stronger, so perhaps Kunlun's Field doesn't even have a place to survive."

Zhang Ruochen suddenly recalled what the Moon Goddess told him, that Guanghan Field was enslaved and exploited in those top-tier domains, and that was why it'd fallen so far.

If the supreme saints from Guanghan Field were smart enough to move to Shatuo Heavenly Domain, it wouldn't get so weak now.

Certainly, nobody would be willing to move to a barren place after staying in an abundant environment for too long.

Zhang Ruochen admired Chi Yao for one thing: that she was always able to make the most rational and correct decision. No external factors could interfere with her decision.

Zhang Ruochen said, "How much godly blood are going to use? I'll pay double the saint stones for it."

Ling Xiu knew Zhang Ruochen's history, so he only nodded without saying a word.

And then, Zhang Ruochen walked to Wang Xu.

There was a hole in Wang Xu's head, and half his head was covered by blood. He was lying on the ground still, yet Zhang Ruochen could still feel the life ripples in his body.

Zhang Ruochen was curious. "Incredible. What kind of life form is he?"

"Danger."

Ling Xiu raised his eyebrows, and his mind power gushed out of his body, forming an energy whirlpool that covered Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu, bringing them off the ground.

Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu didn't know what had happened and they were in shock.

Boom!

An area of five hundred square miles, centered on Wang Xu, started to sink, leaving an abyss.

"Who are you?"

Ling Xiu suddenly became ferocious. He clenched his fist, and all the saint Qi in Liku Sacred Domain was mobilized as if tens of thousands of Qi Dragons had gathered above his head. And then, they hit toward the bottom of the abyss.

A trace of light flew out of the pit, destroying all the Qi Dragons, including the winds in the sky.

"It's not easy refining your mind power. Cherish your life, as you're a supreme saint, and don't mess with those you can't fight against, otherwise, your body and soul will both be annihilated."

An overbearing sound came from afar, echoing around the ears of Zhang Ruochen and the others.

Ling Feiyu said coldly, "How aggressive."

"Indeed."

Zhang Ruochen also looked irritated.

As for Ling Xiu, he knew that the being who saved Wang Xu had better cultivation, as he had already left Liku Sacred Domain, together with his forces.

He came and left without a trace.

However, Ling Xiu wasn't scared at all. He said, "That's the reason you two need to practice harder and try to become supreme saints as soon as possible. Once you've become supreme saints, you'll definitely be the great beings among supreme saints given your talents, and you can roam Heaven World at ease."

Both Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu knew the importance of power, especially in Heaven World.

...

Moon Worship Demonic Sect had been split completely. Some followed Ling Xiu while the others followed Shi Qianjue.

Ling Xiu was staying in the largest sacred land of Liku Sacred Domain, which was called Cloud Lake Sacred Land. He established the headquarters of Moon Worship Demonic Sect in Heaven World there. Zhang Ruochen and the others didn't hurry their way, instead, they chose to stay in Cloud Lake Sacred Land for recovery.

Ling Xi took out the golden spirits origin and the water spirits origin and entered a demonic palace. He asked Zhang Ruochen to wait for him for two days.

Zhang Ruochen sat down beside Cloud Lake, swallowed the healing pill, and took out the Merits Godly Stamp and started to study it.

The jade covering the Merits Godly Stamp was a saint jade made of solid materials. The saint jade itself wasn't special, however, the five-colored mist inside the saint jade looked mysterious. Zhang Ruochen tried to use his mind power to inspect it, yet he couldn't figure out what it was.

Whoosh!

The purple shadow beside Zhang Ruochen blinked, and it formed a beautiful and slender woman who was the palace

leader of Saintess Palace of Moon Worship Demonic Sect, Ling Feiyu.

Ling Feiyu could tell that Zhang Ruochen was confused, so she explained, “That’s Merit Qi.”

“Merit Qi?” Zhang Ruochen was still confused.

“The Gods from Heaven World established Merits Godly Palace because they want to collect the Merit Qi produced by the creatures in the universe. Merit Qi can be used to make all sorts of mysterious valuables, and some of the valuables can improve monks’ cultivation, body constitution, intelligence, and even more,” Ling Feiyu said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “They can improve body constitution and cultivation...then perhaps many monks from a large field will crave them. How can they guarantee that the distribution is fair?”

“Merits Battle!”

Ling Feiyu said, “Heaven World encourage the monks from all the fields to fight against those from Hell World, and the number of merit valuables will be distributed based on their battle achievements. Those who kill more monks from Hell World can get more merits, and thus more merit valuables, which is why it’s called a merits battle.”

And then, Ling Feiyu took out a sparkling bottle which was holding colorful liquids. “Look, this is the Merits Sword-Washing Marrow that Merits Godly Palace gave me, which can purify the sword soul I refine, improving my sword way attainment.”

Zhang Ruochen heard a word he’d never before. “Sword soul? What’s a sword soul?”

Chapter 1555 - Like Teacher, Like Friend, Like Soulmate

Chapter 1555: Like Teacher, Like Friend, Like Soulmate

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen was sure that he'd heard his sword soul instead of his sword intent or sword spirit.

Ling Feiyu's slender frame floated up like a feather. She landed on Cloud River without even the slightest ripple.

Clang!

Following a metallic chime, a saint sword appeared in her snow-white hands.

The glint was like frost.

Now, Zhang Ruochen finally realized that Ling Feiyu's sword was the Heaven-Burier Sword, one of the six swords that locked Pluto and was stolen by Blood Emperor Qingtian.

Blood Emperor Qingtian had already been killed by Chi Yao. The Immortal Vampires of Kunlun's Field were practically all wiped out.

The present Kunlun's Field was a unified world. Humans were the kings and everyone else submitted to them. Thousands of races respected only the Empress. It was normal that the Heaven-Burier sword was back in Ling Feiyu's hands.

She raised the sword and started dancing on the water.

The woman, sword, and water seemed to transform into a beautiful painting. She was extraordinary and every action had been practiced thousands of times.

She explained to Zhang Ruochen while moving.

“Average swordsmen cultivate the techniques.

“A beginner swordsman cultivates the Sword Qi.

“A true swordsman cultivates sword intent.”

Ling Feiyu’s moves started off rough like a beginner martial artist. Gradually, her moves grew more and more precise. Sharp sword Qi also spread out. It was like a swordsman who kept improving.

“Cultivating Sword One is crossing over the first doorway.

“Cultivating Sword Seven is officially entering the chamber. You will strike without regret and become a Sword Saint. When you strike, sword intent can become tangible and kill people thousands of miles away.

“Cultivating Sword Eight, you’ll be able to produce the Sword Way Xuangang. You will be unbreakable and able to strike down mountains and stars.

“Cultivating Sword Nine, you’ll be able to create the soul of your sword intent, known as the sword soul.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen’s eyes became extremely bright. He uttered, “Sword soul... Can the sword intent really have a soul?”

Whoosh!

Ling Feiyu’s beautiful figure gradually faded from the water and disappeared. Only the Sky-Burier Sword remained hovering above the water, shining brightly.

It was as if everything had only been a dream.

Now, Zhang Ruochen realized that Ling Feiyu had been by his side the whole time. She’d never left.

“Come back,” she called.

The Sky-Burier Sword flew back and disappeared into her body.

“Who was the person using the sword?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“That was my sword soul,” Ling Feiyu said. “The soul of my sword intent.”

Zhang Ruochen was extremely jealous. “How strong is the sword soul?”

“The sword soul is ten times stronger than the Sword Way Xuangang. More frightening, it can directly attack the enemy’s saint soul. With my cultivation, I can only fight with a weaker fourth step Saint King with only my strength. But if I use the sword soul, I can easily kill the saint souls of some fifth or sixth step Saint Kings. That would heavily injure them and may even kill them. Of course, I may also die in their hands. After all, the difference in realm is too much!”

“What level are you in now?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Second or third step Saint King,” Ling Feiyu said. “I didn’t try on the Nine Steps to the Sky Path, so I don’t know which exact level.”

Zhang Ruochen gasped. She had a low cultivation, but she could kill a sixth step Saint King. She was indeed someone who’d completed Sword Nine.

Saint Kings studied the Rules of Saintly Way. Each step had a big difference. It was already a feat to cross over a level to fight. Those who could do that were top geniuses of each world.

According to Zhang Ruochen’s calculations, even he would only be able to cross two levels in the Saint King Realm. Crossing three steps would be impossible unless he had major breakthroughs in the ways of time and space.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “Your talent in the Sword Way is comparable to Xue Hongchen, the Sword Emperor. How about we crown you as Sword Empress?”

Ling Feiyu rolled her eyes. “Your talent in the Sword Way isn’t lower than mine, but you spend far less time on it. You should know that I’ve already cultivated for 300 years and... I also cultivated seven lives in the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. I’ve experienced all the flavors of life. This is something that others don’t have. At that time, my cultivation

was far more advanced than yours, so I benefited more as well.”

The higher your cultivation was, the more you could benefit from the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.

One had to admit that Ling Feiyu and Zhang Ruochen had a very strange relationship. She was both teacher and friend, and also soulmate.

Zhang Ruochen remained sitting on the ground, playing with the Merits Godly Stamp. Nodding, he said, “You’re right. My biggest disadvantage is that I haven’t cultivated for a long time. Thankfully, I had the understandings from the sixth life of the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map, so I’m not behind. How about I look at the memories and understandings of the seventh life so I’m stronger?”

1

Hearing this, an unnatural expression appeared on Ling Feiyu’s cold face, but she forced herself to stay calm. “As you wish!”

Her body shook and she disappeared from the lakeside.

Seeing her reaction, Zhang Ruochen knew that something extraordinary must have happened in the seventh life and was silent for a long time. In the end, he still didn’t touch the memories of the seventh life. “Let’s wait some more!” he said to himself.

He put away the Merits Godly Stamp and took out the white bone staff left behind by King Hun.

This staff was created from a complete human spine with connected vertebrae. At the top, there was a skull with strands of black hair flowing from it.

“What a heavy staff. It’s probably a few thousand kilograms. It seems that it really was made out of a Supreme Saint’s bones.”

Zhang Ruochen carefully undid the saintly power sealing the staff. With a loud boom, it started shaking.

The skull screamed. Like rolling thunder, it hurt Zhang Ruochen’s eardrums and he flew backward.

The staff broke free from his grasp and flew out, trying to escape.

In an instant, wind and thunder interwove in the sky above the lake. Demonic Qi gathered into black clouds.

“This powerful? It even escaped by itself?”

Zhang Ruochen landed on the ground. Relaxing his arms that had gotten numb from the reverberations, he used the Spatial Move to pursue it. He grasped the staff with both hands and activated Divine Fire Jingmie.

Sizzle, sizzle.

He dragged the staff back onto land and stabbed it into the ground, repressing it fully. He used Divine Fire Jingmie to start purifying it.

After spending an hour, he finally pushed down the evil Qi. Gradually, the staff calmed down.

He opened the Heavenly Eyes and studied hard. He discovered that the surface of the staff was carved with many strange patterns. The patterns on the skull were even more complex.

“King Hun once said that the skull contains a strand of a Supreme Saint’s soul. These patterns must be used to seal it.”

Zhang Ruochen activated his Holy Qi and inserted it into the staff.

Whoosh!

Densely-packed patterns emerged on the staff, shining with blinding light.

Zhang Ruochen lifted it slowly and struck out. It carried the origin power of a Supreme Saint with evil Sha Qi. It fell in the lake and lifted tall waves.

“The power that it unleashes is a bit weaker than the Buddha’s sarira. This shouldn’t be so...”

Suddenly, he got an idea. Instead of using Holy Qi, he split his Spiritual Power and inserted it into the skull.

The next moment...

Ghostly fire appeared in the eye sockets of the skull. Terrible black Qi poured out of the staff, converging into bones. Some transformed into hands while others into leg bones.

The white bone staff turned into a black skeleton.

“Haha, so you have to activate it with Spiritual Power.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but laugh. Then he made attacks with the black skeleton.

Soon, he measured that the black skeleton's combat abilities were comparable to a third step Saint King. Anyway, it was much stronger than Zhang Ruochen currently.

He pulled back the Spiritual Power and said to himself, “The skull portion contains fierce Sha Qi. It's clear that the human Supreme Saint's soul has become an evil spirit.

“Merely by manipulating the Sha Qi, the staff can unleash a third step Saint King's power.

“Then what if I activate the evil spirit directly?”

A Supreme Saint's power was boundless. Even the power from a bit of the saint soul was unimaginable to a Saint or average Saint King.

Activating the evil spirit directly, the bone staff's power would definitely be stronger than now.

The thing was, Zhang Ruochen couldn't activate the evil spirit at all with his current Spiritual Power.

If he did so forcefully, his Spiritual Power might get swallowed by the evil spirit.

He touched his chin and thought about the solution. “What if...”

He took out the Buddha's sarira. Squeezing it, he looked at the skull's forehead and murmured, “A human cultivator puts the Martial Deity Print in the forehead. If I embed the sarira into the skull's forehead, I should be able to suppress the evil spirit. Plus, with the sarira continuously feeding Supreme Saint power, the staff might even become stronger.”

It was a good idea, but the patterns on the skull were too abstruse. The average cultivator couldn't make the Buddha's sarira and bone staff fit together perfectly, especially having the patterns weave together.

“Senior Ling Xiu is a Spiritual Power Supreme Saint. Perhaps he has a solution.”

He put away the bone staff for now, no longer thinking about it. Then he took out the ruler emperor weapon. Sitting cross-legged on the lakeside, he started studying the rules of the Palm Way.

Two days later, Ling Xiu's voice traveled into Zhang Ruochen's ears. “Come see me in the Demon Pavilion.”

Zhang Ruochen's eyes flew open. Standing up, he dusted himself off and climbed up the steps. He went toward the pavilion in the shadows up top.

As soon as he reached the outside, he saw Ling Feiyu.

Clearly, Ling Xiu had also summoned her.

When Ling Feiyu saw Zhang Ruochen looking at her, her heart jumped and she actually avoided his eyes. Her snow-white cheeks also reddened slightly.

This made Zhang Ruochen blanch. Sword Saint Feiyu was usually so domineering, but she could actually be so shy?

Soon, Zhang Ruochen realized why. Could it be that she thinks I really did look at the memories of the seventh life? he thought.

Chapter 1556 - Power Surged

Chapter 1556: Power Surged

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ling Feiyu got more anxious seeing Zhang Ruochen stare at her with a bizarre smile.

It was a weird feeling for her. She hoped that Zhang Ruochen had invoked his memories of the seventh generation, yet she didn't know how she was going to deal with it. After all, there hadn't been any emotions between Ling Feiyu and Zhang Ruochen beyond a platonic level before entering 'Seven Lives and Seven Death Map'.

However, after seven generations, the relationship between them became extremely complicated.

Ling Feiyu was just as emotional as when she first stepped out of the 'Seven Lives and Seven Death Map,' yet she still had to pretend to be calm. The man standing in front of her was her mentor, her master, her confidant, her lover, and even her partner for life.

Although everything in the 'Seven Lives and Seven Death Map' was an illusion, she could still distinctly remember all that happened.

Ling Feiyu tried to look tough and asked, "Have you recalled what happened in the seventh generation?"

Zhang Ruochen had been observing her the whole time. He smiled and said, "Not yet."

Ling Feiyu was slightly dazed first, then she looked cold. In the end, she looked a bit sorry and irritated. She scoffed, “Then why did you stare at me for so long?”

Zhang Ruochen stroked his nose, as he felt he was being falsely accused. All he did was to look at her for more a second, and he was sure that he looked at her in an innocent way.

Why was she so mad?

Ling Xiu transmitted his voice to them again. “Come in.”

Ling Feiyu glared at Zhang Ruochen, snorted and walked toward the Demonic Palace.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and followed.

The Demonic Palace was towering, as if it were an ancient beast. They could feel the overbearing power when they walked to the palace.

They walked into the palace, where they saw a circular formation map.

The formation map was divided into five parts, corresponding to the five elements.

The golden spirits origin and the water spirits origin had turned into two rivers, one black and one golden, flowing between two parts.

There was blood that filled the two rivers which looked like human beings’ veins, looking holy.

He’s integrated it with the godly blood, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Ling Xiu was standing at the top of the Demonic Palace. He asked, “Are you willing to help Feiyu form a Pseudo Five Elements Chaotic Body, Zhang Ruochen?”

“Of course, I am.”

“Are you sure? Don’t have doubts after entering the formation.”

“I’m sure.”

There was no reason for Zhang Ruochen to refuse, given how close he and Ling Feiyu were.

Ling Xiu looked content. He smiled and said, “Then follow my order. Zhang Ruochen, enter the Five Elements Formation and activate it with your Five Elements Chaotic Body first.”

Zhang Ruochen jumped to the center of the Five Elements Formation and opened all his apertures, letting out loads of saint Qi and infusing it into the formation.

Whoosh!

The inscriptions on the Five Elements Formation started to glow with saint light.

Zhang Ruochen then heard Ling Xiu say, “Use your blood to operate the Five Elements Formation.”

Zhang Ruochen slit his wrist, and his saint blood dripped into the formation, integrating with those inscriptions.

The Five Elements Formation started to move, and the power of Five Elements turned into a five-colored cloud.

Ling Feiyu also walked into the Five Elements Formation, reached out her hands, and touched Zhang Ruochen’s while they were both sitting down gradually.

Whoosh!

Although Zhang Ruochen kept bleeding, the water from the black river and the golden river kept flooding into Zhang Ruochen’s body, which made up for his loss of blood.

The water spirits origin and the golden spirits origin kept piling up in his body, to the point that Zhang Ruochen wasn’t able to withstand them anymore. He then released some of the power from the two origins into Ling Feiyu’s palms.

With time going by, the water from the golden river and the black river got thinner and thinner, and in the end, they merged with their bodies completely.

Zhang Ruochen’s body was glowing with five-colored light as if it were made of luminous five-colored jade.

Ling Feiyu's body was also five-colored, but the light coming out of hers was dimmer.

It took Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu a whole day to completely absorb the water spirits origin, golden spirits origin, and the godly blood, which hugely transformed their body level and body constitution.

Zhang Ruochen's body level was greatly improved. Each drop of his blood contained tremendous power, and he made a sound of thunder every time he waved his arms.

As for Ling Feiyu, the change was in her body constitution.

"Although I didn't form the Pseudo Five Elements Chaotic Body, I'm still way stronger than my Four Spirited Treasure Body. I'm a saint king after all, so it's very difficult to rebuild my body constitution," Ling Feiyu said.

Zhang Ruochen said, "You're very close to Pseudo Five Elements Chaotic Body now. It's only a matter of time."

"How about you? You've absorbed so much godly blood. How's your body constitution?" Ling Feiyu asked.

Zhang Ruochen checked his body using his mind power, and then, he found that all one hundred and forty-four of his apertures had become power sources.

However, it was difficult for him to tell how sturdy his body was.

"Can you take a punch from me?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ling Feiyu shot him a glare as she realized he wanted to use her to test his body sturdiness.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "What? You don't have the guts to do it?"

"Stop prodding me," Ling Feiyu said.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Are you going to do it or not?"

Ling Feiyu stood up and looked at Zhang Ruochen, as she was ready.

Zhang Ruochen moved his arms, making bone-cracking sounds. All his saint apertures glowed with light. Before he even made an attack, forces that could rival Taigu beasts gushed out.

“He’s not weak.”

Ling Feiyu became more careful.

At the next moment, Zhang Ruochen spread his legs, yelled, and swung his fist against Ling Feiyu.

“Impressive indeed.”

Ling Feiyu raised her hand, and a cluster of wind power flowed around her body.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen felt that he’d hit an iron mountain. He bounced away until he hit the door of the demonic palace.

Ling Feiyu’s body also shook as she took a small step back.

Ling Feiyu was surprised. She asked, “Did you use only your body power?”

“That’s right.”

“How incredible,” Ling Feiyu said.

Ling Feiyu’s cultivation was much more advanced than that of Zhang Ruochen. Even if she didn’t use her sword, she was one of the top-tier third-step saint kings.

Although she didn’t use all her strength, it was still impressive that Zhang Ruochen managed to make her take a small step back using only his body strength, which was something at least a second-step saint king could do.

If he mobilized his saint power and performed fist techniques and palm techniques, it would only be stronger.

He was only a half-step saint king, yet his power was already this strong.

Zhang Ruochen also figured out his power level. He smiled.

“It seems my body is ahead of my saintly way now.”

Ling Feiyu was worried that Zhang Ruochen would be complacent, so she said, “The universe is enormous, and there’re countless talents in Heaven World. Among the half-step saint kings on the ‘Saint Merits Rank,’ there’re also creatures who have bodies at your level.”

Zhang Ruochen shrugged his shoulders relaxedly. He just wanted to perfect himself at all levels, so he didn’t care how powerful the others were.

“Could I ask how many drops of blood I’ve absorbed? How many saint stones should I pay you?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ling Xiu smiled but didn’t answer.

After all, Zhang Ruochen did Ling Feiyu a huge favor, so Ling Xiu would in no way ask for his saint stones.

Ling Feiyu said, “I need lots of saint stones to buy saint medicine of five elements. How about five million saint stones?”

Zhang Ruochen gazed at her and said, “You didn’t even try to sugarcoat it. Do you think I’m a fool in money matters?”

“You offered to be a fool yourself.”

Ling Feiyu paused and said, “Now that Empress Chi Yao distributed her godly blood to Liku Sacred Domain, the godly blood belongs to Liku Sacred Domain instead of her. You still get emotional because of her, so of course, I’d reap it.”

It wasn’t easy to get rid of the emotions.

Chi Yao couldn’t get rid of the emotions, which was why she couldn’t become a God before.

Zhang Ruochen took out five million saint stones and gave them to Ling Feiyu.

Ling Feiyu didn’t look pleased at all after getting five million saint stones. Instead, she sighed.

And then, Zhang Ruochen took out Yi Emperor Bone Scepter and Buddha sarira and told Ling Xiu what he was thinking about.

Ling Xiu took Yi Emperor Bone Scepter and Buddha sarira. After inspecting them, he smiled. “Not difficult. The Buddha sarira can suppress devils, and before, there was a Martial Deity Print in your forehead, which is used to connect the outer world and your lower abdomen. We can just inlay it in that and draw some inscriptions.”

To mind power supreme saints, it was no big deal, but to Zhang Ruochen, it was an impossible task.

After less than fifteen minutes, Ling Xiu inlaid the Buddha sarira in the forehead of Yi Emperor Bone Scepter and scripted some complicated engravings on it.

The engravings on the bone scepter all turned gold. They looked holy but wicked at the same time, and the two conflicting forces integrated with each other perfectly.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Yi Emperor Bone Scepter and smiled.

Zhang Ruochen felt a bit pained after giving Ling Feiyu five million saint stones, so he decided to ask Ling Xiu for another favor.

Zhang Ruochen then took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and the purple godly stone. “Senior Ling Xiu, can you help me with another thing by inlaying this purple stone on the sword?”

The purple godly stone could greatly improve the power of a monk, so Zhang Ruochen had been wanting to mount it on the Abyss Ancient Sword for a long time.

Ling Feiyu said, “Are you done, Zhang Ruochen? Do you even know how much it costs to ask a mind power supreme saint to help you with something? Are you willing to pay another five million saint stones?”

“Um..?”

Ling Xiu looked curious. He then took up the purple godly stone in Zhang Ruochen’s hand and started to observe it.

Chapter 1557 - Truth Heavenly Domain

Chapter 1557: Truth Heavenly Domain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The purple godly stone was taken from Lord Lingquan. Zhang Ruochen had studied it for a long time without figuring out its nature. He only sensed that it contained strong divine power inside.

It was extremely hard. Even the Abyss Ancient Sword couldn't leave a mark on it.

According to Lord Lingquan, it was a purple star collected near a black hole and a weapon saint master produced this stone.

But Ling Xiu seemed to discover something else.

“Senior, do you know what this is?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ling Xiu's eyes were a bit solemn. Nodding, he said, “It's related to the Stone Race, one of the three races of Hell World. If I guess correctly, this should be part of a Stone Race's god and...a very important part too.”

“Is this like a divine bone?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“I'm afraid it's more valuable than a divine bone. After all, gods of the Stone Race are immortal. Even if they're broken, they can also reform their body. It's not easy to get a stone like this from their body.”

Ling Xiu held the purple godly stone before his fingers and opened his Heavenly Eyes to study it. “There are densely woven rules inside the stone. They're much more advanced

than Rules of Saintly Way. If the owner of this stone is still alive, he must be a terrifying existence.”

If even a Spiritual Power Supreme Saint found him terrifying, then it must be someone like a taboo.

“Can you embed this onto the Abyss Ancient Sword?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ling Xiu shook his head. “This is related to weaponry and I’m the worst at that. Plus, the Abyss Ancient Sword’s material is practically divine metal. It’s not easy to embed the purple godly stone into the sword.”

Everyone had their specialties. Even a Supreme Saint wasn’t all-powerful.

Zhang Ruochen put the Abyss Ancient Sword and purple godly stone away. He prepared to have the sword masters of the Divine Sword Land try. After all, the Divine Sword Land could fix the broken Abyss Ancient Sword back then. Embedding a purple godly stone shouldn’t be hard.

These past few days, Su Jing, Su Qingling, Ling Mi, Wen Shucheng, Mu Lingxi, and the others had all recovered. They came to the Demonic Pavilion to bid farewell with Ling Xiu and Ling Feiyu.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the side. After Su Jing and Ling Xiu were done being formal, he finally said, “After Wu Hao’s death, someone has to fill his spot. If you want to be thankful, how about we act more sincere and give this spot to Liku Sacred Domain?”

Su Jing was a bit hesitant. After all, the chance to study in the Truth Pavilion was extremely valuable. How could they share it with cultivators of Kunlun’s Field?

Ling Feiyu knew that Zhang Ruochen was trying to help her get the chance.

Ling Xiu looked at Zhang Ruochen and smiled in satisfaction. He almost said, Good boy! My treatment of you hasn’t gone to waste. You’re great to Feiyu!

Su Jing was a lord, after all, and reacted quickly. Smiling, he said, “Guanghan Field indeed owes Supreme Saint Ling Xiu greatly. Using a spot as repayment is necessary. However, I’m afraid such a big matter must be reported to my father or the Moon Goddess before making a decision.”

Anyone could tell that Su Jing was trying to push it off.

“Then, I’ll send a message to the Moon Goddess and have her decide.”

Zhang Ruochen was decisive. He immediately inscribed a communication rune and sent it out.

A while later, another communication rune flew into the pavilion and landed in Zhang Ruochen’s hands. Seeing the content, Zhang Ruochen smiled. “The Moon Goddess has agreed to my proposal.”

“How is that possible?”

Su Jing was shocked inside. He found it incredible and hurriedly walked towards Zhang Ruochen. “Let me see.”

Zhang Ruochen casually handed him the communication rune.

The divine words on the rune were indeed imprinted with the Moon Goddess’s spiritual intent. Su Jing’s heart rose and fell like waves. He was shocked.

When he looked at Zhang Ruochen, Su Jing felt even more pressure.

This young man wasn’t just a half-step Saint King. He was able to communicate directly with the Moon Goddess and she even agreed to his slightly offensive suggestion.

Even with Su Jing’s current cultivation and status, he still didn’t qualify to speak directly with the Moon Goddess.

What did this mean?

This meant that Zhang Ruochen was more important to the Moon Goddess than imagined. No wonder she attacked the Merits Godly Palace to save him.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t surprised.

The Moon Goddess had taken away the moon leaf from the Seven-star Sacred Tuber and one million saintly sources. If she didn't even agree to this small request, she would be too stingy.

Half a day later.

Ling Feiyu and Zhang Ruochen's group set off toward the Merits Godly Palace together.

Along the way, Su Jing complained to Zhang Ruochen, "Empress Chi Yao killed a god of Hell World and received 20 spots to the Truth Godly Palace. Guanghan Field only has six and we gave another one to Kunlun's Field. Zhang Ruochen, this isn't fair!"

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel any pressure beside Su Jing. "I heard that the spots for the Truth Godly palace aren't only open to the public. Cultivators can also fight for it themselves."

"That's true. The Truth Godly Palace has a reward system for true prides, but...it's too hard! All these years, no cultivator from Guanghan Field has succeeded."

Then he added, "What, you want to try?"

"The Sea of Truth, Mountain of Truth, Bridge of Truth," Zhang Ruochen said. "Any cultivator who studies in the Truth Godly Palace will want to try. Since I'm a member of Guanghan Field now, I should try to get some spots for us."

Su Jing didn't have much hope. But thinking of Zhang Ruochen's terrifying talent and his status as number one on the Saints Merits Rank, Su Jing gradually grew hopeful.

Others couldn't do it, but this guy might be able to.

As if thinking of something, Zhang Ruochen asked, "Uncle Jing, I have a question. Guanghan Field and Kunlun's Field suffered great losses in the merits battle and killed so many cultivators of Hell World. How come Kunlun's Field could receive so many treasures from the Merits Godly Palace but Guanghan Field couldn't?"

Su Jing chuckled bitterly. Clearly, he wasn't happy either, but he didn't say anything. He just shook his head.

"It's related to me?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Seeing that he'd already guessed it, Su Jing stopped hiding it. "It's alright to tell you, since you'll find out sooner or later. That day, the Moon Goddess offended the entire Merits Godly Palace to save you. To punish Guanghan Field, they didn't give us what they should've.

"Zhang Ruochen, you don't have to worry. They've targeted Guanghan Field many, many times. Even if it wasn't you, they would find another excuse to continue holding us down."

Because of him, the record created by the lives of hundreds of cultivators couldn't be repaid. How could Zhang Ruochen not care?

His eyes sharpened. "The Merits Godly Palace is so unfair. We should take it down..."

"In Heaven World, you should never blaspheme gods or godly palaces. Even if you feel hatred, you can only hide it in your heart. You must endure it."

Su Jing hurriedly stopped Zhang Ruochen. The Moon Goddess could say rebellious things about a godly palace, because with her strong abilities, the Merits Godly Palace couldn't do anything to her.

But if Zhang Ruochen said it and a god from the Merits Godly Palace heard, the consequences would be unimaginable.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath to calm his anger. "One day, I will make the Merits Godly Palace pay back what it owes Guanghan Field. Doesn't Shang Ziyan want to kill me? Let's see who succeeds first."

The next few days, the group traveled quickly.

Zhang Ruochen focused entirely on cultivating. He cultivated palm techniques while studying the Rules of the Palm Way. He wanted to reach minor or even major completion of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm's 11th palm."

...

The Truth Godly Palace and Merits Godly Palace were the same. They both had super-high statuses in Heaven World. This was why it could take up an entire heavenly domain, known as the Truth Heavenly Domain.

The Truth Heavenly Domain wasn't as vast as the Shatuo Heavenly Domain, but the environment was more than ten times better. It was a paradise that all cultivators in the universe yearned for. Many gods also cultivated here when they were young and left behind their personal residences and relics.

It wasn't easy to enter the Truth Godly Palace and cultivate in the Truth Heavenly Domain. The strict requirements were able to stop 99% of all prides outside.

Of course, other than entering the Truth Godly Palace and becoming a disciple, the palace also passed out spots to the major worlds. The stronger a world was, the higher the merits, the more spots they would receive.

For example, Guanghai Field usually only received three spots every ten years.

But some stronger worlds would get spots every month—ten or hundreds of times more than Guanghai Field. This way, the stronger worlds became stronger and the weaker worlds became weaker.

If a weak world wanted to become stronger, they would have to work ten or a hundred times harder, and also receive a great opportunity.

At the edge of the Truth Heavenly Domain, there was a vast plain with a dozen spatial transmission formations. Beams of light flashed inside. Every moment, cultivators from the various worlds would walk out.

Whoosh!

As light flashed, Su Jing, Zhang Ruochen, and the others appeared in one formation. After walking out, a disciple from the Truth Godly Palace came to check their truth badges.

When the Truth Godly Palace had handed out spots, they'd also sent six truth badges to Guanghai Field.

The disciple was named Han Shang. He seemed to be in his thirties and looked quite plain. After checking the six badges, his expression grew disdainful. Chuckling, he said, “Oh, you’re from Guanghan Field, ha. Go and register over there. The senior who led them here, go get a temporary badge. If cultivators without badges are discovered, they may be driven out or even punished by death.”

The scorn in, “Oh, you’re from Guanghan Field” felt grating to all the Guanghan Field cultivators present.

So what if he was from the Truth Godly Palace?

Han Shang could see that they were upset and grew even more scornful. Cultivators from the third to last world, he thought. They think they’re the best in their own worlds, but they’re nothing in the Truth Heavenly Domain. The world might become a battlefield soon and get destroyed in war, disappearing from Heaven World. There’s no need to interact with people from such a weak world.

Just then, a voice came from the distance. “Deity Wang Xu of Ruiya Field has arrived. Han Shang, hurry and go welcome him.”

“Deity Wang Xu has come to cultivate again. This is great. I’ve always been the one to welcome him and many senior and junior sisters who look up to him have been jealous. I can’t let them beat me this time. It’s not easy to interact with him.”

Han Shang was overjoyed. Ignoring Zhang Ruochen’s group, he hurried into the distance.

Mu Lingxi stood beside Zhang Ruochen. Arms crossed, she watched this theatrical scene and found it laughable. “It seems that the disciples of the Truth Godly Palace aren’t all proud elites. There are also lowly people who kiss up to others.”

Chapter 1558 - Dojo

Chapter 1558: Dojo

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Look! It’s Deity Wang Xu!”

“I’ve seen the clips of his fighting before. Can’t believe I’m seeing him in person.”

“I fought the hologram of Deity Wang Xu before, but I couldn’t even handle one of his moves.”

...

Wang Xu caused a sensation by coming to the plain.

Both his status and his power amazed people.

He was someone who was ranked in seventh place on the ‘Saints Merits Rank,’ which meant he was no doubt an extraordinary talent with a great future.

Although Zhang Ruochen’s performance was amazing on Zuling Field, only the monks from large fields that were ranked low would pay attention to that merits battle.

As for the powerful fields that didn’t need to worry about becoming the next battlefield, they wouldn’t pay attention to the merits battle of seven weak fields.

And besides, it’d been only a month or two since Zhang Ruochen got in the ‘Saints Merits Rank’, so the news hadn’t been spread yet. Aside from the talents who were actually on the rank, others didn’t know his background at all.

Only a handful of monks knew which large field he was from.

And fewer monks knew what he looked like.

Wang Xu had recovered, and it seemed that his power was improved again. He walked out of the space transportation formation, surrounded by a group of monks.

Han Shang, a disciple from Truth Godly Palace welcomed him and said, “This is your seventh time coming to Truth Godly Palace. I’ve been responsible for receiving you, including this time.”

Wang Xu shot him a glimpse and said, “I remember you... What’s your name again?”

“Han Shang.” Han Shang smiled and nodded.

Wang Xu pointed at Han Shang as if he were his slave. “That’s right. That’s the name.”

“I’ve prepared the Cloud Boat for you, deity. Please follow me.”

Han Shang was leading the way in the front, and the monks from Ruiya Field followed. The monks from other large fields all avoided them.

Ruiya Field was ranked in seventy-third place in the western universe. Their deity being in Truth Heavenly Domain was like an emperor embarking on a tour. Everyone tried to ingratiate himself to him. If a saint could befriend the deity of Ruiya Field, he or she would become a sensational person in the field.

Wang Xu suddenly noticed something as he walked. He stopped and looked in a direction, seeing Zhang Ruochen.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he was leaving with Su Jing and the others to register.

Han Shang noticed how fierce Deity Wang Xu looked. He saw Zhang Ruochen and the others, and he said, “They’re the lower-class monks from Guanghan Field.”

“Lower-class monks? Where did Truth Godly Palace classify monks?” Wang Xu was still staring at Zhang Ruochen like a hunter staring at his most precious prey.

Han Shang said, “People classify the monks themselves. They’re nothing but monks from the third to last large field,

which means they're lower-class monks. I don't even know why they came to Truth Godly Domain."

Wang Xu then looked to Han Shang, smiled, and walked away.

"What did he mean?"

Han Shang couldn't figure out why Wang Xu smiled like that.

"Is the deity attracted to the girls from Guanghan Field, but then again, those girls are indeed beautiful. One of them is even in the class of those on the 'Nine Angels Beauty Scroll.'"

...

After the registration, Zhang Ruochen and the others went on to take the Cloud Boat.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Where're we going next, Uncle Jing?"

Su Jing thought for a while and said, "How about you guys head to Truth Godly Palace first? I'll stay here."

"Heading to Truth Godly Palace first? But the monks from Truth Godly Palace said we need to wait in line. Shall we go to the Dojo opened by our Gods first?" Zhang Ruochen said.

This was the first time Su Qingling, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi came to Truth Heavenly Domain, so they didn't know anything about the situation here. They were also curious why Su Jing asked them to head to Truth Godly Palace first.

Su Jing felt ashamed seeing how confused everyone was. He then said, "If you really want to know about it that much, then I'll tell you.

"Only Gods are allowed to establish dojos in Truth Heavenly Domain. Those dojos are left for their monks to rest in Truth Godly Palace.

"To put it in another way, Gods occupy a small territory with their power."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Does that mean the Moon Goddess and Tree God established their dojos, and that we can go rest there?"

Su Qingling said, “Is there an inheritance left for us by the Moon Goddess and Tree God?”

“Of course.”

Su Jing said, “I heard that the Moon Goddess and Tree God carved their Way of Truth on the dojos’ walls. Monks from Guanghai Field can comprehend the pictures carved on the walls once they get into the dojos. Although it’s less efficient than getting to Truth Godly Palace directly, they’re still invaluable resources.”

Ling Mi and Wen Shusheng were both thrilled.

They only had a month in Truth Godly Palace, so it was almost impossible for them to comprehend the Way of Truth.

However, if there were pictures of the Way of Truth left by the Moon Goddess and Tree God, they could read the pictures even if they couldn’t get into Truth Godly Palace. Then they would have a much higher chance of comprehending the Way of Truth.

Su Jing said, “A hundred thousand years ago, when Guanghai Field was in its prime, we had more than twenty dojos in Truth Heavenly Domain. Each month, there’d be a large group of talents coming here to refine. Guanghai Field was more prominent than Ruiya Field before.”

“Unfortunately, Guanghai Field doesn’t have any dojo anymore!”

Su Jing felt pained when he finished the last sentence. He couldn’t help tensing his muscles, but he felt helpless.

All the monks were shocked.

“How come? Are the dojos left by Gods protected by their power? Aren’t they supposed to be immortal?”

Su Jing said, “Gods’ power can only protect the dojos themselves, but it can’t protect them from being seized by external forces.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Does that mean the dojos left by Gods from Guanghai Field were all occupied by the monks from other large fields?”

“That’s right.”

Su Jing shook his head and said, “Guanghan Field only has three people going to Truth Godly Palace every ten years, as opposed to those stronger fields who have a higher quota every month. They found the dojos of Guanghan Field were always empty, so they seized them to themselves, and the pictures of the Way of Truth left by the Moon Goddess and Tree God were also rendered refining resources for monks from other large fields.

“In the end, the monks from Guanghan Field don’t have anywhere that belongs to them.

“Some of the talents tried to get the dojos back, but all the monks occupying our dojos come from stronger fields. Their talents are more powerful, with greater numbers. All the talents from Guanghan Field were defeated, banished or even humiliated.”

Su Qingling, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi had been refining in Guanghan Field or Shatuo Heavenly Domain the whole time, so they’d never expected that the monks from Guanghan Field would be bullied like this.

“What a shame... What a shame... If the Gods from Guanghan Field knew their dojos were seized by others, they would be in agony.” Wen Shusheng clenched his teeth.

Ling Mi and Su Qingling also clenched their fists, as they felt ashamed too.

Su Jing said, “That’s why I asked you to head to Truth Godly Palace directly. Even if you have to wait outside the godly palace, it’s still better than being humiliated in the dojos. Besides, most of you here are girls.

“A talented girl from Guanghan Field tried to take back the dojo that belonged to the Moon Goddess, but she was trapped in the dojo and blew up her saint source so that she wouldn’t be humiliated. I heard the Moon Goddess’s dojo is occupied by the evil way monks from a powerful large field.”

Zhang Ruocen wasn’t raised in Guanghan Field, yet even he felt angry. “We’ll only be laughed at if we keep swallowing

our pride. Let's fight them and get our dojos back, no matter how powerful they are."

Ling Mi was a calm girl, but she wasn't very confident in herself. After all, many greater talents were born in Guanghan Field, yet even they failed and got humiliated. It was obviously impossible for her to take the dojos back.

However, she had confidence in Zhang Ruochen. She stared at him and said, "I'll follow our priest. I believe he can make us proud again."

Wen Shusheng yelled, "We need to fight even if that means we're going to blow up our saint sources. We have to get our dojos back, or die trying."

Su Jing saw everyone's motivation, and he was moved. And besides, he had some more confidence thinking about Zhang Ruochen's abilities.

"It'll be up to you to get back our dojos. After all, only you guys are entitled to get into Truth Godly Palace, which means only you can fight them. I won't be of much help. You need to think it through first. You're going to face enemies from much stronger fields, so are you really ready to handle the humiliation to come if you fail?"

"So what? We'll just blow up our saint sources and drag them all down. We need to send a message that there'll be a price to pay for occupying Guanghan Field's dojos," Su Qingling said.

Su Jing wanted to talk her out of it, but in the end, he didn't say anything. He boarded the Cloud Boat with them and headed to the dojo left by Tree God.

Chapter 1559 - Mirror Fragrance Cliff

Chapter 1559: Mirror Fragrance Cliff

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Truth Heavenly Domain was vast and boundless. A cultivator traveling by himself may spend a month and still not reach the destination.

But riding the cloud ship, they were more than ten times faster.

The dojos that the western gods set up in the Truth Heavenly Domain were all in the Void Sacred Domain.

The dojo created by the Tree God was in the Mirror Fragrance Cliff of the Void Sacred Domain.

Still 100 miles away, Zhang Ruochen already smelled the mesmerizing fragrance.

Osmanthus flower petals were blown down from the cliff, converging into a “creak of petals” in the air. They danced in the air and fell down like snow after scattering.

“What a paradise for cultivation,” Zhang Ruochen sighed. “The natural Holy Qi is three times denser than at Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land. The rules of the world are more active too. It’s more suitable to study the Saintly Way.”

Ling Feiyu had been silent the entire time. Standing to Zhang Ruochen’s right, she finally said, “If I can keep cultivating here, my speed can double at the very least.”

Ling Feiyu wasn’t a member of Guanghan Field, but she’d come to the Truth Heavenly Domain with their spot, so she would naturally be with Zhang Ruochen’s group.

They gazed at Mirror Fragrance Cliff from 100 miles away. There was a huge Osmanthus tree on the cliff. Thick black roots stabbed into the rock and white flowers bloomed amongst the green leaves, shimmering with saintly light.

Wen Shucheng was the Tree God's disciple, so he recognized it immediately. "The Osmanthus tree contains the Tree God's aura. It must be a root left behind that grew into a sapling of a divine tree. With the sapling's protection, Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo will never fail. Unfortunately, we descendants couldn't keep it and allowed the cultivators of other worlds to take it."

Wen Shucheng felt deep regret. His battle intent grew stronger inside.

Zhang Ruochen, Ling Feiyu, Mu Lingxi, Wen Shucheng, Su Qingling, and Ling Mi stepped inside Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo. Immediately, blinding light appeared and many formation runes emerged to stop them from continuing forward.

"They'd actually set up a formation outside the dojo. Do they really think this is their own territory?"

Su Qingling huffed coldly. She took out a Ten-thousand Pattern Saint Weapon sword and activated all her Holy Qi. Thousands of runes emerged on the sword as she unleashed the complete power.

Whoosh!

Putting her hands together, she struck down with the saint sword.

Boom!

The saint sword clashed against the defensive formation. Immediately, a shield of light appeared. It was like a curtain of water that connected the land with the sky and shook violently.

The deafening boom traveled to thousands of miles away, shocking all the cultivators.

"What a powerful defensive formation."

Su Qingling found this troublesome. If they couldn't even break the defensive formation, it would be a joke to try and take the dojo back.

The lower one's cultivation was, the more moldable you were. It would also be more beneficial to study the rules of truth. Thus, the worlds usually gave the spots for the Truth Godly Palace to Saints.

The worlds rarely gave this spot to Saint Kings in order to utilize resources well.

Even if Saint Kings appeared, they had usually already studied the rules of truth before and were here for the second or third time. After all, you also benefited more the more rules you figured out.

It was rare for Saint Kings like Ling Feiyu to come to the Truth Heavenly Domain for the first time.

This was also why the formations outside the dojo were usually set up by Spiritual Power Saints and Saint Kings. They wouldn't be so strong that even a Supreme Saint couldn't break them.

“Let me try.”

Zhang Ruochen wanted to use this chance to test the power of the Emperor Yi Bone Staff.

As soon as he grasped it, a circular door opened up in the defensive light curtain before him.

Inside it stood a three-meter-tall man with dark skin. He had two dragon whiskers at the corners of his mouth. His eyes were as dark and deep as a lake.

“Who is it!?” he roared. “You actually came to Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo to cause trouble! Don't you know that this is Cloud Field's territory?”

“Since when did Guanghai Field's dojo become part of Cloud Field?”

Zhang Ruochen opened his Heavenly Eyes and white light flew out of his forehead, landing on the man. He saw that his true form was actually a huge black dragon-whisker insect.

“It’s the Insect Race.”

Zhang Ruochen put his Heavenly Eyes away and intoned,
“Guanghan Field is here to take the dojo back.”

“Oh, cultivators from Guanghan Field.”

A mocking voice came from behind Dragon Whiskers.

Then a short man with a hunched back walked out of the door of light. This man’s name was Han Lu. His skin had hard scales on it.

Both Dragon Whiskers and Han Lu were half-step Saint Kings.

Of course, if they could be chosen from Cloud Field and have the chance to study in the Truth Godly Palace, they must not be simple beings. It would be a great mistake to actually treat them as half-step Saint Kings.

Dragon Whiskers scoffed. “Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo belongs to Cloud Field now. It has nothing to do with Guanghan Field. If you don’t want to be missing some limbs, you should be smart and get out immediately.”

“Dragon Whiskers, how can you be so crude? Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo was created by a god from Guanghan Field, after all. We should be welcoming of Guanghan beauties. How can we tell them to get out?”

Han Lu smiled leeringly and his gaze swept past Ling Feiyu, Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling, and Ling Mi. They were all top beauties with curvy bodies. They were very easy on the eyes.

“We Cloud Field cultivators won’t be so cruel,” he said. “As long as you pay saint stones as rent, you can step inside Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo temporarily. If we all interact well, we can even let you study the runes of truth left by the Tree God. What do you think?”

“You want us to pay with saint stones?” Su Qingling scoffed coldly.

Han Lu’s smile was very wretched. “Isn’t this tradition? Last time, Wu Hao, that top pride of Guanghan Field, paid saint stones to enter Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo and study the

runes left behind by the Tree God. So, if you want to become strong, you should learn to endure things. Oh, Wu Hao had a nice relationship with Senior Brother Bai Ran. How come he didn't come with you today?"

"Because he's dead!" Zhang Ruochen said.

Han Lu was taken aback, but he quickly smiled. "Dead? That's unfortunate. But Senior Brother Bai Ran remembers the friendship, so he just sent me a message. He wants me to tell you all that, since you're cultivators of Guanghan Field, men only have to pay 100,000 saint stones and women 10,000 to live temporarily in the dojo."

"We're not Wu Hao," Su Qingling yelled.

She immediately activated the complete power of the saint sword again. Like a white rainbow, sword Qi cut across, stabbing toward Han Lu's forehead.

Han Lu wasn't afraid at all. Instead, he smiled. "Nice personality. I love proud beauties like you. It makes one want to conquer you."

Han Lu's palm reached out from behind the door of light and formed prints of interwoven ice and fire. It clashed with the sword tip.

The full-power strike was actually blocked. Su Qingling was shocked inwardly. This perverted man is actually so strong.

"Go back, little pretty."

Han Lu cackled. Taking a deep breath, his thin frame swelled and he pushed forward with both arms. The interwoven ice and fire immediately exploded, forcing Su Qingling to stumble back.

Han Lu shook his sleeves and sneered with his head held high. "Other than the one or two from the Tree God, all top techniques of Guanghan Field have been taken already. So what if you have strong bodies? Without cultivating the top techniques, you're still nothing... Ah...my eyes..."

Suddenly, Han Lu yelled out. He covered his eyes and blood flowed out from between his fingers.

Just then, sharp sword light had penetrated the door of light and stabbed toward him. Even though he'd discovered it, he couldn't dodge it at all, so his eyes were burst by the sword light.

Ling Feiyu pulled back her slender fingers that had sent out the sword light. "I hate people looking at me like that," she said coldly.

Dragon Whiskers, standing beside Han Lu, stared at Ling Feiyu in shock. She'd only used a beam of sword Qi to disable Han Lu's eyes. Just how strong was her cultivation?

No, was that sword Qi or Sword Way Xuangang?

Dragon Whiskers immediately closed the door. Taking Han Lu, he charged up the steps to report to Senior Brother Bai Ran.

Boom!

A huge skeletal fist print hit the defensive light shield, shattering the formation. The entire dojo trembled.

A burst of Supreme Saint's origin power filled this land. It shook Dragon Whiskers and Han Lu so that they lost balance and almost fell on the steps.

Dragon Whiskers looked back and saw a huge black skeleton standing behind them. The forehead shone with dazzling Buddhist light.

Earlier, it was that black skeleton who'd shattered the formation with one fist.

The young man that stood on the skeleton's head was Zhang Ruochen.

He jumped down, flying from the skeleton's head. His hands formed palm prints. Dragon and elephants projected from the prints and pressed down on Dragon Whiskers and Han Lu's heads.

They quickly cast saint spells, each forming a print in reaction to the descending enemy.

Boom!

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen landed on the steps. His palms forced Dragon Whiskers and Han Lu to the ground. The steps were smashed, forming two broken ditches.

“I told you to get out, but you didn’t listen. Now, there are no more chances!”

Zhang Ruochen put his hands behind his back. With bounding saintly might, he strode up the steps and looked up arrogantly. “Zhang Ruochen of Guanghan Field has come to take Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo back. Tree God, if you hear me, release your divine power to turn this place back into a fair world.”

The black skeleton, dozens of meters tall, followed closely behind Zhang Ruochen. Its huge skeletal feet stepped into the ditches, making Dragon Whiskers and Han Lu cry out in pain.

The so-called “fair world” meant using divine power to push all cultivations to the same level in a certain area.

All gods who’d established a dojo in the Truth Heavenly Domain would leave such a tactic behind. As long as their descendants prayed fervently, they would make everyone equal in the dojo.

Of course, this tactic was originally created to fend off outer enemies so cultivators from another world wouldn’t take the dojo.

Zhang Ruochen had learned about this from Su Jing.

Chapter 1560 - Fight Bai Ran

Chapter 1560: Fight Bai Ran

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Heaven World had its rules everywhere, including Truth Godly Palace.

Gods weren't allowed to interfere with any fights in Truth Heavenly Domain in any way. Truth Godly Palace was a place that cultivated great beings instead of killing them.

If Gods joined the fights in Truth Heavenly Domain, many talents with great potential would be killed because of Gods' biases.

Which was why Tree God could enter Jingxiang Cliff Dojo but couldn't help the monks from Guanghai Field. It could only watch its dojo being occupied by the monks from Cloud Field.

Even Gods felt powerless when it came to this issue.

Although Tree God cultivated a couple of great talents who came to Truth Heavenly Domain to try to get their dojos back, they were all defeated. Some of them got killed, some of them sank forever, and some were even captured by those from Cloud Field.

Godly light ascended from under Jingxiang Cliff Dojo after Zhang Ruochen yelled, rushing toward the Osmanthus Tree.

Whoosh!

The petals on the tree gleamed, shining upon the land under Jingxiang Cliff and turning it into a wonderland.

Boom!

A trace of godly power permeated the dojo.

Zhang Ruochen immediately felt that the rules of sky and land were different.

“Is that ‘All Lives Equal?’” Zhang Ruochen mumbled.

He went under Jingxiang Cliff, and he saw the thicket of Osmanthus Trees and dozens of buildings among the trees.

Zhang Ruochen saw a tall altar as he walked into the woods, and there was a giant bronze cauldron on the altar where there were candles lit.

Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling, Ling Mi, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Feiyu followed Zhang Ruochen and saw that altar.

Su Qingling was surprised. “Are they worshipping Tree God here?”

“Haha.” Laughing sounds came out of the Osmanthus Tree thickets from afar, and they immediately reached the altar.

Boom!

Bai Ran, who was as thick as a bucket, rushed out and raised his ferocious head.

And then, Bai Ran turned into a dashing man in white, holding an ancient mirror and looking at his reflection. He smiled.

“Jingxiang Cliff Dojo was established by Tree God. We certainly need to worship it as we’re refining here.”

Bai Ran moved the bronze mirror in his hand.

Zhang Ruochen saw a ferocious head in the mirror. It had no smile.

The one in the mirror was how he really looked.

Whoosh Whoosh!

Powerful saint might came out of the thicket, and there were more than thirty of them. Some of them looked like human beings while some looked like bugs. Some were suppressing their forces and hiding underground while some became invisible.

Su Qingling, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi all felt extreme pressure and finally understood why the talents from Guanghan Field never managed to get back their dojos.

Only three members from Guanghan Field were allowed in Truth Godly Palace, yet there were dozens of great beings from Cloud Field. It wasn't a one-on-one battle. It was one-on-ten.

The monks who could come to Truth Heavenly Domain were all top-tier talents in their own fields. It was almost impossible for one to defeat ten enemies, even the deities on the 'Saints Merits Rank.'

Zhang Ruochen looked very calm, as if he would remain that way even if there were ten times more enemies.

Su Qingling, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi all calmed down after seeing Zhang Ruochen's reaction.

If they couldn't win the fight today, they would die.

Two women with butterfly wings flew down, carrying the bodies of Long Xuzi and Han Lu.

Bang Bang!

The corpses of Long Xuzi and Han Lu were thrown onto the ground, covered with blood.

Bai Ran looked at the corpses, still smiling, the eyes in the mirror turning red, and two fangs extending from its mouth. "Can't believe you killed them."

Zhang Ruochen stood right across from Bai Ran and said, "They trespassed in the dojo of Guanghan Field. Why shouldn't I kill them? I suggest you leave Jingxiang Cliff Dojo if you want to live."

Bai Run said, "Zhang Ruochen who's ranked in first place on the 'Saints Merits Rank,' but I heard you got to first place because you used your look to trick Princess Luosha."

"Nonsense. Do you kiss your mom with that mouth?" Mu Lingxi yelled.

Mu Lingxi knew that Zhang Ruochen would never debate anyone who defamed him, but she couldn't handle this. Zhang Ruochen was the perfect person to her, so she wouldn't allow anyone to malign him.

Bai Ran looked at Mu Lingxi's slender body, and it was amazed. "Zhang Ruochen's so lucky that he has someone so beautiful on his side. She can rival even the angels from the 'Nine Angels Beauty Scroll.'" "

Cold Qi gushed out of Mu Lingxi's body, freezing the ground beneath them. "If you really want to die, I'll kill you."

Everyone could tell that Bai Ran was the most powerful great being among the monks from Cloud Field, and that Mu Lingxi wouldn't stand a chance against him.

Su Qingling and Ling Mi wanted to stop her, but Zhang Ruochen said, "I reckon Lingxi might be able to take a battle against him."

Mu Lingxi obtained the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix, obtaining Sub-Complete Body Constitution and instructions from the Moon Goddess. She wasn't someone weak.

However, she'd been lacking the experience of fighting real great beings.

Zhang Ruochen thought she should fight real strong beings, only by which would she know where her weaknesses lay.

"Can't believe you'll let a girl fight me, Zhang Ruochen. Are you underestimating me?" Bai Ran said.

Mu Lingxi said, "Who're you to fight Zhang Ruochen if you can't even defeat me?"

"How reckless. Let me see what you've got."

A beautiful woman with a pair of butterfly wings flew out, and fiery engravings emerged on her body. She waved her arms in the air, and then, two fiery whirlpools showed up, in which two dragon shadows spun.

"Saint Spirit of Fire, Li Dragon!"

The woman with a pair of butterfly wings rushed forward.

Mu Lingxi mobilized all her saint Qi, and her back started to glint with saint light. She spread her phoenix wings, and the forces of the ancient phoenix gushed out.

Whoosh!

As Mu Lingxi moved her body, her phoenix wings started to spin as well, cutting through two fiery whirlpools, forcing the butterfly wings to retreat.

Bang!

After more than ten moves, Mu Lingxi broke the defense of the butterfly-winged woman. Her phoenix wings hit her chest, slashing it open.

The butterfly-winged woman screamed and bounced away.

“She defeated Die Yu in only thirteen moves, and her phoenix wings seem to be indestructible.” Bai Ran finally stopped underestimating Mu Lingxi, as he found that the woman might be difficult to deal with.

The inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix was stored in Mu Lingxi’s wings, which meant that pair of wings was a supreme saint ancient weapon, which had the same level of power as Buddha Emperor Saria did.

“Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Power.”

Mu Lingxi opened her hands, and the power of Pluto ice gushed out, lowering the temperature around her.

The saint blood dripping from that butterfly-winged woman’s chest was frozen, and Pluto Ice Qi penetrated her body like maggots. It infiltrated her meridians, veins and saint meridians, making her scream in agony.

Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Power and Divine Fire Jingmie were at the same level.

Divine Fire Jingmie was overbearing, which could destroy everything in the world. Almost no monks were able to resist it.

On the contrary, Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Power was insanely cold. Monks would be frozen if they touched it, and also, Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Power was very soft, which would spread through the entire area, and it couldn't be penetrated.

Which meant an injured monk would die under Extreme Yin Pluto Ice if he couldn't heal in time.

Sizzle!

The butterfly-winged woman was completely frozen, and her meridians, veins and saint meridians all showed from her skin. She fell to the ground, lifeless.

“No wonder she dared fight me. She has Extreme Yin Cold Ice Power.”

Bai Ran broke into laughter. It yelled, “No one move until I capture her.”

Whoosh!

Bai Ran rushed toward Mu Lingxi like a trace of white light, and he tried to stab her with his long sword.

Bai Ran wanted to finish the fight with his extreme speed, but he didn't know that Phoenixes were known to be fast.

Mu Lingxi was faster than Bai Ran. She went behind his back and slapped him, releasing Extreme Yin Pluto Ice Power.

Bai Ran was as strong as, if not stronger than, Wu Hao. He performed a mysterious step technique and dodged Mu Lingxi's attack, and then, he wielded his sword against her.

Mu Lingxi was obviously less experienced in real battles than Bai Ran.

After that move, she couldn't even manage to switch her direction. She had to close the wings on her back, forming a spinning ball to defend herself against that sword.

Chapter 1561 - Unrest

Chapter 1561: Unrest

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Bai Ran's sword sent Saintly Way power rolling out. If this was in a mortal world, he'd be able to easily halve a mountain that was thousands of meters tall.

Strands of Supreme Saint origin power spread from Mu Lingxi's phoenix wings. Each feather radiated like divine feathers.

Kaboom!

The ball formed by the phoenix wings was sent underground by Bai Ran's sword.

The next moment, Mu Lingxi flew out of the ground. She had blood at the corner of her lips and she was hurt, but her spirit hadn't weakened. She still had strong battle intent.

Bai Ran was shocked inside. She took a hit from the Reflection Saint Sword straight on and is only slightly hurt. Her wings are a bit too strong.

The Reflection Saint Sword was a Second-Yao Saint Weapon. It had 23,400 runes inside and was immensely strong. It could be both a mirror and sword.

Of course, with Bai Ran's current cultivation being a half-step Saint king, he couldn't unleash the Second-Yao Complete Power yet.

If he could, he would be able to defeat Mu Lingxi with one strike.

A three-foot-long blue phoenix feather flew out of Mu Lingxi's forehead. Light shot into the sky. It struck down at Bai Ran like an indestructible feather sword.

That was one of the two phoenix feathers formed by the Ice and Fire Phoenix's entire saintly power and blood. Mu Lingxi had gotten it from the Yin Yang Lake in the Phoenix Nest.

One of the two feathers was now in Mu Lingxi's hands. The other was Martial Saint Canglan's.

Like the nine origin feathers of Supreme Saint Jiuling, the origin feathers of the Ice and Fire Phoenix were also very powerful. They could split mountains and kill demons.

And as Mu Lingxi continued to grow, the feather would probably become even stronger.

As the feather was struck out, Bai Ran's pressure increased. He didn't expect that a random woman from Zhang Ruochen's side would be as strong as a Phoenix fairy.

Bai Ran couldn't fend off Mu Lingxi's attack. Every time the feather hit him, he would be forced back a step. Each step was countless feet from the last.

Not only was the feather strong, it also carried the power of the Extreme Yin Nether Ice. Not even 15 minutes of fighting later, Bai Ran's arms became stiffer and stiffer. It was more difficult to manipulate Holy Qi as if he was being frozen.

In Cloud Field, Bai Ran had an extraordinary status. As the strongest prince of the Ran Race, one of the top ten races, he had the blood of the Ran Emperor. He'd never been repressed by a human woman like this before.

"Seems like I can't capture you. I can only kill you."

Murderous intent poured out of Bai Ran's eyes. No longer holding back, he attacked with all his might.

Earlier, Bai Ran had wanted to capture Mu Lingxi, so he didn't go all out and was instead restricted by her. This way, he embarrassed himself before the Saints of Cloud Field.

He could only kill Mu Lingxi to regain his pride and protect his status.

“Ten Kill Origin Sword.”

Bai Ran cast a mid-level saint spell. His body split into ten and surrounded Mu Lingxi.

The ten projections raised their long swords at the same time and Rules of Sword Way melded into each sword. The Sword Qi in that area became even wilder.

Ling Mi was a bit worried. “Priest,” she said hurriedly, “that Bai Ran is already using a mid-level saint spell. I’m worried that Junior Sister Lingxi won’t be able to take it.”

“He only has minor completion of that spell, instead of major completion. The power is limited. Lingxi’s cultivation path has been too smooth, so she has to go through some life-or-death experiences for a challenge. You’re the most clear-headed when you’re forced to the brink of death. That’s when you can see the rules of the world clearly. It’s very beneficial.”

Despite his words, Zhang Ruochen still summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword and grasped it.

If anything major happened, he would definitely attack to save Mu Lingxi.

“Phoenix Dance Nine Skies.”

Beams of Rules of Saintly Way spread out of Mu Lingxi’s wings. Countless phoenix feathers flew out of them.

Each feather emanated a shred of Ice Phoenix Qi. They condensed into dancing phoenix fairies and flew around her. In that instant, hundreds of beautiful figures appeared around Mu Lingxi. It was like phoenixes dancing in the nine skies.

This was a mid-level saint spell that she’d received from the Ice and Fire Phoenix.

Mu Lingxi hadn’t cultivated this spell long and was only a beginner, but with the support of the Extreme Yin Nether Ice, this attack was quite strong.

Kaboom.

Mu Lingxi and Bai Ran clashed dozens of times. Both the phoenix fairy projections and Bai Ran’s projections shattered,

turning into nothingness.

Mu Lingxi's face was extremely pale. Clearly, her injuries had worsened.

"It seems that King Hun was correct. She must have really received the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix." Su Qingling and Ling Mi were both envious.

Bai Ran had used up a lot of Holy Qi and his face was a bit pale too, but his expression was dark. "Good, very good. You're quite hard to deal with. Seems like I can't take care of you unless I use the Rules of Truth."

This was already Bai Ran's third time at the Truth Godly Palace, so he'd naturally figured out some rules.

This time, Bai Ran used ghostly steps and added in the Rules of Truth. His speed instantly increased.

Before Mu Lingxi could react, the Reflection Saint Sword was already above her head.

She felt icy Qi travel from above her head. The other was too fast and she couldn't dodge or block it at all. She didn't even have time to activate her protective runes. It seemed that death was imminent.

But when the Reflection Saint Sword was three inches from her head, it was stopped by a broad black sword. All the Sword Qi and power were forced back.

It was...the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Mu Lingxi hadn't comprehended the Rules of Truth and wasn't Bai Ran's match at all.

That was why the Rules of Truth were so powerful!

If there were two cultivators who were comparable but one had figured out the Rules of Truth, they would be able to defeat the other within seconds.

Zhang Ruochen stood behind Mu Lingxi. Holding the sword, he stared at Bai Ran.

Not only was Bai Ran forced back from that hit, his arm was in great pain too. He finally realized that Zhang Ruochen,

number one on the Saints Merits Rank, did have some skills.

“Ten Kill Origin Sword.”

Bai Ran cast that mid-level saint spell again, but this time, he also added in Rules of Truth. The power of the spell more than doubled.

That powerful sword might went straight toward Zhang Ruochen and Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen grasped Mu Lingxi’s cold hands. With his other hand, he raised the Abyss Ancient Sword. Without using flowery tactics, he activated the sword intent of Sword Seven and struck out.

Thud!

Bai Ran’s nine projections were all destroyed.

Even his true body was forced back. The acumen of the hand holding the sword burst open and became bloody.

Bai Ran looked at Zhang Ruochen as if he was a demon god. “How can this be? You haven’t studied the Rules of Truth. How can you be even stronger than me? Even if you have the Complete Full Body Constitution, you shouldn’t be this strong.”

After all, Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo had activated equality, so everyone was a half-step Saint King.

Under this condition, it depended on who was more advanced in the Rules of Truth, who knew more powerful techniques, whose body was stronger, and whose saint spells were stronger.

Clearly, cultivators who’d studied the Rules of Truth could completely destroy those who hadn’t.

But reality was the opposite.

“Your Rules of Truth are still very shallow with limited power,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“This man! He dares to look down on me.”

Bai Ran thought that Zhang Ruochen's power was strange, so he didn't dare to fight with him one-on-one anymore. "Zhang Ruochen must have something that can enhance his power," he said. "Everyone, fight together. Disable them all and toss them out of Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo."

Zhang Ruochen indeed had treasures that could enhance strength, such as the purple godly stone and Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine, but he hadn't used them at all.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen didn't only have the Saintly Way cultivation of a half-step Saint King. He also had his physical strength at that level. The two combined, Bai Ran naturally wouldn't be able to stop him.

"Be fiercer with your attacks. So what if you kill them? You must leave a deeper lesson, or else Guanghan Field cultivators will keep coming to cause trouble."

The cultivators of Cloud Field all let out long yells. Saintly might poured out of their bodies, transforming into beams of light that shot into the clouds.

There were other dojos established by gods near Mirror Fragrance. The cultivators there were all shocked. Some who liked drama hurried over to see what was happening.

"Six people broke into Mirror Fragrance. They seem to want to conquer it."

"Mirror Fragrance originally belonged to Guanghan Field. After the world started failing, the dojo was taken over by other worlds. Now, the top figure of that dojo is Bai Ran of Cloud Field."

"Merely six of them want to conquer Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo. How is that different from suicide?"

...

There were many dojos without owners in the Truth Heavenly Domain. Fights and deaths occurred often.

After all, having control of a dojo meant another cultivation resource.

“There’s new information that the cultivator attacking Mirror Fragrance is Zhang Ruochen, number one on the Saints Merits Rank. You probably would never imagine which world he’s from.”

“What? Number one on the Saints Merits Rank is attacking Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo? This is explosive news. It’ll probably cause a huge commotion in the Truth Heavenly Domain.”

“Hurry and spread the news that the number one on the Saints Merits Rank has appeared.”

“You didn’t tell me which world Zhang Ruochen is from yet.”

Soon, news that Zhang Ruochen was attacking Mirror Fragrance and representing Guanghan Field spread through Truth Heavenly Domain. The cultivators who were nearby all hurried over with the fastest speed.

After all, who didn’t want to see the top figure of thousands and thousands of Saints?

Chapter 1562 - His Sword Slays Everyone

Chapter 1562: His Sword Slays Everyone

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The wind was blowing outside Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, and one great being after another arrived here.

Many people were surprised that Zhang Ruochen, who was ranked in first place on the ‘Saints Merits Rank,’ was from Guanghai Field.

After all, only strong fields had the best inheritance and refining resources, which could be used to cultivate the best talents. It was almost impossible for a monk from weaker fields to be ranked high on the ‘Saints Merits Rank.’

Almost all the creatures who were ranked in the top ten thousand were from large fields that were top thousand.

“I heard before that Zhang Ruochen got to the first place by luck, and some said he got all the merits by cooperating with Princess Luosha.

“I know that merits battle among the Shatuo Seven Fields. It’s not that impressive that Zhang Rouchen stood out among the weak fields. His real power can’t even get him into the top ten thousand.

“We can see it today. If Zhang Ruochen can get back Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, it’ll mean he’s at least in the same class as the deities from stronger fields.”

...

All the monks were talking.

They were all performing their techniques, trying to see the fight in the dojo.

However, the godly light coming out of the Osmanthus Trees made everything in Jingxiang Cliff Dojo dim. They could only hear the deafening battle sounds coming out.

Su Jing stood dozens of miles away from Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, and he couldn't be more anxious.

The Moon Goddess once said, "Now that I'm back, it's time for Guanghan Field to rise again."

Perhaps to the Moon Goddess, Zhang Ruochen was her trump card to help Guanghan Field get back to its prime. The battle today was of great importance.

If they won, they'd shed light on Guanghan Field's renaissance.

But if they lost, Guanghan Field would be engulfed in darkness for a long time.

In history, weak fields rose not only because of a powerful God, but also because of a peerless talent that could lead the young monks from the entire large field.

Was Zhang Ruochen that peerless talent?

Zhang Ruochen, in Hundred Saints Blood Armor, was holding the Abyss Ancient Sword in one hand and Yi Emperor Bone Scepter in the other, dashing toward Bai Ran like a God of Slaughter.

He needed to kill the most powerful one first.

Bang Bang!

Bai Ran triggered Rule of Truth, performing saint spells to stop Zhang Ruochen.

However, after warding off Zhang Ruochen's seven moves, he'd used up all his protection valuables, and he was severely injured, with one arm being chopped off.

"If it weren't for 'All Lives Equal,' I would've used Saint Figure Rune to kill you," Bai Ran yelled.

“Even without ‘All Lives Equal,’ I can kill you and slash your Saint Figure Rune.”

Zhang Ruochen stepped forward. Instead of performing Sword Technique of Time and drinking Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine, he wanted to practice Sword Eight in this fight.

After all, he was only at level one in Sword Eight. He needed to use it more and more frequently to comprehend it better.

“Don’t you dare be so arrogant, Zhang Ruochen. There’re lots of great beings from Cloud Field, and you can’t fight all of us.”

More than ten great beings rushed forward, performing their techniques and attacking Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

All of them were talented beings like young supreme saints.

Bai Ran looked pleased. He took out a jade-made bottle, drank some life saint liquids, and his arm grew back.

“Take a look behind you, Zhang Ruochen. The monks from Guanghan Field are being encircled by seventeen talents from Cloud Field. They’ll soon be killed. Do you really think you can protect them?”

Bai Ran communicated with the two monks from Cloud Field while he was talking to Zhang Ruochen. He wanted to trigger Mirror Saint Sword with them, utilizing its Second Yao Complete Power.

As long as Zhang Ruochen got distracted by saving the monks from Guanghan Field, they would use the sword to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Both the monks from Cloud Field standing behind Bai Ran were invisible. Even their forces were feeble.

To Bai Ran’s disappointment, Zhang Ruochen didn’t seem to be going to save the monks from Guanghan Field at all. Instead, he released Divine Fire Jingmie, enveloping the great beings from Cloud Field who were encircling him.

“Wind, Rain, Lightning, Thunder.”

“Star, Moon, Cloud, Light.”

Zhang Ruochen mumbled while stepping like a ghost. He waved his sword and drew a thunderstorm to most of Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

He was trying to comprehend ‘Sword Eight Notebook’ left by Sword Emperor Xue Hongchen.

Xue Hongchen’s Sword Eight could be summarized by eight words: “Wind, Rain, Lightning, Thunder, Star, Moon, Cloud, Light.” Even the surface of these could shatter the earth.

A great being from Cloud Field grabbed a large cauldron that was a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon, wielding it against Zhang Ruochen.

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s hand, hitting that large cauldron and knocking it away.

That great being from Cloud Field was hit by fierce sword Qi. His protection runes were all turned into dust.

That great being from Cloud Field was horrified.

“How can he be so powerful?”

As he thought of that, Zhang Ruochen showed up behind him, wielding his Abyss Ancient Sword against him.

Whoosh!

Blood was spilled, and flesh fell from the sky.

After killing that great being from Cloud Field, Zhang Ruochen dashed toward another person. He was so fast that he easily defended himself against more than ten great beings.

“Star and Moon!”

“Wind Dragon, Rain Blade!”

...

Zhang Ruochen kept trying the conception of Sword Eight, and each move had the power to manipulate the weather, which could boost the power of his sword technique.

He killed three great talents from Cloud Field after a couple of moves, and conversely, the monks who were encircling him couldn’t even touch his sleeves.

The great beings from Cloud Field were all horrified, and they finally realized how powerful Zhang Ruochen was. They knew that they would be annihilated if they kept fighting.

Bai Ran could've never expected Zhang Ruochen to be this strong.

As he looked to another battle, he was more shocked.

Seventeen great beings from Cloud Field went to encircle the five monks from Guanghan Field, yet five of those from Cloud Field had been killed by lower abdomen injuries.

It was the woman in purple who killed them, and it seemed her sword was more horrifying than Zhang Ruochen's.

Was that really the Guanghan Field that was bullied before?

“Shiyin Bug, Qiyin bug, use Mirror Saint Sword with me and kill Zhang Ruochen now.”

Bai Ran stopped waiting for an opportunity. The two great beings that were making themselves invisible infused Mirror Saint Sword with their saint Qi, and as inscriptions emerged on the sword, the first circle of saint Qi showed up.

Whoosh!

After twenty thousand of the inscriptions on the sword were triggered, the second circle of saint Qi showed up.

Second Yao Complete Power filled Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, and some of it burst out of the dojo and permeated to hundreds of miles away. All the saints who were watching the fight were amazed.

“They're using a Second Yao Ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons. What a great fight.”

“Seems like Zhang Ruochen's very powerful. Bai Ran was forced to use that weapon.”

Normally, only saint kings were able to trigger Second Yao Complete Power, and ordinary first-step saint kings weren't able to control that sort of power.

Even among the talents on the 'Saints Merits Rank,' few could trigger Second Yao Complete Power by themselves. They

needed the help of other monks.

Second Yao Complete Power was able to crush any creature under saint kings.

Zhang Ruochen noticed a tumbling saint might right after he stabbed that bug-race monk in its heart.

“Do they really think they can kill me with Second Yao Complete Power?”

Zhang Ruochen took out the purple godly stone, infused it with his holy Qi, and then, the purple godly stone turned larger and larger, becoming a towering godly mountain.

The purple godly stone was made from a purple star beside a black hole. According to Ling Xiu, it used to be a part of the body of a God from Stone Race, which made it very mysterious.

“Die, Zhang Ruochen!”

Bai Run used all his strength, wielding Mirror Saint Sword against Zhang Ruochen, trailing a trace of sword Qi like a river.

However, that giant purple godly mountain was thrown toward him as he wielded the sword.

“No...” Bai Ran yelled.

Shiyin Bug and Qiyin Bug were also horrified. They immediately turned into two bugs the size of light spots, trying to fly away.

Boom!

The purple godly mountain didn't just suppress Mirror Saint Sword, but also knocked Bai Ran underground, crushing its body. The mysterious power from the purple godly mountain trashed his saint soul.

The two Yin bugs didn't manage to survive either. Their saint light got dimmer and dimmer as they were suppressed by the purple godly mountain until they died.

He killed three powerful saints with one strike.

The monks from Cloud Field that were still alive were all terrified, trying to step back.

However, instead of running away, they all looked to Osmanthus thicket as if they were expecting something.

Boom!

Golden saint Qi waves gushed out of the Osmanthus thicket, making it hard for Zhang Ruochen to balance himself.

“A saint king’s in Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised but wasn’t scared.

After all, Tree God had activated ‘All Lives Equal,’ so even saint kings had the cultivation of half-step saint kings. They were only at an advantage because of their saintly way comprehension, saint spells, and Rule of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen could probably defeat the most powerful saint kings here.

Chapter 1563 - King Yi

As that golden Holy Qi wave scattered, the countless acres of Osmanthus trees collapsed as if they were made out of dust.

Without the cover of the trees, Zhang Ruochen finally saw a man in golden robes sitting under the cliff in the distance. He seemed to be in his thirties and had a pale, hairless face. His eyes were like golden stars and he was currently studying a painting on the wall.

The cultivators of Cloud Field who were still alive all bowed down to this man, saying, “The cultivators of Guanghan Field are bullies. They killed 16 Saints of Cloud Field in a row. King Yi, please kill them to avenge for those cultivators.”

The man named King Yi “awoke” from his comprehending and stood up slowly.

His aura was both mighty and noble, intimidating the hawkish Cloud Field cultivators so none of them could raise their heads.

“So many people attacked at the same time and you couldn’t even take down six cultivators of Guanghan Field. You’ve humiliated Cloud Field, hmph!”

King Yi was also a half-step Saint King now, but his soft huff was deafening. The cultivators of Cloud Field all became dizzy and pale.

Su Qingling, Ling Mi, and Wen Shucheng weren’t exceptions either. They let out a grunt and were about to fall.

Even Zhang Ruochen’s eardrums hurt. It felt like a needle had pierced him.

Thankfully, he’d absorbed the metal origin, water origin, and a large amount of divine blood, so his physical body had improved greatly and he could withstand this hit.

We’re both half-step Saint Kings, but this man named King Yi is much better at utilizing power than anyone present.

Merely his sound waves showed that he was more advanced.

Someone like this already had an advanced understanding of the Saintly Way. It was a regular attack for most people, but he could combine it with the Saintly Way and produce unpredictable changes to unleash the power of a saint spell.

King Yi's cultivation isn't below Twelfth Royal Uncle, Zhang Ruochen thought inside. He should be a fourth step Saint King. Also, as someone who could come to cultivate in the Truth Heavenly Domain, he must not be an average Saint King. Even a fifth step Saint King might not be his match.

If they weren't kept at the same level now, Zhang Ruochen would definitely die if he tried to go against King Yi with his own strength.

Of course, if he used the Emperor Yi Bone Staff, the result would be different.

King Yi's sharp aura was like an elite looking down at the ants.

When his eyes saw the purple divine mountain beside Zhang Ruochen, fire instantly burned inside his golden eyes. "It can increase combat ability and is quite a rare treasure. Zhang Ruochen, give that to me and I can spare you."

"How can I be spared after killing so many Saints of Cloud Field?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Of course you can. As long as you give me a strand of your saint soul and agree to be my slave, I can spare you."

King Yi's tone was very powerful.

Ling Feiyu carried the Heaven-Burier Sword and walked to Zhang Ruochen's side. "Hand him to me to take care of!"

King Yi's eyes fell upon Ling Feiyu. "Oh, it's a second step Saint King. No wonder you could kill countless strong figures of Cloud Field. But it's best for you to not challenge me, or else you'll die an ugly death."

"Oh?"

When she said that, Ling Feiyu also spat out the power of soundwaves from her red lips.

Thud, thud.

The Saints of Cloud Field all had their eardrums shattered. Blood flowed out.

Even King Yi felt the soundwaves stab into his eardrums like swords. It was horrible pain. He immediately activated saintly power to protect himself and block the soundwaves.

“Such condensed soundwaves. Her control of power is actually above me.” King Yi was shocked.

In order to complete Sword Nine, Ling Feiyu was naturally very precise in her control of power.

Of course, Ling Feiyu didn't have a complete advantage because, like Zhang Ruochen, she didn't study the Way of Truth. King Yi was different. It wasn't his first time cultivating at the Truth Godly Palace. He'd cultivated more Rules of Truth than Bai Ran.

Thus, Ling Feiyu might not be King Yi's match if they really started fighting.

Zhang Ruochen hadn't studied the Way of Truth before, but he grasped the Way of Space and Time, two of the ancient ways.

It could be said that Zhang Ruochen, Ling Feiyu, and King Yi all had their strengths and weaknesses. A life-or-death duel in this “equal” environment made it difficult to predict the winner.

The best way was that Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu could work together. Then they would have an 80% chance of victory.

“Let me try his abilities first. If I can't take him down, then you can help me.” Zhang Ruochen knew that he would encounter strong enemies from various worlds in the Truth Heavenly Domain. Some of them might be even stronger than King Yi.

Thus, he could fight with King Yi and build up experience. If he met enemies of the same level in the future, he would be

able to face them more calmly.

Whoosh!

Before King Yi could prepare, Zhang Ruochen cast a time sword technique. In that instant, the Abyss Ancient Sword stabbed at King Yi's forehead.

Boom!

King Yi's body slid backwards. His entire body shimmered with golden light and soon, Zhang Ruochen's sword might all dissolved.

King Yi didn't fight back. He used his forehead to block the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Slowly, he steadied himself and didn't continue sliding back.

King Yi's lips curled into a smile. "After adding time into the sword technique, it's indeed too fast for me to dodge, but it's too weak. You can't break my Undying Iron Body at all."

Zhang Ruochen immediately collected his sword and retreated quickly. His expression was unprecedentedly serious.

The Abyss Ancient Sword was so sharp, but it couldn't even scratch King Yi's skin.

"I already gave you a way to live, but you didn't want it. I guess I can only swallow your body, drink your blood, and improve my Undying Iron Body further."

King Yi strode toward Zhang Ruochen. It looked like he was walking, but a huge gale actually lifted and he was as fast as lightning.

"Yin Yang Thousand Thunder Hand."

King Yi just flipped his hand over and 28 Rules of Palm Way entered his palm technique. He quickly cast a mid-level saint spell.

Even Wang Xu, seventh of the Saints Merits Record, couldn't compare to King Yi's speed of casting the spell.

The faster one cast a spell, the faster his changes could be. Usually, his opponent would be dead before they could even

build up strength.

Even Zhang Ruochen was caught by surprise and had to use the Spatial Move to dodge his attack.

King Yi was very experienced. After missing the first time, he immediately cast a second palm. It was as if he could predict where Zhang Ruochen would move to.

So powerful. This kind of foresight and experience isn't something a Saint can possess.

This time, Zhang Ruochen couldn't hide anymore. He could only wave his Abyss Ancient Sword and clash head-on.

Kaboom!

Thousands of beams of lightning flew out of King Yi's palm. It hit the Abyss Ancient Sword, sending Zhang Ruochen flying back.

Mid-level saint spells had boundless power. Only another mid-level saint spell could stop it.

The so-called Yin Yang Thousand Thunder Hand sent thousands of bolts of thunder rolling with one palm, like a thunder god descending. With the palm up, it was yang thunder. With the palm down, it was yin thunder.

Fourth step Saint Kings like King Yi were experts at the Yin Yang Thousand Thunder Hand. They could also use it continuously without worrying that they would run out of saintly power.

“Zhang Ruochen, I may be restricted to the half-step Saint King Realm now, but I'm still only a sliver away from first step Saint King. You're only a new half-step Saint King and you want to fight with me... Oh...”

Suddenly, his eyes widened.

Zhang Ruochen stood among the thunder and lightning, unharmed. Not only had he not fallen, but his battle intent was also actually rolling. The cries of dragons and elephants traveled from his body.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the purple divine mountain. He jumped up, slamming it down on King Yi.

King Yi cast the Yin Yang Thousand Thunder Hand again. Bolts of lightning flew out like rivers, crashing against the mountain.

Two huge bursts of power clashed head-on.

Even a mid-level saint spell couldn't stop Zhang Ruochen and the purple divine mountain's attack.

“Such strong power.”

King Yi could only feel his organs shuddering as he kept stepping back. Each step he took would crack a large portion of the ground. It was like he would shatter the entire Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo.

A fourth step Saint King was actually forced back by a half-step Saint King. King Yi was embarrassed. “You really think I can't take care of you?” he yelled.

Whoosh!

The rules of the world trembled in the dojo.

Then King Yi activated beams of Rules of Truth. They melded into his palm, combining with the Yin Yang Thousand Thunder Hand.

The power it unleashed multiplied.

King Yi pressed his palm down. The lightning all transformed into snakes and hit the purple divine mountain, suppressing Zhang Ruochen under it.

King Yi had already come to the Truth Godly Palace seven times. He'd comprehended more advanced rules than Bai Ran, so his power was also stronger.

It could be said that Zhang Ruochen was at a great disadvantage for not having comprehended Rules of Truth.

“Die!”

King Yi flew to somewhere dozens of meters high and transformed into a beam of golden light. Then he plummeted

as rules of palm and truth interwove on his hands. He struck at the purple divine mountain.

Zhang Ruochen was pressed under the mountain. Before he could escape, King Yi's strong palm power had already slapped down.

Kaboom!

The purple divine mountain sank down seven feet.

Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo was covered in cracks that extended outside. The long stone steps that led to the dojo broke into a dozen parts as if it underwent a catastrophe.

"Is it over?"

King Yi stared at the purple divine mountain and had a suspicious expression. Suddenly, he felt danger. "Oh, no."

Reflexively, King Yi slapped backward. Sainly palm power flooded out, overlapping like waves on the sea surface.

But a two-meter-long spatial crack was like a black boat. It cut across the waves of palm power and hit toward King Yi's chest.

"That's...spatial power."

King Yi felt huge danger. His pupils shrunk to golden dots the size of needles. At the same time, his body shrunk 10,000 times smaller. He became the size of a grain of rice and shot out like lightning, wanting to dodge the spatial crack.

After shooting 30 feet away, his body expanded back to its original size.

There was a wound on his left shoulder.

Even though he'd escaped quickly, he'd only avoided the fatal hit. A chunk of flesh had still been cut off by the spatial crack. Large amounts of saintly blood poured out of the injury, dyeing half of his body red.

"My Undying Iron Body is actually...defenseless against spatial power."

King Yi finally realized that this half-step Saint King wasn't easy to deal with.

If he wasn't careful, he might be defeated today.

Chapter 1564 - Death Halo

“I didn’t kill him.”

Zhang Ruochen stood across from King Yi and looked upset.

Spatial crack didn’t manage to kill him.

Zhang Ruochen pressed his chest as he felt a burning sensation coming out of his organs. Obviously, he was injured by clashing with King Yi.

Neither Zhang Ruochen nor King Yi made an attack recklessly.

The great beings from Cloud Field that were still alive all looked at each other as they didn’t believe King Yi would suffer by the hands of Zhang Ruochen.

“No wonder he managed to get more than four hundred million merits and get to first place on the ‘Saints Merits Rank.’ He’s indeed a force to be reckoned with.”

King Yi had an invincible King Kong body which could swallow millions of creatures and refine their blood. It was a mid-tier saint defense saint spell.

As it swallowed more creatures, the invincible King Kong body would only become stronger and might become a high-level saint spell.

Sizzle!

The wound on King Yi’s left shoulder gradually recovered. He said, “You’ve used your trump card, Zhang Ruochen, so I suggest you get the hell out of Jingxiang Cliff Dojo now, otherwise, you’ll die.”

Zhang Ruochen operated ‘Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture,’ which healed more than half his wounds. He said, “Sounds like you have stronger tricks.”

“Of course. I practice more than one mid-level saint spell,” King Yi said.

Ling Feiyi noticed more and more monks gather outside Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, and she said, “No need to waste time with him anymore, Zhang Ruochen. Let’s fight it together in case more monks from Cloud Field gather here.”

Cloud Field was a strong field that had many dojos in Truth Heavenly Domain.

The monks from Cloud Field dojos would definitely come for support if they kept wasting time.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t someone who only loved to flaunt his power. He nodded and said, “Okay. Let’s finish the fight together soon.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a wine bag and swallowed the burning Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine.

His saint Qi started to run like mad oxen.

Mu Lingxi, Su Qingling, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi all took out their wine bags and took a drink of Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine.

They knew that Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine was more valuable than many saint pills, so they didn’t binge it like Zhang Ruochen did.

Zhang Ruochen summoned Demonic Sound out and said, “Team up with Lingxi and the others and take down all the monks from Cloud Field. We must make them pay for occupying our dojo.”

“I want a drink as well.”

Demonic Sound licked her lips.

Zhang Ruochen took out a wine bag and gave it to her.

He knew Demonic Sound loved the wine, so Zhang Ruochen said, “Don’t abuse it. Each sip of this wine is as valuable as a saint pill.”

Demonic Sound smiled, opened the lid and had a huge sip.

The monks from Cloud Field were trying to stall them until the great beings from other dojos could come help them, so they

all cheered inside when they saw Zhang Ruochen and the others drinking.

King Yi was the first one who noticed that the saintly way forces coming out of Zhang Ruochen and the others were surging.

“The drink they had can improve their power. Be careful,” King Yi yelled to stop the monks from Cloud Field from underestimating them.

Any valuable that could improve a monk’s power, such as saint pills, saint medicine, or saint alcohol, was of great value and inaccessible to ordinary monks.

And besides, those valuables usually had side effects.

The more they improved their power, the stronger the side effects.

Which was why nobody would take that kind of valuable easily if it wasn’t a fight of life or death.

A valuable like Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wind that could double a monk’s power without any side effect was so scarce that every monk would want it.

“They drank saint wine to improve their power. Seems like the monks from Guanghan Field are all in now.

“Show all your trump cards to ward them off for longer, then the great beings from Cloud Field will come.”

Some great beings from Cloud Field took saint pills, some took out attack runes, while some formed a formation.

The ultimate battle was drawing near.

Zhang Ruochen pulled the purple godly mountain out of the ground, and his skin looked crimson. He dashed toward King Yi like a mad lion king.

Ling Feiyu didn’t drink Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine, as she was a sword way monk. She needed to stay sober and focus all the time to perform her sword techniques the best.

She might not get stronger after taking Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine.

The worst thing from drinking Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine was the drinkers would go completely mad. Although they could still stay rational, it would still affect their decision-making.

King Yi kept utilizing the Rule of Truth to perform palm prints, yet he was only slightly stronger than Zhang Ruochen, so he couldn't suppress Zhang Ruochen at all.

As King Yi exhausted his power fighting Zhang Ruochen, Ling Feiyu showed up beside Zhang Ruochen like a trace of purple shadow and drew a circle using her Heaven-Burier Sword.

Whoosh!

The sword circle surrounded King Yi.

Sword Way Xuanguang flew out from the center of the sword circle, hitting King Yi's chest.

Following a clacking sound, Heaven-Burier Sword pierced through King Yi's invincible King Kong body. King Yi grabbed the sword, and at the same time, he retreated, trying to dissolve Ling Feiyu's sword power.

"It's Sword Way Xuangang... Impressive..."

King Yi clenched his teeth, and his saint power flowed rapidly, gathering in his arms and chest.

Zhang Ruochen had performed spatial crack before to break King Yi's invincible King Kong body, which deteriorated the defense of invincible King Kong body, so he couldn't ward off Sword Way Xuangang now.

As Ling Feiyu suppressed King Yi, Zhang Ruochen held the purple godly stone up and jumped up behind her, hitting King Yi.

Ling Feiyu didn't slow down his sword as she could pierce through King Hun's body any time.

Zhang Ruochen's attack was also able to injure King Yi severely.

King Yi was trapped in despair.

“Fight!” King Yi yelled, tensing his leg muscles. He lowered his body and stopped grabbing Heaven-Burier Sword. Instead, he mobilized saintly way rules and formed Yin and Yang Thousand Thunder Hand.

Sizzle!

She stabbed King Yi’s chest by Heaven-Burier Sword, and his saint blood gushed out like a spring.

King Yi’s face got fiercer as if he didn’t feel pain at all. He took a large step forward to dodge the purple godly mountain coming from above. He used Yin and Yang Thousand Thunder Hand to hit Ling Feiyu’s head.

Heaven-Burier Sword pierced through King Yi’s entire body, and the sword Qi crushed King Yi.

“Great skill to survive.”

All Ling Feiyu could see was fierce lightning. She threw away Heaven-Burier Sword as she was able to be slapped to death by King Yi. She mobilized the power of her purple blouse, releasing hundreds of bolts of lightning.

Boom!

Ling Feiyu hadn’t comprehended the Rule of Truth after all, so she was at a disadvantage in this round. She kept stepping back until she resolved the power of King Yi.

King Yi didn’t expect that he would only manage to knock her away.

“Are you wearing a godly blouse?”

King Yi gazed at Ling Feiyu and couldn’t be more jealous.

If he was the one wearing that purple blouse, the power of his Yin and Yang Thousand Thunder Hand would surge.

Ling Feiyu only shot him a cold glance. She extended her hand and released the intent of sword soul, and Heaven-Burier Sword that was inside King Yi’s body made a huge sword humming sound, about to tear his body apart.

King Yi bent his knees, put his hands together and formed a whirlpool-shaped golden saintly way force, throwing Heaven-

Burier Sword away.

Ling Feiyu grabbed Heaven-Burier Sword again and said, “Impressive.”

“If it weren’t for ‘All Lives Equal,’ I would’ve killed you with one hand,” King Yi said.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen held the purple godly mountain tightly, landing behind King Yi with his coat waving. He yelled, “Show us all you’ve got, otherwise, you’ll die soon.”

Zhang Ruochen teamed up with Ling Feiyu, and they severely injured King Yi after a few exchanges.

They would be able to kill King Yi after another round of attacks.

“You’re so arrogant, brat!”

King Yi stopped talking. He put his finger on his forehead, and then, a golden halo rushed out of his head.

The halo kept spinning and got larger and larger. Following a booming sound, thirty-two saintly way rules merged with the halo. Suddenly, the halo got immensely large.

The shadow coming out of the halo encircled the entire Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

Although Yin and Yang Thousand Thunder Hand performed by King Yi was also a mid-tier saint spell, there were only eighteen saintly way rules in it. The more saintly way rules there were, the stronger the mid-tier saint spell was.

All the monks watching the fight from outside the dojo were all astounded looking at the halo.

“That’s a mid-level saint spell, Death Halo.”

“How did a half-step saint king refine a mid-level saint spell like Death Halo?”

“It’s got to be a saint king. There must be a saint king from Cloud Field in Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.”

Chapter 1565 - Kill All, Spare None

Chapter 1565: Kill All, Spare None

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Su Jing saw the huge halo rising up in Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo and his expression changed abruptly. Only someone at his level would know how difficult it was to successfully cultivate the Death Halo.

But once it was cast, how could anyone under the Saint King Realm withstand it?

“No, I must save them even if I’m punished by the Truth Godly Palace.”

The few who’d entered the dojo were the future of Guanghai Field. He couldn’t let them die in there.

Su Jing was about to rush into the dojo when the huge halo suddenly shattered. There was also a pained cry. “Sword soul... You actually cultivated a sword soul...”

Inside the dojo.

King Yi grabbed his head with both hands and his body convulsed in pain. He couldn’t control his saintly power at all, so the Death Halo shattered before he could cast it fully.

Just then, Ling Feiyu had used the sword soul’s power to attack King Yi’s saint soul directly, injuring it greatly.

It was a big deal for any being to have their saint soul injured. On the lighter side, they would become listless. On the heavier side, their minds would break apart.

King Yi yelled in pain while sharp golden legs grew out of his body. Part of his skin turned into a hard shell. A moment later, he was a strange half-human, half-bug creature.

Clearly, after his saint soul was injured, he couldn't even control his physical shape anymore.

A Cloud Field cultivator from the Insect Race rushed to his side. "King Yi, what's wrong?"

"R...retreat...get out..."

King Yi knew his advantage was over, so he controlled his golden wings and hurried out to escape from Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo.

As long as he escaped, Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu would have to follow the rules of the Truth Godly Palace and couldn't kill him anymore.

Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu knew that King Yi was a strong enemy. How could they let him leave alive? Thus, both used their fastest speed to pursue him.

The cultivators outside the dojo were all surprised. They didn't know what had happened.

The Death Halo had just appeared. How could it suddenly shatter?

"Look, someone is running out of the dojo. Who is it?" A Spiritual Power Saint with the Heavenly Eyes suddenly cried out, pointing at the steps leading to the dojo.

Countless saintly eyes in the world focused in that direction.

A half-man, half-bug creature rushed out of the divine light that shone from the Osmanthus tree, appearing in their sight.

"It's King Yi from the Golden-winged Insect Race."

"It indeed is King Yi. He has strong royal blood and has come to the Truth Heavenly Domain many times to cultivate. He's one of the top elites of Cloud Field and may become the next Supreme Saint of his race."

"King Yi isn't any weaker than Bai Ran in the half-step Saint King Realm."

“He reached the Saint King Realm 60 years ago. With his strong body and talent, he must be at a much higher level by now.”

The cultivators outside the dojo from other worlds were quite familiar with Cloud Field and explained King Yi’s background.

But as the divine light outside the dojo faded, they finally saw clearly that King Yi was bleeding and...escaping with all his might. It was like his mortal enemy was chasing him.

“Am I seeing this incorrectly? King Yi is actually hurt!”

“Those six cultivators from Guanghan Field could force King Yi to run for his life? How is that possible? King Yi is so strong...”

They couldn’t believe their eyes. This kind of result was completely unlike their predictions.

Could it be Zhang Ruochen? This kind of thought appeared in many people’s minds.

Su Jing stopped, slightly taken aback, but he quickly smiled. Even King Yi had been injured and could only escape. It seemed that Guanghan Field had the absolute upper hand in this battle.

Just as King Yi was about to burst out of Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo, a powerful roar sounded before him.

“Where are you going?”

Zhang Ruochen used Spatial Move and jumped out of the void, appearing before King Yi. He hurled the purple godly mountain and smashed it onto him, making him bleed all over. His huge frame flew backward.

Ling Feiyu happened to hurry over from the back. She used Sword Way Xuangang and transformed into a sword rainbow, stabbing through King Yi’s body.

Thud.

His body fell heavily onto the ground, so injured that he couldn’t stand back up again. “Zhang Ruochen!” he yelled. “I

am the first grandson of the Golden-winged Supreme Saint. If you dare to kill me, my grandfather will definitely take revenge and tear you into thousands of pieces.”

In order to prevent King Yi from deactivating his saintly source and killing them all, Zhang Ruochen acted decisively. He struck with a spatial crack, hitting King Yi and killing him.

The cultivators who'd gathered outside the dojo all witnessed this and it was as if they'd become fossilized. They were dumbfounded.

Zhang Ruochen had killed a fourth step Saint King. That cultivator was also the grandson of a strong Supreme Saint.

The dozen Cloud Field cultivators who were still alive had just rushed out and saw Zhang Ruochen kill King Yi. They paled in fear and stopped, afraid to take another step.

Zhang Ruochen drank the Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine, so murderous intent bounded within him. He scanned the people and yelled, “Whoever dares to enter Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo will be killed. No one can dream about escaping!”

“F*ck, Zhang Ruochen is crazy now. He won't let us go at all. Everyone, fight him to the end!”

A bald man from the Insect Race yelled and used a taboo spell. His saintly blood started burning and the power spreading out of him escalated.

The cultivators of Cloud Field all used taboo spells that used up their vitality to forcefully raise their combat ability.

“Zhang Ruochen, you forced us onto this path, so you must suffer from the consequences.”

“You don't give me a chance to survive, so we must die together.”

Some of the Cloud Field cultivators searched for a chance to deactivate their saintly sources with death in their minds. They wanted to die with Zhang Ruochen and get rid of one of Cloud Field's greatest enemies.

The dozen Cloud Field cultivators charged over wildly.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the bottom of the steps. Instead of retreating, he took out a Tiangang Purple Fire Rune and activated the patterns on it. He sent it out.

Then he used the purple godly mountain as a shield before him.

Boom!

Wild power swept through half of the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo. Purple fire spread everywhere, melting the soil into golden liquid in many places.

When Zhang Ruochen moved the mountain aside, the cultivators of Cloud Field had all fallen to the ground in shattered remnants. They popped and crackled like a bonfire.

“What a pity,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I wasted another one.”

A large group of cultivators was gathered outside the dojo. Earlier, they’d all been deep in discussion, but now, they all fell deathly silent.

Only wind whipped through the crowd.

Perhaps they’d held their breaths for too long. A moment later, everyone started gasping sharply.

“Too bloody, too cruel, too extreme.”

A youth with a devilish pattern on his forehead started yelling, “Who said that Zhang Ruochen doesn’t deserve to be first on the Saints Merits Rank? You almost killed me! Thankfully, King Yi and the cultivators of Cloud Field tested Zhang Ruochen’s true strength. Otherwise, I would’ve gone stupidly to challenge him. With his cruel tactics, I would’ve died!”

It wasn’t just this youth that had wanted to challenge Zhang Ruochen earlier.

But seeing how brave, cruel, and bloody Zhang Ruochen was, who still dared to do that? It was clear that he was a murderous demon.

“I’ve seen the battle projection of Zhang Ruochen in Zuling Field,” another cultivator said. “He killed so many Luosha by

himself that the army had to escape like dogs. And you all still dare to offend him? You think you're living too long?"

Around 120 miles away from the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo stood a man and woman. They wore pale blue robes. The word "truth" was embroidered on the collars.

There was also a white crane embroidered on the sleeves.

Wearing sky-blue robes with cranes meant that they were divine disciples of the Truth Godly Palace. They had big backgrounds and could patrol the Truth Heavenly Domain. They were powerful and couldn't be compared to by third, second, or first-tier disciples.

The man looked very young—around 20 years old. "Zhang Ruochen caused such bloodshed as soon as he came to the Truth Heavenly Domain. It's clear that he wants to set up a reputation and make everyone fear him."

"As expected."

The woman had a white veil over her face and her body had an ethereal aura. She was mysterious like the moon in the clouds or a flower in the mirror.

After a pause, she said, "Perhaps, this is only the beginning of the bloodshed."

The man nodded. "Guanghan Field has been bullied for 100,000 years and the resentment built up is like the water in the ocean. They have to vent it out. The appearance of Zhang Ruochen, this Time and Space Descendant, will definitely be the start of a storm in the Truth Heavenly Domain."

"What does the Divine Master say?"

The woman's voice was gentle like a creek.

"The Divine Master says," the man said, "that this is the extension of that battle from 100,000 years ago. The Truth Godly Palace won't get involved. As long as the situation can still be controlled and they don't break any rules of the Truth Godly Palace, we'll just watch on."

"That side is represented by Shang Ziyan. Can Zhang Ruochen beat him?" the woman asked without any emotions.

After a pause, the man chuckled. “Didn’t Shang Ziyan already lose a few days ago? Zhang Ruochen is Saint Monk Xumi’s heir, after all. He controls the Way of Time and Space. He might be able to cut a path in the darkness.

“Plus, Zhang Ruochen might not only have enemies in the Heaven World. I’ve read the scrolls from 100,000 years ago carefully and analyzed them. The Taoist heir might go interact with him. The Buddhist line also benefited from Saint Monk Xumi. Instead, it’s the Time Godly Palace and Space Godly Palace that are hard to predict.”

1

“When the major ways compete, there will be mountains of corpses and seas of blood,” the woman said. “When the fire of hatred burns, only the blood of the dead can extinguish it.”

The wind blew past.

The man and woman faded, disappearing from the plains.

Chapter 1566 - The Greed of the Sinister Power

Chapter 1566: The Greed of the Sinister Power

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Guanghan Field took back Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.”

“Zhang Ruochen, who’s ranked first on the ‘Saints Merits Rank,’ killed a great being from the Bug race the first day he arrived in Truth Heavenly Domain. It was King Yi.”

“Great beings from Cloud Field were slaughtered. More than thirty saints were killed.”

...

The thrilling news was spread in Truth Heavenly Domain. All the talents were thrilled. They all sent signal flares to discuss what was going to happen next.

And they all reached the same conclusion, that it would be the start of the turmoil in Truth Heavenly Domain.

There was a dojo called ‘Saint Building’ in Hollow Heavenly Domain, built at the top of a saint mountain. Around the mountain were stiff cliffs, and snow covered the mountain top.

There was a towering palace in the snow, and the light coming out of the palace seemed to be shining upon an area of ten thousand square miles.

At this moment, Shang Ziyang was sitting in Saint Building Dojo, and there were two jade-made signal flares on the desk in front of him.

One of them told him about how Zhang Ruochen took back Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

The other one recorded the information about Ling Xiu and Ling Feiyu.

The power behind Shang Ziyan was indeed enormous, as it managed to get all the information about Ling Xiu and Ling Feiyu in days.

“Zhang Ruochen managed to kill King Yi before practicing Rule of Truth, which is indeed beyond my expectations.”
Shang Ziyan pinched the signal flare and smiled elegantly.

There were dozens of people sitting below Sang Ziyan.

Every one of them had an impressive identity. Some represented a strong field, some came from an ancient civilization, and some were connected to Gods.

However, most of them used some special skills to cover their faces and forces as if dozens of mysterious ghosts were gathering together.

Whoosh!

The door was opened, and the wind and snow stormed in.

A young man walked into the palace and said, “King Yi wasn’t killed by Zhang Ruochen.”

Shang Ziyan looked at that young man and said, “You’re late, Xu.”

He closed the door, and the snow fell to the ground like white petals.

Wang Xu walked in, sat down in a spot and said, “I went to Jingxiang Cliff Dojo. King Yi yelled ‘Sword Soul’ before he died.”

“I reckon that saint king sword warrior from Kunlun’s Field performed Sword Eight to crush King Yi’s saint soul, after which he was killed by Zhang Ruochen.”

A dimming voice came out of a cluster of light mist. “A saint king who completed Sword Nine? Who is that sword warrior from Kunlun’s Field?”

Shang Ziyan said, “She’s Ling Feiyu, who is practicing ‘Heavenly Devil Stone Inscription’ on ‘Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank.’ Also, she got the inheritance from the Goddess of Lightning. She managed to become a saint king when the saintly way rules were fragmented in Kunlun’s Field, which shows her great potential.”

A voice came out of that black and white light mist again, “A hundred thousand years ago, the saintly way rules in Kunlun’s Field crumbled, which made it unsuitable for refining. Anyone who can become a saint in that environment is a great talent. As for those who became saint kings, they all have the potential to become supreme saints.”

There was a cluster of dark demonic Qi floating at the corner of the palace. “The thirty-six Heavenly Devil Stone Inscriptions were the supreme refining classics of the demonic way. Every one of them is unfathomably mysterious, and one can form Apocalyptic Demonic Qi inside his body if he reaches a certain level.”

Shang Ziyan smiled. “Sounds like you’re interested in that, Qiong Lin.”

The demonic Qi said, “We inherited thirty-six supreme demonic way techniques, but they’re just overprints of ‘Heavenly Devil Stone Inscriptions,’ and they lack lots of essences. We can only form Blood Ocean Demonic Qi instead of the top-tier Apocalyptic Demonic Qi.”

“Even so, Black Demon Field still managed to be ranked in the top one thousand in Heaven World. If we get the real copy of Heavenly Devil Stone Inscription,’ Black Demon Field’s power will only surge.”

Another voice came. “Kunlun’s Field was revived mainly because they have six of the classics on ‘Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank,’ which is amazing.”

“Kunlun’s Field has six divine techniques from ‘Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank,’ and ten of the divine weapons from ‘Taibai Divine Weapons List.’ We need to seize them all if we want to suppress them again.”

...

Shang Ziyang knew exactly what they were thinking. They were indeed all from powerful fields, yet some of them didn't even get to practice the divine techniques on 'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank.'

There were, after all, only eighty-one techniques on 'Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank,' and only the most top-tier large fields in Heaven World owned one of them.

Shang Ziyang said, "Rest assured, everyone. Kunlun's Field was defeated by us even in its prime, and now, they only have one ten-thousandth of the power they had before. Their divine techniques and divine weapons will be ours soon.

"Of course, we need to get rid of Zhang Ruochen first. He's more of a threat to us than Empress Chi Yao and the Moon Goddess. They're Gods who're bound by heavenly rules, so they can't do much about the situation. As for the one who's actually playing the game, he's the person we need to annihilate."

A creature laughed and said, "Cloud Field has tremendous power in Truth Heavenly Domain. We don't even know whether Zhang Ruochen can guard Jingxiang Cliff Dojo or not.

"According to my information, King Yi can only be ranked top ten in Cloud Field."

Shang Ziyang said, "There're lots of restrictions on saint kings fighting Zhang Ruochen in Truth Heavenly Domain. If they go a step too far, Truth Godly Palace will interfere. The most powerful saint kings from Cloud Field can't assassinate Zhang Ruochen. When's King Daxi coming to Truth Heavenly Domain?"

Wood Soul Woman said, "King Daxi has taken off. She's on her way here now."

Wood Soul Woman said, "Okay. Let's wait for her. We'll let those from Cloud Field deal with Zhang Ruochen first. Let's see whether Zhang Ruochen's strong enough to fight me or not."

Shang Ziyan raised his wine glass and said, “Have a drink first, everyone. Many supreme saints from the weak fields can’t taste this wine. Every sip you take, your cultivation will be largely improved, as if you’re drinking saintly way rules.”

...

Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

The valuables from the deceased great beings from Cloud Field were gathered. There were in total more than twenty ten-thousand-patterns saint weapons, which showed those monks’ status.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t see any valuable that attracted him. He said, “You guys can pick first.”

Everyone started to choose their favorable saint weapons, saint capes, and saint pills, except Ling Feiyu.

They all knew that Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu won the fight today, so they only picked some of their favorites.

There were still lots of valuables left after they were done selecting.

“Pick some for yourself too.” Zhang Ruochen looked to Ling Feiyu.

Ling Feiyu shot a glance at those valuables and grabbed half of the valuables left. She didn’t want those valuables either, but Moon Worship Demonic Sect needed them.

Zhang Ruochen put the rest of the valuables into his space ring, leaving only a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon for the Abyss Ancient Sword to refine.

After refining that weapon, the number of inscriptions on the Abyss Ancient Sword increased, and its quality was improved.

After reaching twenty thousand inscriptions, the Abyss Ancient Sword wasn’t able to refine other saint weapons like before. It was only able to absorb several thousand-patterns saint weapons, or just one ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon.

Zhang Ruochen had communicated with the sword spirit before, and it said, “The sword spirit needs to comprehend.”

Zhang Ruochen needed to comprehend the saintly way rules in rules emperor weapons after getting one, only after which could he transform those into his own saintly way rules. He couldn't just refine the rules emperor weapons and become a supreme saint.

The sword spirit of the Abyss Ancient Sword was just like that.

Su Jing walked into Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, looking at the corpses lying on the ground and the Way of Truth pictures left by Tree God. He couldn't be more joyful.

“It's been many years, the monks from Guanghai Field can finally enter the dojo that used to belong to Guanghai Field. You can be pleased now, Tree God!” Su Jing's voice was trembling.

It seemed that Tree God heard what Su Jing said. That Osmanthus Tree shone light upon the ground.

Seedlings grew on the ground, and those seedlings immediately grew and blossomed, forming a thicket of Osmanthus trees, which made the dojo look more vigorous than before.

Su Jing tore up as he had never expected himself to lose control of his emotions given his age and experience.

He then looked to Ling Feiyu, and now, he didn't have any complaints anymore. Instead, he reckoned Zhang Ruochen could really think deeply and plan thoroughly in that he invited someone so powerful for Guanghai Field.

If it weren't for her, Guanghai Field wouldn't have been able to take back Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

Su Qinling, Ling Mi, and Wen Shushen rarely left Shatuo Heavenly Domain, and they had never been to Truth Godly Domain before, so they weren't as emotional as Su Jing.

The emotion stood for the long lost dignity of a monk who was bullied for coming from a weak field.

“Let me set up a protection formation. We can't let other large fields seize Jingxiang Cliff Dojo again.” Su Jing walked out of

the dojo.

Although Su Jing was just a monk staying in Truth Heavenly Domain temporarily, he was a member of Guanghan Field, so he could set up a formation around Guanghan Field's dojo.

On the other hand, the temporary monks from Cloud Field could only stay in their own dojos, and they couldn't come to set up a formation in Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, so the guarding formation in Jingxiang Cliff Dojo wasn't that powerful. Zhang Ruochen could easily break it with Yi Emperor Bone Scepter.

After all, the monks from Cloud Field didn't pay much attention to the dojos they seized, and they would've never imagined that Guanghan Field would be able to take their dojo back.

“I'll follow you.”

Zhang Ruochen caught up with Su Jing.

Chapter 1567 - Spatial Maze and Time Formation

Chapter 1567: Spatial Maze and Time Formation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Su Jing's cultivation was very advanced, but his knowledge of formations was far from those formation saint masters.

His formation was created by Supreme Saint Jiuling and named "Jiuling Blood Sea Formation." One must use the blood of a member of the Jiuling Divine Bird Race to draw the patterns in order to unleash its greatest power.

After the formation was created, Su Jing said to Zhang Ruochen, "Now, the Jiuling Blood Sea Formation can stop a first step Saint King's attacks. This is the strongest formation that I can set up."

In Guanghan Field, Su Jing's formation skills were in the top 100. One could say that he was a grandmaster in the Formation Way.

But a formation that could only stop a first step Saint King was clearly not enough to stop the attacks from Cloud Field.

"If my Spiritual Power and formation skills improve more," Su Jing said, "and I reach the saint master level, my Jiuling Blood Sea Formation would be able to stop even sixth step Saint Kings. Unfortunately, that step is too hard. Right now, there are only four formation saint masters in the entire Guanghan Field.

"For a major world, it's harder to develop a formation saint master than a Supreme Saint.

“But I have other tactics.”

Su Jing struck with the origin nine feathers of Supreme Saint Jiuling, stabbing them into nine places of the formation. They combined together.

He was going all out to guard the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo!

“As long as a Spiritual Power Saint activates the formation and feathers at the same time, this formation can stop a sixth step Saint King.”

Su Jing spoke proudly, but he was also hinting at Zhang Ruochen to not be worried. With this formation’s protection, the defense of the dojo was as sturdy as a steel wall.

Zhang Ruochen was still worried.

So many top Saints from Cloud Field had died, including Bai Ran and King Yi. How could they leave them alone?

Even though it wasn’t likely that someone stronger than a sixth step Saint King would appear, what if they did?

“I also have some tactics that may strengthen the defenses even more,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Su Jing was a bit shocked. “You also study formations?”

“I know a little bit.”

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the edge of the Jiuling Blood Sea Formation. Then, he pressed onto the ground and activated spatial power. The space twisted into a spatial maze.

Su Jing followed behind Zhang Ruochen. Sensing carefully, he discovered that the twisted space was actually connected in strange ways.

It was like an invisible maze.

More terrifying than a maze. The cultivator could destroy a maze, but if they tried to destroy a spatial maze, his force could fall back on him.

The spatial rules had already been distorted and unclear.

“No wonder they say the ancient ways are terrifying. This Zhang Ruochen has only set up a spatial maze, and even I find

it troublesome. If I'm stuck inside, I might not be able to get out."

"This spatial maze is combined with the Jiuling Blood Sea Formation. No matter how many strong cultivators from Cloud Field come, there's no way they can break into the dojo!"

Su Jing looked at Zhang Ruochen's backside with amazement. Inside, he also lamented, This is a true talent! When I was young, I was also a top talent of Guanghan Field, but compared to him, I'm too average.

After setting up the spatial maze, Zhang Ruochen finally let out a long sigh. He'd used up too much Spiritual Power and was exhausted.

This feeling was like a regular person not having slept for three days and nights. His head felt heavy and his body was extraordinarily weak.

Su Jing was quite impressed by Zhang Ruochen. "You've just experienced a bloody battle and then used great Spiritual Power to set up the spatial maze. You must be tired, right? Take a rest!"

Zhang Ruochen nodded. He took out a divine pill for recovering energy. Swallowing it, he closed his eyes and rested for a while.

When he'd recovered a bit, Zhang Ruochen stood up immediately to check if there were holes in the spatial maze. After checking, he finally said, "Our current formation is only defense. It's not that intimidating for the cultivators who want to conquer Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo."

Su Jing's heart jumped. "You have other plans?"

"Yes." Zhang Ruochen nodded and pushed out a smile. "I can put it to use, so let's try it."

He extended a finger and pointed into the sky. Catching a time print, he started drawing with his finger, carving a print to speed up time.

Ever since he'd witnessed how terrifying the time formation was in Zuling Field, Zhang Ruochen had been studying it.

The Time and Space Secret Guide also had records of time formations. In the formation, time flowed faster and could make a cultivator's lifespan decrease soundlessly.

It seemed like an instant, but one year had actually passed.

It seemed like 15 minutes, but a Saint's cultivation was wiped out completely, turning from a beautiful youth to a white-haired elder close to his grave.

However, controlling time was much harder than controlling space. Even setting up a crude time formation was ten times harder than the spatial formation.

Zhang Ruochen held the Time and Space Secret Guide. Sometimes, he stopped to research; sometimes, he reached out to draw a time print; other times, he closed his eyes to rest.

In the dojo, Mi Ling's eyes filled with an impressed color. "The Priest is already so strong, but he's still studying and creating a safer environment for us. What other excuses do we have to slack off?"

Su Qingling and Wen Shucheng both nodded. They walked to the image of truth left behind by the Tree God and started to study it as quickly as possible.

The closest group of Cloud Field cultivators hurried over to the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo. The group consisted of more than 40 beings. They stopped about 100 miles away.

A beautiful young woman from the Insect Race looked up and exclaimed, "Look, that's King Yi's body. It's...actually hanging from the Osmanthus tree."

The Osmanthus tree halfway up Mirror Fragrance Cliff was huge.

King Yi's broken corpse hung from a tree branch and swung lightly in the cold wind. In addition, there were more than 20 other saintly corpses also hanging from the tree. It looked tragic.

Seeing this, the Cloud Field cultivators were furious. It was like fire burned within.

“We came too late. I didn’t think Zhang Ruochen was so powerful that even King Yi and Bai Ran weren’t his match and were killed.”

One of the Insect Race cultivators with a strong bloodline yelled, “Kill and take the dojo back! Tear Zhang Ruochen into a million pieces!”

King Ghost Centipede stopped them with a serious expression. “Calm down! Zhang Ruochen could kill King Yi. Do you think he can’t kill you all?”

The King Ghost Centipede was a seven-spiked divine centipede and was a fourth step Saint King. He wasn’t any weaker than King Yi.

“Are we just going to give up on this?” Those Insect cultivators were unsatisfied.

King Ghost Centipede looked in the direction of the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo. “We’re at a disadvantage if we attack the dojo now. According to the rules of the Truth Godly Palace, the cultivators of a world can kill those who break into their dojo. But the people who break in can’t kill cultivators of that world. They can only drive them away and conquer the dojo.

“In other words, if I attack the dojo, I can only heavily injure those Guanghai Field cultivators, but they can kill us.”

One of the cultivators who hadn’t come to the Truth Godly Palace before asked, “What if I make a mistake and kill one of them?”

“Then, the Truth Godly Palace will sentence you to death,” King Ghost Centipede said. “The Truth Godly Palace doesn’t forbid fighting, but it does forbid killing. If you break into someone else’s dojo and kill, you’ll be punished even more.

“I suspect that King Yi was restricted because he didn’t dare to break the rules of the Truth Godly Palace. He couldn’t use many of his tactics, so he ended up getting killed instead.”

King Ghost Centipede had fought with King Yi before. He didn’t believe that King Yi would lose to a half-step Saint King, so that’s why he made that guess.

“Is that... Zhang Ruochen?”

The Insect cultivator who'd transformed into a beautiful woman saw a young figure outside the dojo. He held a book in his hands and read the content while drawing something with his hands.

King Ghost Centipede narrowed his eyes. “He has a powerful aura. It must be him. There can't be a second young figure who's as strong as him in Guanghan Field.”

“What is he doing?”

King Ghost Centipede didn't know what Zhang Ruochen was doing either. Frowning, he said, “He seems to be studying the contents of the book.”

“Who cares what he's doing? Take him down. Even if we can't kill him, we should dismember him and break down his mind. Torture him until he commits suicide.”

An Insect Race cultivator who'd reached the first step Saint King level had fury burning in his heart. He transformed into a huge silver bug with a lion's head and pounced at Zhang Ruochen.

King Ghost Centipede wanted to stop him, but he was a step too late.

King Ghost Centipede immediately transformed into ghostly mist and pursued him, afraid that an accident would occur. What if Kuang Lian was tricked by Zhang Ruochen? He would probably follow in King Yi and Bai Ran's path.

Kuang Lian was very strong. He was only a bit weaker than the Five-Elemental Woman beside Shang Ziyan.

Zhang Ruochen was fully focused on studying the time formation. He snapped out of it when he heard a lion's roar and looked into the distance. He saw blinding silver light rise up on the horizon. Overpowering saintly might rushed toward him.

“I am Saint King Kuang Lian from Cloud Field. Zhang Ruochen, how do you want to die?”

A Saint King with a lion's head and insect's body rushed out of the silver light and roared at Zhang Ruochen.

"The Cloud Field cultivators came pretty quickly," Zhang Ruochen muttered.

Then he said indifferently, "I advise you to stay away so you don't give up your life."

Saint King Kuang Lian was very perceptive. He noticed that the dojo didn't activate the "equality." Under these conditions, he naturally wouldn't fear Zhang Ruochen.

Instead, he thought this was the best opportunity to capture Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen had just had a great victory and was underestimating his enemies, so he could take him down easily.

Roar!

Saint King Kuang Lian charged at Zhang Ruochen.

He was very careful, but he didn't notice that he'd already stepped into Zhang Ruochen's spatial maze and time formation.

Chapter 1568 - Killing Without Attacking

Chapter 1568: Killing Without Attacking

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Saint King Kuanglian extended his silver claw, and there was Rule of Truth on the claw, which boosted its power.

The claw rubbed against the air, making sparkles.

He used all his strength with his strike as he wanted to take down Zhang Ruochen before he realized it.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't scared at all seeing the saint claw coming at him.

Bang!

Saint King Kuanglian's claw hit himself instead.

His neck that was hit caved in, and his silver shell cracked. Lots of saint blood was spilled.

Boom!

Following a huge blast, Saint King Kuanglian fell to the ground. He yelled, "How... How is that possible?"

Saint King Kuanglian couldn't be more upset, as he'd been knocked down by himself.

King Guiwu immediately stopped chasing him.

It was just bizarre!

How did Saint King Kuanglian hit himself instead?

There were many monks staying around Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, and they knew the great beings from Cloud Field wouldn't just

let him go easily.

The show was just getting started.

Nobody could say for sure whether the monks from Guanghan Field could keep Jingxiang Cliff Dojo or not.

Which was why many monks were shocked as they saw what just happened.

“Saint King Kuanglian wouldn’t harm himself. It must be a trap left by Zhang Ruochen.”

“Zhang Ruochen isn’t just great in combat. He must know some other tricks as well.”

...

King Guiwu noticed an invisible danger, and he immediately backed off until that sense of danger was gone.

The other monks from Cloud Field all looked nervous, as they didn’t dare underestimate Zhang Ruochen anymore.

“It’s the space power. Come back, Saint King Kuanglian,” King Guiwu yelled.

Saint King Kuanglian was afraid that he might be attacked by Zhang Ruochen, so he immediately rushed out as fast as possible.

Yet he was suddenly turned around by an invisible force and rushed back to Zhang Ruochen.

“No...”

Saint King Kuanglian wanted to stop, yet it was a step too late. Zhang Ruochen reached out his hand out of nowhere and tried to suppress him.

Boom!

That giant silver lion head hit the ground, and then, all his sense organs started to bleed.

Saint King Kuanglian lost his focus after that strike, and he couldn’t fight back anymore.

King Guiwu immediately performed a saint spell, wielding a ghost fire cloud against Zhang Ruochen, yet all the ghost fires

were diverted and didn't hit Zhang Ruochen at all.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward Saint King Kuanglian and took out his Abyss Ancient Sword.

King Guiwu yelled, "Zhang Ruochen, you're already outside Jingxiang Cliff Dojo. If you kill Saint King Kuanglian, Truth Godly Palace will never let you get away."

Zhang Ruochen shot King Guiwu a glance. He cut off the arms and legs of Saint King Kuanglian, and to prevent Saint King Kuanglian from blowing up his saint source, he used Saint-binding Chain to suppress his saint power.

This was the first time Saint King Kuanglian was humiliated like that. He roared, "Zhang Ruochen, if I survive this, I'll crush every single one of your bones someday."

Saint King Kuanglian trash-talked recklessly, as he thought Zhang Ruochen wouldn't dare kill him.

"Do you really think I won't kill you? I can drag you into Jingxiang Cliff Dojo and kill you right away," said Zhang Ruochen.

Hearing that, Saint King Kuanglian had to suppress his anger and upset.

He had to survive to make Zhang Ruochen pay.

Saint King Kuanglian wanted to calm Zhang Ruochen down first, so he ingratiated himself to Zhang Ruochen and said, "Please calm down, Zhang Ruochen. It's not going to do you any good if you kill me. If you spare my life, the senior of my race will definitely pay my ransom with lots of refining resources."

To Saint King Kuanglian, the refining resources in a third last field couldn't come close to those in Cloud Field, and that Zhang Ruochen would definitely be tempted.

On the surface, Zhang Ruochen didn't attack him, as if he'd been tricked.

Saint King Kuanglian thought, That senior from my race is a fifth-step saint king, and he can rival a sixth-step saint king. Zhang Ruochen, you'll die before getting any ransom.

Even if Zhang Ruochen's space formation was incredible, Saint King Kuanglian didn't believe that a formation set up by a half-step saint king could ward off his senior.

Zhang Ruochen was mature enough to see right through Saint King Kuanglian.

He just wanted to use Saint King Kuanglian to test the power of his time formation.

He wanted to see the flow of time in this area.

In the distance, none of the great beings, including King Guiwu, made a move. They all stared at Zhang Ruochen ferociously, waiting for the other great beings from Cloud Field.

Cloud Field had six dojos in Truth Heavenly Domain.

The dojo where King Guiwu was was closest to Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, so he arrived first.

With time going by, the great beings of Cloud Field from the second and the third dojo all arrived and gathered with King Guiwu, and saint light permeated the plain.

Even those who were watching the fight were thrilled.

"There're so many monks from Cloud Field. Truth Godly Palace probably gives them twenty quotas every month."

"Cloud Field is ranked high on the 'Ten Thousand Fields Merit Rank,' which is why they get so many quotas, and besides, there're many great beings from Cloud Field who finished the tasks in Truth Godly Palace, so certainly, they can get more quotas."

The rules of Truth Godly Palace dictated that monks could only refine in Truth Godly Palace for a month, yet they could stay in Truth Heavenly Domain for a year before they had to leave.

The more powerful a large field was, the more talents from that field could refine in Truth Heavenly Domain.

This was the place that nurtured the future leaders of Heaven World!

Many monks thought that Zhang Ruochen was in deep trouble, and that a formation wouldn't be able to hold off so many great beings.

Another voice came. "Saint King Nufeng is here."

A dashing man in silver saint armor arrived, shaking the saint Qi hundreds of miles around him.

All the great beings from Cloud Field saluted Saint King Nufeng.

Saint King Nufeng was far from being a supreme saint, yet there was a trace of emperor Qi coming out of him.

He was like the emperor of saints, like supreme saints.

He was the senior Saint King Kuanglian had mentioned.

"What happened, King Guiwu?" Saint King Nufeng asked.

King Guiwu then told Saint King Nufeng what had happened.

Saint King Nufeng got angrier and angrier as he was listening to the story, and his growing belligerence scared even the monks standing a hundred miles away.

"Saint King Nufeng is also in Truth Heavenly Domain. Zhang Ruochen's doomed this time!"

"Let's see whether his and Saint King Sujing's formation can hold off Saint King Nufeng or not. If not, Jingxiang Cliff Dojo will be occupied by Cloud Field again."

Zhang Ruochen was refining on the ground, and Saint King Kuanglian, who'd had his legs and arms chopped off, was lying behind him.

Ling Feiyu, Mu Lingxi, and Wen Shusheng couldn't focus on comprehending Way of Truth anymore. They all rushed out in the dojo and stared at the monks from Cloud Field.

All the great beings from Cloud Field were powerful.

Saint King Nufeng said, "Name your price, Zhang Ruochen. What do you need to let Saint King Kuanglian go?"

Zhang Ruochen had recovered completely after the nap. He opened his eyes again and said, "I can give him back to you

now if you want him so much.”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Saint-binding Chain and threw Saint King Kuanglian out of the formation.

All the monks from Cloud Field were perplexed, and none of them dared touch Saint King Kuanglian as they reckoned it might be his trap.

Bang!

Saint King Kuanglian fell to the ground.

“Saint King Kuanglian, is dead...” a monk from Cloud Field yelled.

“How is that possible?”

King Guiwu rushed toward Saint King Kuanglian, trying to check his injuries. Saint King Kuanglian was a saint king, so the injuries on his legs, arms, and neck couldn't have been fatal.

“His blood stopped flowing, and his organs were prostrated. How was he killed?” King Guiwu was horrified.

All the monks had been staring at Zhang Ruochen the entire time, and they were sure that Zhang Ruochen had only cut his arms and legs off.

It was weird.

A monk from Cloud Field said, “Did Zhang Ruochen poison him?”

“There isn't any poison in his system.” King Guiwu shook his head, stood up, and looked to Zhang Ruochen in the distance, feeling intimidated, as he didn't know what had happened.

Saint King Nufent stopped controlling his emotions. He yelled, “You'll pay for what you did, Zhang Ruochen!”

Zhang Ruochen said calmly, “You have no proof that I killed him.”

“It doesn't matter. I'll make you admit what you did after I capture you.”

Saint light gushed out of Saint King Nufeng's body, and then, he took out a ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon and triggered its Third Yao Complete Power, hitting Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

Boom!

Nine Spirits Blood Ocean Formation was operated, warding off the attacks of Saint King Nufeng.

The power tore the ground and clouds apart.

Zhang Ruochen walked back to the dojo, looked at Mu Lingxi and Su Qingling, and said, "No need to mind them. Let's comprehend the pictures of Way of Truth first."

Zhang Ruochen wasn't worried at all that the monks from Cloud Field could get into Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

First of all, their attacks weren't able to break the space formation and Nine Spirits Blood Ocean Formation.

Even if they asked a formation saint master to crack the formation, they would be killed in the time formation.

Saint King Nufeng got more furious seeing Zhang Ruochen walking back to the dojo so calmly. "How dare a half-step saint king look down upon me like this?"

He attacked the formation using the Third Yao ten-thousand-patterns saint weapon more than ten times, yet he still failed to break the formation, and then, King Guiwu and other monks from Cloud Field all attacked the formation, making constant noises.

Chapter 1569 - The Way of Truth

Chapter 1569: The Way of Truth

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

No matter how sounds of war filled the outside of the dojo, Zhang Ruochen was still unmoved inside. He was calm.

The wall of the Mirror Fragrance Cliff dazzled with divine light. Every rock was filled with divinity.

An ancient image was carved on it, depicting a branch of the Osmanthus tree. It had leaves and flowers with gentle and realistic lines.

This was the Way of Truth picture that the Tree God had left!

If one studied it, one had a chance of comprehending the Rules of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen studied it carefully for two hours without seeing anything special about it. He just felt that it was a normal stone carving.

Is it because I'm not perceptive enough and can't comprehend the Rules of Truth?

As soon as this thought appeared, Zhang Ruochen shook his head with a smile, thinking, I'm just too impatient. Many cultivators study in the Truth Godly Palace for one month without any gains. I've only looked at the picture for a little bit. How can I comprehend the Rules of Truth?

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Ling Feiyu.

Even this Sword Way genius with shocking perception had a confused look. Evidently, the Way of Truth stumped her too.

Zhang Ruochen thought carefully for a while. Then he took out a piece of Honghua Vine from his spatial ring.

He stabbed it into the ground and ignited it.

With the help of the Honghua Vine, the group could figure out the Rules of Truth with more ease.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't do that immediately. Instead, he took out the Time and Space Secret Guide, flipped to a page, and started reading carefully.

Ling Feiyu saw Zhang Ruochen's strange action and asked, "You gave up because it's too hard?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head with a smile. "No hurry. You can't forget one thing just because you're doing another."

Even Ling Feiyu who knew Zhang Ruochen well couldn't figure out what he wanted to do.

Instead of asking about it further, she continued to observe.

To Ling Feiyu, this was a rare chance. She had to figure out the Rules of Truth so her sword could become stronger.

Otherwise, she would have a disadvantage when facing top figures in the future.

The page that Zhang Ruochen was studying had abstruse time prints drawn on it. Every print was complex. A regular cultivator's head would hurt if they looked at it for too long.

Only someone with strong enough Spiritual Power could study it.

This session lasted three days and nights.

During this time, Zhang Ruochen rested more than ten times. Each time, he had to stop because he used up too much Spiritual Power.

Before, I thought that my Spiritual Power was strong enough. It reached level 54 and many Saint Kings aren't as strong as me. But after starting to truly study the Way of Space and Time, I realize that my Spiritual Power is far from enough.

After getting re-energized, Zhang Ruochen took out a rune pen and spiritual paper. He started practicing drawing time prints.

More days passed by. Zhang Ruochen used up a lot of spiritual power and finally drew a time print on it. It lasted for two instants too.

Not bad. I'll try it now.

Zhang Ruochen was quite satisfied with his result. A smile appeared involuntarily on his face.

During this short period, he'd studied a formation to slow down the flow of time.

If time sped up, a year could pass in an instant.

If time slowed, spending two days here might only be one day outside.

After all, they could only stay in the Truth Heavenly Domain for one year. It was a very limited amount of time to study the Way of Truth. But if he could set up a time formation, then they would have much more time.

Zhang Ruochen had some results from his research, so he started putting it to work.

Setting up a formation that slowed down time was much harder than a formation that sped up time, because you were creating a cultivation refuge for yourself, instead of attacking enemies. Thus, you had to first consider the stability of the flow of time.

Next, Zhang Ruochen failed more than ten times, destroying many saint stones and jades. Finally, he created a formation with very stable time.

"I finally completed it," Zhang Ruochen said, smiling.

"Everyone can enter the formation to study the Way of Truth image."

No one present had figured out a single Rule of Truth. Hearing Zhang Ruochen's words, they all stood up and walked over.

Su Jing had a thoughtful expression. "What's the ratio of time compared to the outside world?"

“Around two to one,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Su Jing was a top figure of a large world, after all, so he knew some things about the Way of Time. He sighed inwardly. Zhang Ruochen could double the time ratio with his first time formation. His talent in this aspect would probably make the geniuses of the Time Godly Palace jealous.

“With a time formation here, the cultivators of Guanghan Field can have double the time to study. What a great accomplishment!” Su Jing exclaimed.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't very satisfied.

After all, he could have four times the time inside the Time and Space Crystal.

His time formation could only double the amount of time. In his opinion, it wasn't that big of a deal.

It was still because his Spiritual Power wasn't strong enough.

If he could reach level 55 and become a Spiritual Saint King, he might be able to set up a triple time formation.

“Spiritual Power isn't accomplished in a moment. Now, let's use the time formation first to comprehend the Way of Truth image.”

Zhang Ruochen entered the time formation and gradually calmed himself down. After calming down, he started studying the picture of the Osmanthus tree branch.

No one could explain what the Way of Truth was exactly. After all, it didn't ever change. It was the true nature of the rules of the world.

Mid-level saint spells were powerful because they combined the Rules of Saintly Way into the spells.

By adding the Rules of Truth into a spell, the spell would become much more powerful. This was because the Rules of Truth could help the spell meld with the rules of the world.

The former combined one's own Rules of Saintly. The latter combined with the rules of the world.

Cultivating the Way of Truth and comprehending the Rules of Truth would help a cultivator meld better with the world. This was known as Way Combination.

The more the spells melded with the rules of the world, the stronger they were.

This image is known to be a summary of the Way of Truth that the Tree God comprehended. It must be very deep and filled with knowledge. Perhaps...I should start with the details instead of observing the entire image.

Zhang Ruochen felt that he'd been too impatient earlier. He'd actually wanted to understand the entire image in one sitting. He was honestly too ignorant.

His current cultivation compared to a god was like a candle compared to the moon.

He locked his gaze on one leaf and then focused on one vein of the leaf.

It was only one vein of one leaf, but Zhang Ruochen put all his Spiritual Power into observing it with an attention to detail. He discovered that it was like a vast river with densely-packed rules flowing within.

I see, I see. Merely one vein contains countless Rules of Truth. It will take me days to comprehend them.

Zhang Ruochen's excitement lasted for a long time before calming down. Then he used all his might to observe the facts of the Rules of Truth.

After a long time, Su Jing woke Zhang Ruochen up. "The Truth Godly Palace has sent a message that you all can go there to cultivate."

The environment in the Truth Godly Palace would definitely be better than here. It would be easier to figure out the rules too.

"Okay, let's go now."

Zhang Ruochen was impatient because when he'd been studying the image earlier, he already had some results. It

seemed that he was only a step away from figuring out his own Rules of Truth.

If he cultivated the Rules of Truth, then his abilities would definitely improve greatly. Then if he activated “equality,” he would be able to kill even people like King Yi easily.

By then, Zhang Ruochen would definitely snatch back the Moon Goddess’s dojo and take back all the dojos that belonged to Guanghan Field.

Su Jing had a troubled expression. “But there’s a problem. The cultivators of Cloud Field have surrounded the dojo. They want to trap us here and make it impossible for us to cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace.”

“They’re too cruel.”

Su Qingling’s chest rose up and down in anger.

Su Jing sighed. “Unfortunately, I can’t do anything. Otherwise, I would help take you all out of here.”

There was no “equality” environment outside the dojo. With their abilities, Zhang Ruochen and the others attacking Cloud Field would be like an egg hitting a rock.

The outside of the dojo had remnants of battle everywhere.

For the past few days, Cloud Field had used all sorts of tactics to destroy the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo’s defensive formation. Countless strong cultivators had died too.

However, these losses helped them realize that Zhang Ruochen may have set up both a time and space formation at the same time. Thus, they grew more careful and stopped trying to break in.

“Saint King Nufeng,” an Insect Race cultivator from Cloud Field asked, “are we just going to stay in this stalemate with them?”

Saint King Nufeng was expressionless. “All cultivators below the Saint King level, return to your own dojo and continue studying. We only need people above the Saint King Realm here to trap them.”

Now, they could only use tactics with heavy losses and risks. Saint King Nufeng believed that a pride like Zhang Ruochen would definitely be impatient about cultivating the Rules of Truth. He wouldn't stay in this stalemate forever.

“Zhang Ruochen, I have the time,” Saint King Nufeng murmured.

Inside the dojo.

Ling Feiyu called out the Heaven-Burier Sword. Eyes cold, she said, “Most of the Cloud Field cultivators have left. Only a dozen Saint Kings remain. I'll go kill them one by one.”

Zhang Ruochen touched his chin and reached out to stop her. “Don't take the risk. I have a better idea.”

Six hours later...

Zhang Ruochen set up a basic Space Transfer Formation inside the dojo.

Through this, Zhang Ruochen's group left the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo directly. A moment later, they appeared hundreds of thousands of miles away and hurried toward the Truth Godly Palace.

Chapter 1570 - Three Heads and Six Arms

Chapter 1570

: Three Heads and Six Arms

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Truth Godly Palace was located at the center of Truth Heavenly Domain. It stretched all the way from underground to above the clouds. It was towering and splendid. It looked more like the edge of the entire universe than a palace.

That's right, the edge of the universe.

Truth Godly Palace was thousands of miles tall, and it was snow-white. The monks wouldn't be able to see anything behind it, and they could only see a silver wall that looked like a pillar within the space.

Merits Godly Palace was also thousands of miles tall, yet it was overshadowed by the spectacular Heavenly River, so it didn't look as amazing as Truth Godly Palace.

"Only Gods are able to build a godly palace like this," Zhang Ruochen exclaimed.

There were many saint palaces around Truth Godly Palace. Some were built on the ground while some were floating in the air. There were incredible beings living in all the saint palaces, yet they looked tiny compared to Truth Godly Palace.

Zhang Ruochen said to the other five, "A month is nothing. I reckon we should divide it into three periods, each period being ten days."

Mu Lingxi consented to Zhang Ruochen's proposal. "It's almost impossible to comprehend Rules of Truth within months, however, if we go there to refine three times and come back to the dojo after each time to discuss and comprehend the visualization pictures of Way of Truth left by Tree God, we'll stand a much higher chance."

Everyone else agreed.

There were almost a thousand saints standing under Truth Godly Palace. They all came from different large fields with great body constitution and fate Qi.

Zhang Ruochen didn't get much attention standing in the crowd, yet girls like Mu Lingxi and Ling Feiyu attracted many monks.

Beautiful girls were always the most eye-catching, no matter where they were.

However, the monks craved the Way of Truth much more than beautiful girls, so none of the talents went up to talk to them. They immediately looked back to Truth Godly Palace.

Ten first-class disciples wearing Kylin Blue Cloud Capes from Truth Godly Palace walked down the stairs. They were all half-step saint kings, and their saintly way forces put those talents to shame.

"No wonder they're the first-class disciples of Truth Godly Palace."

"They have a lot more opportunities for refining in Truth Godly Palace, and they can even be instructed by Gods sometimes."

"There's a stringent screening before they get into Truth Godly Palace."

...

All the saints were discussing.

Zhang Ruochen looked to the ten people, and he also exclaimed, "No wonder it's Truth Godly Palace. None of the ten first-class disciples are weaker than Wu Hao and Bai Ran,

and they're strong enough to be the strongest great beings among peers in some weak fields.”

A female talent from Peacock Race beside Zhang Ruochen yelled, “He has three heads and six arms. Is he Feng Yan, who's ranked seventeenth on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’?”

The one standing at the center of the ten first-class disciples did have three heads and six arms, and saint light was flowing on his muscles as if he was standing at the center of the universe.

While Zhang Ruochen was gazing at him, he also looked to Zhang Ruochen and gave him a smile.

He only stared at me with one eye, yet his other two eyes are closed. Obviously, he's refining at the moment. He might be refining two times, if not three times faster than others, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Whoosh!

Saint light gushed out of that first-class disciple with three heads and six arms, and all the talents felt that an invisible pressure was put on them.

Everyone shut up.

“I'm Feng Yan, a first disciple from Truth Godly Palace. This is the first time for many monks to come to Truth Godly Palace, so there must be lots of things you don't understand. I'll brief you guys now.

“The first level of Truth Godly Palace has eighty-eight thousand, eight hundred and eighty-eight refining chambers, and they're for elementary level.

“The second level of Truth Godly Palace has eighty-eight thousand, eight hundred and eighty-eight refining caves, and they're for those who want to advance their Way of Truth...”

...

After the instruction, the first-class disciples from Truth Godly Palace started to check everyone's tokens to make sure that they were entitled to getting into the godly palace.

Feng Yan walked to Zhang Ruochen, checked his token and said, "I look forward to your attainment in the Way of Truth after a month."

Apparently, he had recognized Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn't respond at all. He took back his token and walked toward Truth Godly Palace.

Feng Yan looked at Zhang Ruochen leaving and pondered.

After all the saints walked up the stairs, a first disciple who was a beautiful girl walked to Feng Yan and said, "Senior brother Feng, we can receive the monks ourselves. You don't need to do it."

Feng Yan said, "My sister told me there's an extraordinary person among those monks, and that I might be interested in him, which is why I went to check on him myself."

"Is that the person whose token you just checked?"

The girl knew that the only sister Feng Yan had was a disciple of a God from Truth Godly Palace. She had such high status that she could patrol Truth Heavenly Domain.

Even a disciple of God deemed that he was extraordinary. Who was he?

...

The first level of Truth Godly Palace.

Zhang Ruochen thought while looking for empty refining chambers, Everyone who's ranked high on the 'Saints Merits Rank' is extraordinary. I must comprehend the Rule of Truth as soon as possible. Otherwise, I'll be at a huge disadvantage if I run into them.

Zhang Ruochen managed to defeat Wang Xu because Wang Xu was great at speed, yet Zhang Ruochen's space way and time way could suppress his speed. He might not have such an advantage if he ran into other talents.

Some power could even repress time and space.

He finally found an empty refining chamber, put the token in the lock and opened the door.

The chamber was completely dark, yet he could feel that the rules of heaven and land were very vigorous. He could comprehend the ways ten times faster than outside.

And besides, the Way of Truth in the air surrounded him like a breeze, wanting to penetrate their bodies.

Zhang Ruochen knew about the Rule of Truth because of the pictures left by Tree God, so he knew that the wind forces around him were formed by the Rule of Truth.

“This has got to be the best place to comprehend the Rule of Truth,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The chamber was rectangular, and there were three pictures on the wall.

There was only one spot on the first picture.

There were two spots on the second picture.

And there were three spots on the third picture.

Carnivorous Holy Flower laughed. “There’re only three simple pictures like these. No wonder the first level is the elementary level of Truth Godly Palace.”

Whoosh!

Green vines extended out of Zhang Ruochen’s body, and a trace of gleaming saint light emanated. Demonic Sound showed up beside Zhang Ruochen.

Carnivorous Holy Flower inhabited Zhang Ruochen’s body, so she could follow Zhang Ruochen into Truth Godly Palace.

“Simple?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “If I can completely comprehend the first visualization picture, the power of my saint spell will be increased by fifty percent.

“If I can completely comprehend the second one, it will be increased by one hundred percent.”

“The third one will increase my saint spell power by three times.

“If it’s really that easy, there’ll be heaps fewer talents who don’t gain anything in Truth Godly Palace. I at least need to fully comprehend the first picture to be able to use Way of Truth.”

Demonic Sound stopped smiling and said, “Only the elementary level of Way of Truth can improve saint spells threefold... Then what about the second, the third level? Can they improve the saint spells ten times, if not a hundred times?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “Not that easy. Monks will have their limits, and so does the Way of Truth. It’s great that I can comprehend the three visualization pictures fully.”

He lit up a Honghua Vine and sat down in front of the first visualization picture.

“I want to comprehend Way of Truth also, Zhang Ruochen,” said the spirit of the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Zhang Ruochen took out his Abyss Ancient Sword, and then, the sword spirit with a pair of black wings emerged from the sword.

“The Way of Truth is useful to you also?” Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised.

The sword spirit said, “The Way of Truth is useful to all the spirits in the universe. If I can comprehend the Way of Truth, my power will surge, and besides, it’s also beneficial for me to form Sword Spirit Dao Body.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and fully immersed himself in the first visualization picture.

There was only a spot on the picture, yet after putting all his mind power into it, he found that it was a storm whirlpool which was formed by nine Ways of Truth.

To be exact, the nine Ways of Truth were bound in the whirlpool. They kept spinning for monks to observe and comprehend.

“The visualization pictures in Truth Godly Palace are much easier than the pictures left by Tree God.” Zhang Ruochen became more confident.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen finished comprehending the first Rule of Truth.

Chapter 1571 - Kongling Island

Comprehending the first Rule of Truth meant officially entering the field. Next, Zhang Ruochen's speed quickened obviously.

The second rule, third...

In only seven days, he figured out the nine rules in the first image.

He sat cross-legged on the ground and tried to use the Rules of Truth. As expected, he had some perceptions.

"Thousand-hand Dragon and Elephant." Zhang Ruochen shot up instantly and performed one move from the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. He added in the Rules of Truth that he'd just figured out and his palm technique strengthened instantly.

Palm prints appeared everywhere around him, like he'd transformed into a Thousand-hand Buddha.

Boom.

The strong palm force hit the wall.

The wall caved in slightly and shook like a ripple, dissolving Zhang Rouchen's palm force. A moment later, the walls recovered.

Demonic Sound woke up from the huge force and immediately asked, "Master, you already finished comprehending the first image?"

"It should count as comprehending it completely."

Zhang Ruochen stood up tall under the wall and looked at his hands. That palm earlier had indeed unleashed twice as much power.

Before, when he faced strong figures like Wang Xu, Zhang Ruochen had to drink the Dragon and Mad Oxen Wine to compete in physical strength. After grasping the Rules of Truth, he could have that kind of power even without drinking the wine.

Zhang Ruochen was making up for his past weaknesses.

Demonic Sound was in disbelief. This was too fast! Only seven days had passed. After all, she hadn't even figured out one rule yet.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen was so fast because before coming, he already had a certain understanding of the Way of Truth.

Continue.

Zhang Ruochen sat down before the second image and focused his gaze.

There were two tiny dots on the image. As Zhang Ruochen poured his Spiritual Power in, the two dots started swimming quickly like two fish. It was impossible to focus on them.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to study one first, but it was completely useless.

When he tried to study one dot, the other one would automatically enter his sight and distract him. He couldn't stay focused at all.

He fought with the two dots like that and time flew by. Three days passed quickly.

It must be that I didn't use the correct method. But how should I study them?

Zhang Ruochen didn't continue to waste time on this. He prepared to return to the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo and study the pictures left behind by the Tree God. He would come back to this second picture after finding the correct method.

"Do you two have any results?" Zhang Ruochen asked Demonic Sound and the sword spirit.

Demonic Sound was a bit disappointed in herself. She shook her head. "It's too hard. It seems like I'm better at absorbing

other people's Saintly Way.”

“I comprehended four Rules of Truth,” the sword spirit said.

Zhang Ruochen was quite surprised. After all, if it comprehended four rules, then it was only a matter of time before it figured out the entire image.

But then, Zhang Ruochen felt that it wasn't too strange.

The Abyss Ancient Sword was created out of divine metal. How could its sword spirit be a regular weapon spirit? It was normal for it to be highly perceptive.

“How long will it take for you to comprehend the entire image?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“At most three days,” it replied.

“Okay, I'll wait three days for you,” Zhang Ruochen said.

In the next three days, Zhang Ruochen didn't go observe the second image. Instead, he took out the rules emperor weapon to study the Rules of Palm Way.

Not only were there active Rules of Truth in the room, it was also very suitable to study other Rules of Saintly Way.

Zhang Ruochen's speed of grasping the Rules of Palm Way was much faster than the outside world. He had a new breakthrough in three short days. He now had 12 Rules of Palm Way in his body.

The cultivation environment is too miraculous. It would be so nice if I could stay in the Truth Godly Palace forever. I would definitely improve greatly and quickly reach the first step Saint King Realm.

Even Zhang Ruochen was tempted to enter the Truth Godly Palace.

After all, if he became a disciple of the Truth Godly Palace, he would be able to study inside the godly palace and receive more than other cultivators.

Of course, there were both pros and cons to this.

If he became a disciple, he would definitely face many restrictions. He would also have to work for the palace and not have the freedom to do what he wanted like he did now.

Plus, Zhang Ruochen was a troublesome figure now. Even if he wanted to enter the Truth Godly Palace, they might not accept him.

The sword spirit of the Abyss Ancient Sword had already comprehended the entire first image. Zhang Ruochen put it and Demonic Sound away again and exited the cultivation room.

My agreement with Lingxi and the others was ten days, Zhang Ruochen thought. Thirteen days have passed now. I wonder where they're waiting for me at.

A large group of Cloud Field cultivators were still outside the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo. Without Zhang Ruochen's Space Transfer Formation, they wouldn't be able to return to the dojo at all.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen guessed that they were still waiting outside the Truth Godly Palace.

As soon as he exited the cultivation room, Zhang Ruochen saw a second-tier disciple of the Truth Godly Palace standing outside. He seemed to be waiting for him.

That second-tier disciple was an Absolute Saint. Seeing Zhang Ruochen walk out, he smiled. "I am Feng Yezi, a second-tier disciple of the Truth Godly Palace. I am waiting for Crown Prince Ruochen as per my master's order."

Crown Prince Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was quite interested in this name.

It was evident that the other had searched his background and knew that he was the crown prince of the Sacred Central Empire.

"Who is your master?" he asked.

"Feng Yan," Feng Yezi said.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't surprised. "Did you see the other cultivators from Guanghan Field?"

"My master already invited them to visit Kongling Island three days ago," Feng Yezi said.

Zhang Ruochen didn't know whether the other was friend or foe, so he went on alert. "Where is Kongling Island?"

"Crown Prince Ruochen, please follow me."

Feng Yezi smiled and went down the steps, leading the way.

There was no other choice. Mu Lingxi and the others had already gone to Kongling Island. Zhang Ruochen had to go even if it was a trap.

However, he believed that a disciple of the Truth Godly Palace wouldn't attack him in the Truth Heavenly Domain. If news of it spread, it would definitely ruin the reputation of the Truth Godly Palace.

Kongling Island wasn't too far from the palace. It was an island that hovered in the sky.

If one stood on the island and looked at the Truth Godly Palace, the palace seemed to be very close.

The Rules of Saintly Way are extremely active within 10,000 miles of the Truth Godly Palace, Zhang Ruochen thought. Since he can have such a hovering island in this area, Feng Yan must not be a simple man. I must research him when I return.

A majestic pavilion loomed in the center of the island. Pagodas and towers were distributed around the pavilion. All sorts of divine medicine and flowers were planted too.

In addition, there were servants dressed in white tending to the medicine in the gardens. They were young and looked clean and pretty. They were all Saints.

Those who could be servants here couldn't be average. If this was in Kunlun's Field, only the Saintess of an ancient sect could qualify.

From afar, Zhang Ruochen could hear a battle. Feeling nervous, he immediately sped up.

There was a saint martial field on the east of the pavilion.

Right now, there were two figures dueling in it. One of them was Feng Yan.

He stood in the center of the martial field and saintly power crashed within him like ocean waves. His body was like a mountain standing in the ocean. No matter how aggressive the other's attack was, they couldn't harm him at all.

“The Extreme Yin Nether Ice is indeed powerful, but Lady Lingxi, your power isn't condensed. It's hard to threaten me. If you comprehend the Rules of Truth, you'll become even stronger.

“The origin feather of the Ice and Fire Phoenix is indeed powerful, but you haven't completed Phoenix Dance Nine Skies yet. The origin feather is only the strongest when combined with a completed Phoenix Dance Nine Skies.”

...

While dueling, Feng Yan was actually giving Mu Lingxi advice, pointing out where she was lacking and telling her how to improve.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the side of the martial field, quietly watching the two who were dueling and talking.

For some reason, this normal conversation about the Saintly Way gave him an indescribable feeling.

This feeling was a bit odd.

Zhang Ruochen was never a closed-minded person, but he felt uncomfortable seeing another young man teach Mu Lingxi how to cultivate.

Is it because I care too much? Or because I've lost too much and don't want to lose more?

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes, working hard to force away that odd feeling. This emotion shouldn't belong to him.

Because he had too many thoughts. he actually didn't notice that Mu Lingxi had already walked over to him. A lovely laugh sounded in his ears. "Zhang Ruochen, what are you thinking about? How come you're studying the Saintly Way no matter where you are?"

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes again to look at that beautiful face. Her smile was mischievous. Like the stars in the sky, she could light up the darkest and loneliest night.

"Xingling."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were dazed and he uttered those two syllables involuntarily. Then, catching Mu Lingxi by surprise, he actually opened his arms and hugged her tightly.

Tightly.

Mu Lingxi was surprised. As if shocked by lightning, her expression was dazed.

Because Zhang Ruochen hadn't called her "Xingling" in a long time.

And...Zhang Ruochen had actually taken the initiative to hug her. This was unimaginable!

Chapter 1572 - Ocean of Truth

Feng Yan stood in the distance, dry coughing a bit and smiling. “You guys only haven’t seen each other for a couple of days. Do you really need to hug each other for that long?”

Ling Feiyu, Su Qingling, Wen Shusheng, and Ling Mi were also standing at the edge of Saint Martial Field, and they all had different facial expressions.

Zhang Ruochen tried to look calmer and stopped hugging Mu Lingxi. He looked to Feng Yan and said, “Who are you?”

“Let me introduce myself again. I’m Feng Yan, a first disciple from Truth Godly Palace. I’ve been waiting for you here for three days, Zhang Ruochen. Would you like to sit down and have a talk with me?”

Feng Yan was smiling the entire time.

Zhang Ruochen saw Feng Yu’s hospitality and the guest treatment the other monks from Guanghan Field got, so he nodded and followed Feng Yan to a bamboo pavilion.

Two maidens in white served Zhang Ruochen and Feng Yan some wine.

“I know you love to drink, so I bought a pot of Fairy Flower. This was made of the pedals of the saint flowers collected by Ji Fanxin, Fairy of Hundred Flowers. It’s invaluable.” Feng Yan smiled.

The fragrance was refreshing.

Hundreds of flowers blossomed in the air, and the pedals waved in the air, following the breeze.

Obviously, Feng Yan thought Zhang Ruochen loved alcohol because he had Dragon Spirits Mad Oxen Wine.

“Drink?” Zhang Ruochen said. “Unfortunately, I don’t like to drink. If I could, I wouldn’t drink at all.”

“Really?”

Feng Yan waved his hands to signal the maidens to take the wine away, and then, he asked them to bring a pot of tea.

Zhang Ruochen only needed to sip the tea a bit to notice how incredible the tea was. It could help monks comprehend saintly way, so it must be of the same value as ‘Fairy Flower.’

Both the wine and the tea are inaccessible to ordinary monks. Feng Yan must come from a great power, probably an ancient race with a God, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I’m curious. Do all the first-class disciples from Truth Godly Palace have a saint island around the godly palace?”

Feng Yan shook his head and said, “Not that easy. The owner of this saint island is my sister, and she’s the disciple of a God from Truth Godly Palace. She’s way more prominent than I am.”

“I see,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Feng Yan said, “Actually, I invited you over because I hope we can be friends.”

“Why? We barely know each other,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Feng Yan smiled and said, “I make friends with people because of their vibe, not because of something material. Brother Zhang, you’ve refined in Truth Godly Palace for thirteen days already. How do you like this place?”

“Incredible,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Feng Yan said, “However, you only have a bit more than half a month left until you have to leave. Don’t you want more time to refine?”

“You want to recruit me into Truth Godly Palace?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“No.”

Feng Yan shook his head and said, “I told you, I don’t have any material purposes when I’m making friends. Even if I do

sometimes, I'll tell them straight away. Besides, even if you want to join Truth Godly Palace, I'd suggest you don't do it."

"Why not?"

Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised.

Feng Yan said, "You've been here for some time now, so you should've seen how cruel this place is. Actually, the competition among the disciples from Truth Godly Palace is fiercer. Even the disciples from Truth Godly Palace will find it hard to refine in the godly palace."

As a matter of fact, Zhang Ruochen also didn't want to join Truth Godly Palace, so he didn't ask any further questions.

"Then how can I get more time to refine?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Feng Yan said, "There're two ways.

"The first one is to finish the tasks from Truth Godly Palace, for example, killing a monk from Hell World on the merits battlefield, or finding a precious saint pill, or teaching in some primitive large fields.

"As for the second one... There's a place called Ocean of Truth which is eight thousand miles away from Truth Godly Palace. There're ten levels of ocean domains. If you pull through the first domain, you can gain an additional month, and the second domain will give you two additional months, and the third domain will give you four additional months, so on and so forth. If you can get through all ten ocean domains, you can get eighty-five years and three additional months."

Zhang Ruochen had heard about Ocean of Truth before he came here, but he was still thrilled by why it mattered so much.

Every refining day in Truth Godly Palace was precious. Even a mediocre monk could become a supreme saint if he could refine in the palace for eighty-five years and three months.

Who wouldn't be tempted?

However, Zhang Ruochen calmed himself down quickly and said, "It's going to be very difficult to pass all the ten levels of

ocean domains, isn't it?"

Feng Yan was impressed by how calm Zhang Ruochen was. He said, "Lingxi, Palace Leader Ling, and others from Guanghan Field have tried. Perhaps they'll give you the answer."

Zhang Ruochen said, "How many levels of ocean domains have you passed?"

"How many levels? Do you really think it's that easy to get through Ocean of Truth? None of us managed to get through the first level, and only Palace Leader Ling reached the end of the first level. As for us, we fell into the ocean on our way there." Su Qingling rolled her eyes at how much Zhang Ruochen underestimated the difficulty of Ocean of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen was startled.

All of them were the top talents in a large field. They were literally one in millions, yet none of them managed to get through the first ocean domain.

Ling Feiyu was a mad genius in sword, and she became a saint king in Kunlun's Field where saintly ways were lacking, yet even she failed.

It was almost hopeless.

"Take me there. I'll have a try."

Zhang Ruochen's interests were piqued by Ocean of Truth.

After all, he could get an additional month of refining, so he needed to try.

"Okay."

Feng Yan sent out a signal flare, and after a while, a cloud boat came to the edge of Island Kongling, about to take Zhang Ruochen and the others to Ocean of Truth.

The owner of Island Kongling was Feng Xi, a disciple of a God. She was playing chess with a man wearing a Taoist cape.

Feng Yi's cape had cranes and blue sky on it, which made her look above the ordinary. She said while playing chess,

“You’ve met him yourself. Did he live up to your expectations?”

“Not bad. He’s not a reckless person. I saw his performance in Zuling Field, and I heard of his slaughtering in Jingxiang Cliff Dojo. I was worried that he might be fiery and bloodthirsty,” said the man in the Taoist cape.

Feng Xi said, “Why don’t you go meet him yourself? Then you can decide.”

“Not the time yet. And besides, if Shang Ziyang knows I’m here in Truth Heavenly Domain, he might use leverages ten times more now, and then it’ll become a fight between me and him,” said the man in the Taoist cape.

Feng Xi said, “You’re saying that you still need to observe him for longer before having more confidence in him.”

The man in the Taoist cape looked at the chess pieces and said, “He needs to prove that he’s worthy if he wants our help, otherwise, who’s willing to make enemy with Heaven Field, the most powerful field in the western world?”

Feng Xi said, “Do you want to head to Ocean of Truth for further observation?”

“Do you really think he can achieve anything after comprehending in the godly palace for only thirteen days?”

Feng Xi said, “Even if he can’t pass the first level of ocean domain, we can see how long he can last at the exit. Then we can assess his potential, comprehension, and power.”

The man in the Taoist cape said, “I feel like you’re very interested in him also, aren’t you?”

“Time and Space Descendant, ranked first on ‘Saints Merits Rank’ and the fiancé of a God. Every single one of these attributes interests me,” said Feng Xi apathetically.

“Seems like we have to finish this game later,” said the man in the Taoist cape.

After a while, Feng Xi and the man in the Taoist cape flew out of Island Kongling and headed toward Ocean of Truth.

...

Many saints gathered on the shore of Ocean of Truth, and they were all here trying to get more refining time.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the cloud boat and saw ten different colors on the ocean, and there was a light screen separating the two different colors.

Zhang Ruochen saw almost three thousand monks gathering on the shore.

He saw some familiar people: the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine, Sword Master Dongliu, and some monks from Kunlun's Field, Wan Zhaoyi, Chen Wutian, Buddha Xinshu, Monk Lawless, and Pei Yutian.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine rushed toward Zhang Ruochen, smiled seductively, and said, "Finally you're here, Zhang Ruochen. Do you think you can pass the first level of the ocean domain?"

"I heard it's very difficult," said Zhang Ruochen.

"Indeed. The first level is thirty miles wide. I fell into the ocean after only twenty-two miles. I didn't even touch the exit of the first level. I heard it's way more difficult to get past the exit than to get to the exit," said the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.

She was the only one from Shatuo Heavenly Domain who made it on the 'Saints Merits Rank' before Zhang Ruochen arrived, which showed she had greater talents than Wu Hao and Sword Master Dongliu.

However, she had only managed to travel twenty-two miles.

"However, I've only refined in Truth Godly Palace for half a month, so I still have some chance. I'll come here after a year in the dojo," said the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine.

Meanwhile, lots of people yelled, "Deity Wang Xu has got through the exit of the fourth ocean domain, entering the fifth level."

Zhang Ruochen immediately looked to the fifth level of the ocean domain, and he saw a man in black slowly sailing the

Boat of Truth.

Chapter 1573 - Rich Rewards

Chapter 1573: Rich Rewards

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

On land, countless eyes looked toward the fifth level of the sea.

It was too shocking. Ninety-nine percent of cultivators present couldn't even touch the first level, but Wang Xu had already passed the fourth level.

This difference was like the difference between mortals and gods.

The further you went, the harder it would be to cross the sea.

The Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine parted her shiny lips. Respect and envy appeared in her beautiful eyes. "We're both half-step Saint Kings. How can we be so different?"

The Truth Boat started shaking violently as soon as it entered the fifth level. Wang Xu couldn't control it.

Plop.

The boat flipped over and Wang Xu fell into the sea.

Clearly, the difficulty increased tremendously after entering the fifth level.

Saintly light poured out of the water and wrapped around Wang Xu's body. He flew out of the water and landed on dry land.

Instantly, thunderous applause sounded on the land. Countless cultivators looked at Wang Xu with respect and envy.

Han Shang, a second-tier disciple of the Truth Godly Palace, went over immediately with an excited expression. “Congratulations, Deity. You crossed four levels in one try and received eight months of cultivation time. When you exit isolation, you might be able to cross the fifth level.”

Many cultivators crowded around him, praising him. After all, anyone could see that Wang Xu would mature into a top figure.

It was a type of pride to be able to become friends with someone like him.

...

Zhang Ruochen watched quietly and asked Feng Yan, “What skill does crossing the Sea of Truth test?”

Feng Yan chuckled. “Perhaps only a god can explain that clearly. However, according to data collected by some seniors, there are 17 elements that affect a cultivator’s crossing.

“The most important elements are cultivation, Way of Truth, physical fitness, Spiritual Power, potential, perception, combat experience, and Rules of Saintly Way.

“There are also some less important factors, such as mindset, weapons, etc.”

“One’s cultivation and knowledge of the Way of Truth should be the most important, right?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Correct.”

Feng Yan nodded. “Wang Xu could cross the fourth level because this is his seventh time coming to the Truth Godly Palace.

“I calculated this earlier. He received seven spots to cultivate, which means seven months’ time. Adding the seven months he received from the three levels that he’d crossed before, he gets 14 months in total.

“This means that Wang Xu can cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace 14 times longer than the average cultivator. I still haven’t added in the time he gets from completing tasks for

the Truth Godly Palace and the time he spent comprehending the images of the Way of Truth in the dojo.

“All in all, he has dozens of times more time to cultivate the Way of Truth.

“He’s also the Deity, so he has far more resources than you can imagine. Thus, it’s quite normal for him to have such achievements.”

So Zhang Ruochen asked, “Then, what level did he reach when he first came to the Truth Godly Palace?”

“He reached the first obstacle but couldn’t cross it,” Feng Yan said.

Hearing this reply, the people around Feng Yan were all relieved and felt better. So, even someone as crazy Wang Xu couldn’t pass the first level on his first try.”

“However,” Feng Yan continued, “Wang Xu was only an upper-level Saint at that time. You should know that cultivation realm has quite an effect on the Sea of Truth. Usually, a Saint’s limit is the fourth level, a Saint King’s limit is the seventh level, and a Supreme Saint’s limit is the tenth level.”

“What do you mean?” the Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine asked.

“I mean that no matter how much knowledge a Saint has in the Way of Truth, how strong or talented he is, how much potential he has, he can only reach the fourth level at most.”

“But didn’t Wang Xu cross the fourth level and reach the fifth level?”

Chuckling, Feng Yan said, “That’s an exception. Only people who are qualified to become a god has a chance to break the limit. Without a doubt, Wang Xu is that kind of person.”

It wasn’t easy to become a Supreme Saint.

Becoming a god was an insubstantial thing for the prides here. They would never reach it.

“Brother Zhang,” Feng Yan said. “There’s something else I must tell you. If you cross the first level during your first year, not only will you receive one month’s time for cultivation, you’ll also receive three spots as an extra reward.”

“What if I cross the second level?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Feng Yan thought carefully. “That is very rare! From what I know, you should receive six spots, but it’s too hard, after all. It’s practically impossible for Saints.”

“Then what about Saint Kings?” Ling Feiyu asked. “If a Saint King crossed the first level in the first year, would they also get three extra spots?”

Feng Yan shook his head. “It’s easier for Saint Kings, so you have to cross the second level in the first year to get three extra spots.”

Ling Feiyu nodded and stopped asking questions.

When she crossed the first level, she’d only been a step away from breaking through the obstacle. If she cultivated ten days in the Truth Godly Palace, she would definitely be able to get through. However, she wasn’t confident in crossing the second level in a year.

Feng Yan gazed at the tenth level in the distance. The sea there consisted of golden water. It looked like a gold edge.

At the other end of the gold edge, outside the tenth level, there was a black island. More specifically, it was a saint mountain in the Sea of Truth.

Zhang Ruochen noticed it too. “Is that the legendary Mountain of Truth?”

Feng Yan nodded. “There’s a myth in the Truth Godly Palace. As long as beings under the Supreme Saint Realm cross the tenth level and climb onto the Mountain of Truth, they will receive a reward that even gods would be jealous of. That being’s world would also receive a spot to cultivate in the Truth Godly Palace every day.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t imagine what “a reward that even gods would be jealous of” could be, but the second reward was

quite shocking.

A spot to cultivate every day. Merely this reward might excite and please some gods.

“That’s too shocking... Guanghan Field only has three spots every ten years.” Su Qingling widened her eyes in shock.

If I can cross the tenth level and climb onto the Mountain of Truth, I’ll be able to renegotiate with the Moon Goddess.

This thought flashed past Zhang Ruochen’s mind and he smiled wryly.

The limit of a Saint King is the seventh level. It’s impossible to cross the tenth level.

“Among Supreme Saints, only 13 people have crossed the tenth level since the creation of the Heaven World,” Feng Yan said. “Now, each of them has become an earthshaking figure.”

Right then, Wang Xu saw Zhang Ruochen and his eyes gleamed. He walked over immediately, saying, “You finally came to the Sea of Truth. I anticipate your performance.”

Zhang Ruochen shot back, “I’ll definitely go further than you.”

Han Shang, standing beside Wang Xu, scoffed. “Who gave you the courage to say such nonsense? Don’t you know that Deity Wang Xu has passed the fourth level and broken the limit of a Saint?”

Han Shang recognized Zhang Ruochen’s group. They were Guanghan Field cultivators, so he looked down on them.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Han Shang. Before he spoke, Feng Yan scoffed to the side. “Han Shang, who gave you the courage to say such nonsense to Zhang Ruochen?”

When Han Shang saw Feng Yan, it was like he was caught in the act. He grew fearful immediately and went forward to bow. “Greetings, Senior Brother Feng.”

Han Shang was terrified. Someone from Guanghan Field could make the mysterious Senior Brother Feng accompany him. What kind of status was that?

Zhang Ruochen...

Why was this name so familiar?

Suddenly, Han Shang thought of something and his expression changed drastically again. "Could it be Zhang Ruochen, number one on the Saints Merits Rank?" he exclaimed. "He's from Guanghan Field?"

Feng Yan's eyes flashed and saintly might burst forth. "What are you so busy about that you only learned today that Zhang Ruochen is from Guanghan Field?"

Han Shang was sweating and his legs trembled in fear.

Lowering himself onto one knee, he stuttered, "Sorry...s... sorry, I...I'm blind, Senior Brother Feng, I didn't mean to... to...offend...Zhang...Ruo...Chen..."

Han Shang wasn't afraid of Zhang Ruochen. He feared Feng Yan.

He knew better than anyone how terrifying Feng Yan's background was. His one word could probably make Han Shang vanish from this world. His entire family could be affected too.

Since Zhang Ruochen was friends with Feng Yan, then he couldn't offend Zhang Ruochen at all.

Zhang Ruochen didn't care about a bully like Han Shang. He walked over to the Sea of Truth.

There were ten Boats of Truth stopped at the side.

Each boat was three feet long and one foot wide. They would start rocking as soon as the cultivator stood on them, and were extremely unsteady. One had to use saintly might to steady one of the boats.

Zhang Ruochen entered one of the empty boats. At the same time, nine other cultivators entered the other nine boats.

As long as I cross the first level, I'll receive one month of cultivation time and three more spots to the Truth Godly Palace. Zhang Ruochen was filled with excitement.

Chapter 1574 - The First Level of Ocean Domain

Chapter 1574: The First Level of Ocean Domain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Feng Yan transmitted his voice to tell Zhang Ruochen as he boarded the Boat of Truth, “Don’t use Saint Figure Rune and saint pills that can increase your power, otherwise, it’ll be more difficult.”

Whoosh!

Ten Boats of Truth sailed at the same time.

All ten creatures on the boats were absolute saints and half-step saint kings, representing the best of their large fields. However, the Boat of Truth started to shake fiercely the second they set sail.

“So difficult to control it.”

The Boat of Truth that Zhang Ruochen was sailing on was also shaking. He felt like he was sailing on a tiny thread instead of being on the ocean, and besides, there were constant waves hitting the boat.

Bang!

An absolute saint fell into the ocean.

He was only hundreds of feet away from the shore, which meant he failed right after he set off.

All the other monks who were trying to get past the ocean realized that it was way more difficult than they thought to pass Ocean of Truth.

Fang Yan said, “They don’t even know what kind of challenges they’re facing in their first time, so they can’t come up with a solution instantly, which is why it’s almost impossible to get to the exit of the first level of Ocean Domain. It’ll be easier the second time.”

Wang Xu didn’t leave. He asked, “How far do you think he can get?”

Both Wang Xu and Fang Yan reached the exit of the first level of the ocean domain the first time they tried, yet neither of them passed it.

On the ocean.

The other eight creatures were also struggling to balance their Boats of Truth, sailing slowly.

Suddenly, a wind blew toward them when they were ten miles away from the shore. The wind was so fierce that it dispersed the saint power that was covering the Boats of Truth.

Flop!

Flop!

...

Four creatures fell into the ocean.

It’s only been ten miles, yet half the monks have fallen into the ocean. No wonder even Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine could only sail for twenty-two miles. Ling Feiyu reached the exit of the first level of ocean domain probably because of her saint-king-level cultivation, Zhang Ruochen thought.

There were only five Boats of Truth left on the ocean.

The Boat of Truth Zhang Ruochen was sailing was the most stable one, and the second one, which was one mile away from Zhang Ruochen, was sailed by Buddha Xinshu.

Buddha Xinshu was a disciple of Death Zen Ancestor, and he was also one of the five great beings on the ‘Five Heroes List.’

“Buddha Xinshu was taught by Death Zen Ancestor, and he’s refined lots of godly blood and godly bones, reading millions of Buddha records. He has tremendous cultivation. He even

refined with me in the godly body recently to comprehend the mysteries of the Gods, which greatly improved his power. However, Zhang Ruochen's still better than him," said Wan Zhaoyi.

Chen Wutian said, "We only refined Sub-Complete Body Constitution, yet Zhang Ruochen has Supreme Complete Body Constitution. This is the gap between us. If you have Complete Body Constitution, you might be able to rival Zhang Ruochen in the future."

Wan Zhaoyi shook his head and said, "The biggest difference between us and Zhang Ruochen isn't body constitution."

Flop!

Another monk fell into the water.

After twenty miles, only Zhang Ruochen and Buddha Xinshu were still on the boats. As for the others, they'd all failed.

Spiritual Flame Demonic Concubine was a bit surprised. "There's another half-step saint king still on the boat beside Zhang Ruochen. Can't believe there's another great being like that."

Normally, only those who were on the 'Saints Merits Rank' could sail more than twenty miles far the first time.

Mu Lingxi said, "He's a monk from Kunlun's Field, Xinshu. He was one of the greatest beings in the past era."

Mu Lingxi needed to look up to Buddha Xinshu before. Now, her cultivation had caught up with him, and she also gained the inheritance of the Ice and Fire Phoenix, yet Buddha Xinshu still trumped her on lots of aspects.

Ling Feiyu said, "Saintly way rules are lacking in Kunlun's Field, so it was impressive that Xinshu could reach that level. It requires perseverance and intelligence. His cultivation will surge now that he's in Heaven World."

Ling Feiyu was stuck at first-step saint king when she was in Kunlun's Field, yet after coming to Heaven World, she quickly became a second-step saint king and now was very close to becoming a third-step saint king.

It was impossible to improve cultivation like that in Kunlun's Field.

Feng Yan said, "Kunlun's Field is a mysterious large field where lots of prominent beings were born. They were trapped before, and now that their shackles are gone, it's their time to shine."

"Ugh."

Wang Xu sneered, as he didn't agree with what Feng Yan said.

After twenty-three miles, Buddha Xinshu couldn't balance his Boat of Truth anymore, falling into the ocean, yet it was still amazing to the monks on the shore.

Zhang Ruochen was still sailing, and he saw a light screen several miles away.

He couldn't get to the second level of the ocean domain until he passed that light screen.

The closer he got to the light screen, the stronger the winds and waves were, almost about to blow Zhang Ruochen and his Boat of Truth away.

Zhang Ruochen kept releasing his saint power, covering his Boat of Truth. He only got to the light screen after half an hour.

Everyone on the shore was amazed.

"No wonder he's the first on the 'Saints Merits Rank.'"

"Only one in ten thousand can reach the exit the first time."

"Let's see how long he can last at the exit."

...

Zhang Ruochen looked up while controlling his Boat of Truth.

The light screen gleamed with saint light.

Sizzle!

Traces of saint light intertwined with each other, forming a saint general wearing silver armor. He was transparent, with the cultivation of a half-step saint king.

“You can get to the second level if you defeat me. You can choose your weapon now,” said the silver-armored saint general.

Zhang Ruochen didn't plan to use the Abyss Ancient Sword. Instead, he triggered Hundred Saints Blood Armor to cover his entire body, and he took out the purple godly stone.

“I need to warn you. That purple godly stone isn't permitted here. I'll use three times the power to fight you if you use it,” said the silver-armored saint general.

“Can't believe a saint general formed by saint light is so intelligent.”

Zhang Ruochen then put back his purple godly stone and said, “I won't use any weapon.”

“Okay.”

The silver-armored saint general formed a fist print and released great saint power, hitting Zhang Ruochen, raging waves on the ocean.

Zhang Ruochen immediately mobilized his saint Qi, trying to perform Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm to defeat the silver-armored saint general.

However, his Boat of Truth started to shake fiercely the second he mobilized his saint Qi.

“No!”

He'd been using his saint Qi to balance the Boat of Truth before, but now that he was using part of the saint Qi to perform palm techniques, the Boat of Truth started to lose control.

Before Zhang Ruochen thought of a strategy to deal with it, he was almost hit by the palm print from the silver-armored saint general.

Aside from the palm print, the waves under him tumbled more and more fiercely.

Zhang Ruochen had to control his Boat of Truth to make sure it wouldn't be toppled, and then, he formed a weak palm print,

clashing with that from the silver-armored saint general.

Bang!

That fist force knocked Zhang Ruochen and the Boat of Truth away.

Just as he was about to fall into the ocean, he immediately focused all his saint power to his feet, standing on the Boat of Truth.

Boom!

The Boat of Truth landed on the ocean again, and the water tumbled fiercely, yet Zhang Ruochen was still standing on the boat as if they were one.

The silver-armored saint general didn't give Zhang Ruochen any time to think. He formed a second fist print, and its power got stronger.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly came up with an idea. "I can use my mind power to control the Boat of Truth to fight the silver-armored saint general."

Zhang Ruochen released all his mind power to control the Boat of Truth.

And then, Zhang Ruochen used seventy percent of his saint power to fight the silver-armored saint general while using the rest of the thirty percent to control the Boat of Truth.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen was knocked away again, and his arms became sore.

That silver-armored saint general had better power and techniques than Zhang Ruochen. He fought not like a half-step saint king, but like an experienced saint king.

Chapter 1575 - Mysteries of Truth

Chapter 1575: Mysteries of Truth

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

So powerful, Zhang Ruochen thought. I won't be able to defeat him without using the Rules of Truth.

The Silver Armor Saint General was expressionless. Releasing a loud roar, balls of silver fire emerged out of his body and formed a huge whirlpool along with his fists.

The Truth Boat underfoot broke free from Zhang Ruochen's control and was swept into the whirlpool.

He remained calm even when facing this danger. He entered the whirlpool with the Truth Boat, but his eyes were studying the Silver Armor Saint General, observing his every move.

Boom!

Two fiery fists the size of mountains passed through the whirlpool and landed on Zhang Ruochen's head. They covered him like two gray clouds.

“Dragon Nine Skies.”

Hot yang Qi poured out of Zhang Ruochen's body.

Then he performed the tenth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. His body transformed into a glittering golden dragon and flew upward.

Standing on land, it was like watching a divine dragon that had been hiding underwater suddenly fly bravely into the sky.

Boundless dragon Qi filled the entire sea and lifted huge currents. Waves overlapped and spread to the land.

Zhang Ruochen had added Rules of Truth into the previous palm technique so it had doubled in strength.

More accurately, Zhang Ruochen had attacked with a dragon claw.

As the claw struck down, it tore apart the fiery fist print and hit the Silver Armor Saint General. He quickly plummeted toward the sea.

Roar!

The golden dragon roared and circled in the sky. It rushed down to the Truth Boat and turned back into Zhang Ruochen.

This entire process happened within seconds. Thus, even without Zhang Ruochen's support, the Truth Boat only tipped to the side slightly and didn't capsize.

He steered the boat and transformed into an arrow. He crashed toward the Silver Armor Saint General that had fallen back to the sea and forced him back until he was below the curtain of light.

“Elephants Galloping.”

“Dragon in the Sky.”

“Dragon and Elephant Returning.”

...

“Dragon Nine Skies.”

“Dragon and Elephant to the Sky.”

...

Divine Fire Jingmie poured out of the 14 apertures on Zhang Ruochen's palms. He also added the Rules of Truth and struck out with a dozen palm prints.

Within hundreds of feet in the sea, waves kept lifting and crashing. Divine Fire Jingmie shrouded the area too. Water, fire, and palm force mixed together, creating chaos. One could only hear booming sounds.

Kaboom.

Following a deafening sound, Zhang Ruochen actually shattered the Silver Armor Saint General, turning it into a ball of silver mist.

The fire scattered.

The chaotic palm force gradually disappeared too, the sea surface calming.

“This was so difficult. The guardian of the first level is already so powerful. I wonder how strong the guardian of the second level will be.”

Zhang Ruochen stood on the Truth Boat and panted heavily. He quickly circulated Holy Qi within him to adjust his breathing. When the chaotic saintly might calmed, he steered the boat past the curtain of light and entered the second level.

Boom!

Deafening cheers sounded on land. All the cultivators were discussing this. They were clearly impressed.

Mu Lingxi and the other Guanghan Field cultivators didn't try to suppress their emotions. They were all excited and happy.

“Zhang Ruochen passed the first level. He received one month of cultivation and three extra spots. This way, three more cultivators of Guanghan Field can come to the Truth Heavenly Domain.”

“The priest is so powerful. As long as he's here, he can bring glory to Guanghan Field.”

He'd passed the first level on his first visit to the Sea of Truth. This was very rare. Even the top figures of the Saints Merits Rank had difficulty doing it.

Feng Yan was surprised too. “He only cultivated 13 days,” he murmured to himself, “and he could already comprehend the entire first image. Zhang Ruochen's perception is shocking.”

Wang Xu narrowed his eyes, thinking, Zhang Ruochen was far from as strong as me the last time we fought. His speed of improving has surpassed my predictions.

After passing the curtain of light and entering the second level, Zhang Ruochen immediately sensed that the Truth Boat was harder to control.

The wind on the sea turned into a storm.

Every shred of wind was like a blade and produced metallic clashes when they hit the boat.

Zhang Ruochen had to control his Spiritual Power and saintly power with all his might to control the boat. Under these circumstances, he wouldn't be able to fight with the guardian even if he reached the pass of the second level.

The second level was also 30 miles wide.

As Zhang Ruochen navigated further and further, the seawater and wind attacked the Truth Boat more strongly. Zhang Ruochen was losing control even though he was using all his might.

“I can't reach the second pass even with my Spiritual Power and saintly might? This is the Sea of Truth and I'm steering the Truth Boat...Let me try using the Rules of Truth.”

Getting this idea, Zhang Ruochen activated the nine Rules of truth and sent them into the Truth Boat.

A strange feeling instantly emerged in his heart. It was like nine invisible forces connected the Truth Boat and the Sea of Truth beneath him.

The boat that had been rocking was now much steadier. Zhang Ruochen only had to use his Spiritual Power and a bit of saintly might to control it.

“Indeed, it's related to the Rules of Truth.” Zhang Ruochen chuckled.

The following journey was quite successful. A while later, Zhang Ruochen reached the second pass, appearing under the curtain of light.

Poof, poof.

Another Silver Armor Saint General flew out of the light curtain, shimmering and floating in the air.

It was still a half-step Saint King with sharp eyes and a semi-transparent body. However, there were silver bones inside the body. The aura radiating from him gave Zhang Ruochen quite a lot of pressure.

“Defeat me and you can enter the third level,” the Silver Armor Saint General said coldly.

This time, Zhang Ruochen attacked proactively. He flew out of the Truth Boat, transforming into a golden dragon and unleashed the tenth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

“Rules of Truth.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped using the Rules of Truth to control the boat. Instead, he added the nine rules into his palm technique.

His full-power palm transformed into a golden dragon claw and slapped down at the Silver Armor Saint General.

Argh!

The Saint General let out a dragon roar and actually performed the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm too. However, he actually used the eleventh palm—Dragon and Elephant to the Sky.

Kaboom!

The golden dragon was sent into the sea by the Silver Armor Saint General’s palm print.

Zhang Ruochen returned to the Truth Boat, transforming back into human form. It was like his bones had fallen apart. His legs trembled and he couldn’t stand steadily.

The boat underfoot shook violently.

“How is this possible? He’s actually skilled in the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm too and has completed the eleventh palm.”

Before Zhang Ruochen could steady himself, the Silver Armor Saint General’s second palm print slapped down like a five-fingered mountain.

Zhang Ruochen felt the world darken and his body couldn't move. It was like the sun, moon, and all the stars in the universe fell down. Faced with such terrifying strength, many cultivators would fall to the ground in fear.

He clenched his teeth. Putting his hands together, he activated spatial power and struck up.

Whoosh!

A spatial crack flew out, ripping apart the incoming palm print.

But before he could take a breath, another palm print fell down. It hit his head, sending him and the Truth Boat deep into the sea.

Zhang Ruochen felt dizzy and his body grew heavier as if he was about to lose consciousness.

Suddenly, his body grew lighter and a gentle strength fused into the 144 apertures in his body. It flowed through his meridians and Saintly Meridians like specks of light.

“You reached the second pass on your first time to the Sea of Truth and exchanged countless strikes with the guardian. You are very talented and received one-ten-thousandth of the Mysteries of Truth.” A wispy voice entered Zhang Ruochen's mind.

“What's the Mysteries of Truth?” he asked.

“The more you receive, the faster you will comprehend the Rules of Saintly Way and the more you'll understand the truth of the world. If you receive one one-hundredth of the Mysteries of Truth, you'll become a Messenger of Truth.”

“Then what's the Messenger of Truth?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

When he asked this question, he felt his sight brighten and realized that he was on the bank of the sea. Even more surprising was that he had no injuries at all.

“Congratulations, Brother Zhang. You reached the second pass on your first try. This is a rare accomplishment since the establishment of the Truth Godly Palace.” Feng Yan walked over and patted Zhang Ruochen's shoulder strongly.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't used to this enthusiasm. He was wondering what the Mysteries of Truth and Messenger of Truth were exactly. Who was the one that spoke to him?

He felt instinctively that the Mysteries of Truth must be something impressive. Not every cultivator who passed the first level could get it.

It was only one-ten-thousandth, but he could feel that he was different now. He could clearly sense all sorts of rules flowing around him.

If he was cultivating in isolation now, he would definitely be faster at comprehending the Rules of Saintly Way.

I wonder where I can get more information on the Mysteries of Truth. Maybe I can ask the Moon Goddess. She must know.

Zhang Ruochen only knew that he received something great, but he didn't know just how great.

“What are you thinking about?” Feng Yan said, chuckling.
“Come, I'll bring you to the Wanglai Saint Pavilion, one of the top ten saint pavilions, to receive your one month's time and three extra spots.”

Feng Yan pulled Zhang Ruochen toward a saint pavilion not far from the Sea of Truth.

“Zhang Ruochen is willing to interact with Feng Yan of the Feng Clan. This isn't good news. I must tell Ziyun.”

Zhang Ruochen had only cultivated for 13 days and had already reached the second pass and fought with the guardian. This indeed gave Wang Xu some pressure.

But when he thought that Zhang Ruochen would soon be dead, the pressure disappeared.

Chapter 1576 - Plan

Zhang Ruochen gained an extra month to refine after going to Wanglai Saint Pavilion, and he was given three tokens from Truth Godly Palace, representing three opportunities to enter the Godly Palace.

Unfortunately, a monk could only get one chance each year, otherwise Zhang Ruochen would've given them all to Mu Lingxi and Ling Feiyu.

After walking out of the Truth Godly Palace, Zhang Ruochen gave all three tokens to Su Jing.

Su Jing knew how valuable the opportunities to refine in the Truth Godly Palace were. Each opportunity meant an improvement in Guanghan Field's overall power.

Su Jing carefully put away the three tokens. He said, "I'll head back to Shatuo Heavenly Domain and select three more saints here."

"Uncle Jing," Zhang Ruochen said to Su Jing. "We're having a hard time in Truth Heavenly Domain at the moment. I reckon we should deploy three saint kings from Guanghan Field here first."

Su Jing was a bit hesitant.

After all, only comprehending the Rule of Truth as a saint would greatly help a monk. Those three opportunities wouldn't help saint kings much.

Su Jing knew that Zhang Ruochen wanted great beings here to take back the dojos that once belonged to Guanghan Field, and he might wage a war against Shang Ziyan in the future.

However, Su Jing was also ten times Zhang Ruochen's age, so he was more long-term-oriented. He said, "If we deploy three saint kings here, our enemies might deploy thirty, or even three hundred saint kings. Those powerful fields have a great number of saint kings, so losing one saint king is nothing to them, but it'll be a huge loss to Guanghan Field."

Zhang Ruochen could tell that Su Jing was very mature yet conservative.

He was suitable for managing a large field, yet he couldn't help a large field rise.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Okay, then ask that owl saint beast from Mount Yuanxu Sacred Land to come here. You can choose the other two, Uncle Jing."

Zhang Ruochen was the one who gained those opportunities, so Su Jing didn't have any objection to it.

Su Jing asked him to be careful not to leave Jingxing Cliff Dojo, and then, he went back to Shatuo Heavenly Domain with the three tokens.

"Zhang Ruochen, I'll go take some tasks from Truth Godly Palace to gain more time to refine here, so I won't be going back to the dojo with you guys." Ling Feiyu walked out, standing there like a lotus growing on a snow-capped mountain.

Ling Feiyu knew how important it was to refine in the Truth Godly Palace, so she would try everything to get more time to refine.

Since she failed to get past the first level of the ocean domain, she had to take up the tasks from the Truth Godly Palace.

Zhang Ruochen knew how independent Ling Feiyu was, and that she had her plans and didn't need others to tell her what to do.

Besides, Ling Feiyu was strong enough to take up the tasks herself.

"Okay," said Zhang Ruochen.

"If you want to get back the dojos that belong to the Moon Goddess or fight the great beings from Cloud Field, just send me a message. I'll definitely come back and help you."

Ling Feiyu also knew Zhang Ruochen well enough to figure out his next step.

After Ling Feiyu left, Zhang Ruochen went back to Jingxiang Cliff Dojo with Mu Lingxi, Wen Shusheng, Ling Mi, and Su Qingling.

Kongling Island.

Feng Yan came to the saint palace at the center of the island and the door was opened automatically.

Feng Xi and the man in the Taoist cape seemed to have never left, still playing chess.

“Sister, Zhang Ruochen got past the first level of the ocean domain and has reached the second level of the ocean domain already. He even fought the guard for a short while,” Feng Yan said.

“I know!” Feng Xi said, looking at the chessboard.

“Why are these two guys so calm? Even if you’re powerful, you should at least be a bit thrilled.” Feng Yan felt a bit irritated.

Feng Xi kept playing chess with the man in the Taoist cape without saying a word, which bored Feng Yan, so he left the saint palace, shaking his head.

After a while, Feng Xi said, “Zhang Ruochen’s performance was amazing when he was passing through Ocean of Truth. I reckon Shang Ziyang will definitely make a move. Why are you still playing chess with me here?”

“Shang Ziyang is always very cost-efficient. I’ve already kind of figured out what he’s going to do. No need to rush,” said the man in the Taoist cape.

...

After getting back to Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, Mu Lingxi, Wen Shusheng, and the others started to comprehend the picture of the Way of Truth left by Tree God.

Failing to get past Ocean of Truth was a huge wake-up call for them.

Zhang Ruochen managed to get to the exit of the second level of the ocean domain, yet they couldn’t even get past the first

twenty miles of the first level, which motivated all of them to refine to catch up with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen came to the border of the dojo, and he saw that all the saint kings from Cloud Field had all left.

“Perhaps they’ve received news that I passed the first level of the ocean domain.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Those saint kings knew that they couldn’t trap Zhang Ruochen and the others from Guanghan Field, so they wouldn’t stay here. They probably cursed Zhang Ruochen and his entire family before leaving.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to send a message to Moon Goddess to ask about ‘Mysteries of Truth,’ but Jingxiang Cliff Dojo wasn’t a safe place. If a monk who had better mind power than him was around, he would be able to seize the signal flare and learn about his secret.

His enemy was the leader of the new generation from Merits Godly Palace, Shang Ziyan. He was totally capable of sending a mind power saint king to guard Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

Signal flares could only be stopped when they were just sent out, and it was almost impossible to stop them when they were halfway to the destination.

Zhang Ruochen used space transportation formation, for safety purposes. He came to a cordillera that was around a hundred thousand miles away from Jingxiang Cliff Dojo and wrote his message, sending it out.

And then, he just needed to wait for the Moon Goddess’s reply.

Zhang Ruochen observed the surroundings, and all he saw were forests where golden maple trees were growing.

It was so remote that almost no monks had ever set up here.

“I can set up a transportation formation here. Perhaps it’ll be of use in the future.”

Each transportation formation was a way to escape.

It only took Zhang Ruochen an hour to set up a space transportation formation.

He then buried the formation seven feet underground.

“If Blackie were here, it could hide the transportation formation much better using invisibility formation.”

Zhang Ruochen rarely spent time studying formation, so he didn't want to set up some weak invisibility formation that might expose the transportation formation.

Whoosh!

A light spot flew into the golden maple forest and fell into Zhang Ruochen's hand.

“It's Moon Goddess's reply.”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the signal flare and couldn't wait to read the message.

“Firstly, this is an incredible opportunity for you. Keep trying to cross Ocean of Truth. Every time you cross a level of the ocean domain, you'll get more Mysteries of Truth. When you get one hundredth of the Mysteries of Truth and become a Messenger of Truth, I'll tell you what it is.

“Secondly, you can't tell anyone about this secret. There're also other monks who've gained Mysteries of Truth. If the other monks with Mysteries of Truth know, they'll try to kill you and get your Mysteries of Truth.

“Last but not least, there's only a fixed amount of Mysteries of Truth in the universe. You obtained one ten thousandth of them already, so you must try to get the remaining ones.”

Zhang Ruochen was more curious after reading the material.

And then, he used his mind power to check the Mysteries of Truth inside his body.

Those Mysteries of Truth looked like light spots spreading across his body, which cleared his mind completely.

It wasn't just easier for him to comprehend saintly way rules, but to do everything.

It only took him an hour to set up the transportation formation, which was so efficient that even Zhang Ruochen himself found it amazing because it used to take him three hours to set up a transportation formation.

“The most important thing is to collect more Mysteries of Truth. Moon Goddess would never trick me, so Mysteries of Truth have got to be something incredible.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't know who else had also gained Mysteries of Truth, so he couldn't go seize them yet. He had to try crossing Ocean of Truth to gain more Mysteries of Truth.

The guard at the second level of the ocean domain was immensely powerful, and Zhang Ruochen wasn't strong enough to defeat him yet.

“I have three weak spots that I need to deal with now.

“Rules of Truth. The more rules I comprehend, the better I can control the Boat of Truth to show more power.

“Mind power, which can help me control the Boat of Truth.

“Mid-tier saint spell. I must complete a mid-tier saint spell, otherwise, I'll still be at a huge disadvantage when fighting the guard.”

Zhang Ruochen had forty-seven days to refine, however, there were so many monks from all the fields that he needed to wait in line to refine in Truth Godly Palace.

“I must refine the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm first. If I reach ultimate completion, I'll be able to rival the guard of the second level of the ocean domain.”

Zhang Ruochen decided to go buy saint-king-level dragon souls and elephant souls in the saint market, including saint pills that could improve his mind power.

Heavenly Capital Saint Market was the only market in Truth Heavenly Domain. There were monks from all the ten thousand fields, and the disciples from Truth Godly Palace, all buying stuff there.

Because of the unique status of Truth Godly Palace, Heavenly Capital Saint Market was prosperous, with great fame in the

entire Heaven World. There were rarely things monks couldn't purchase in Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

Zhang Ruochen left the cordillera and went to the ferry crossing, heading to Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

Zhang Ruochen used Traceless 36 Changes to change his appearance and Buddhist beads to cover his forces so that no one could recognize him.

Chapter 1577 - Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly

Chapter 1577: Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly

Other than Zhang Ruochen, there were a dozen other strong Saints going toward the Heavenly Capital Saint Market on the cloud boats.

They were all from different worlds. There were winged cultivators from the Feather Race who were all beautiful and elegant. There were also tiny palm-sized butterfly creatures. They flitted around like a group of colorful butterflies, but each one contained terrifying saintly power ripples. They also spoke to one another.

In addition, Zhang Ruochen saw two dragons in human form.

It was evident that they had natural True Dragon Bodies. They had powerful Blood Qi and all emanated saintly might. Mixed dragons couldn't compare with them.

The cultivators of each world formed small cliques. Only Zhang Ruochen was alone.

He wore a loose black robe and stood at the tail of the ship, listening quietly to their conversations. He wanted to collect some useful information.

“Zhang Ruochen, number one on the Saints Merits Rank, has appeared.”

“I heard earlier that this guy killed a dozen figures from Cloud Field on his first day to the Truth Heavenly Domain. He's really fierce and strong.”

“That news is old. The newest information I got is that Zhang Ruochen crossed the first level of the sea and was so close to crossing the second. Apparently, he only cultivated in the Truth Godly Palace for 13 days before that. He's a frightening talent. He'll probably be able to rise up into the Truth Heavenly Domain soon.”

The Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies chattered nonstop. They were actually discussing Zhang Ruochen.

The Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies were a very frightening race. Apparently, their Supreme Saints could encase an entire planet if they opened their wings. If they spat fire, they could melt a planet into liquid.

Of the two dragons, the man standing on the left was named Xin Jian. He was tall with hawkish features. Hearing the Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies' conversations, he chuckled softly. "The rumors get more exaggerated as people spread them. How can Zhang Ruochen be that strong?"

The butterflies chattered amongst themselves, clearly unhappy.

Then a butterfly with golden and white spots on her wings flew out. "Zhang Ruochen is very strong. I, the princess, would never receive false information."

Dragons of any great world were all proud creatures. Pure dragons were especially proud and looked down on every other being.

Xin Jian had the arrogance of a dragon and had no respect for that butterfly. Laughing, he said, "Unfortunately, I was at the Sea of Truth at that time. I personally saw the guardian of the second level push Zhang Ruochen into the water easily. He fell in so pathetically and couldn't even fight back. He's still far from being able to cross the second level."

The Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly was frustrated. "Nonsense. Zhang Ruochen obviously had more than 700 exchanges with the guardian of the second level and almost passed. Even though he lost, he left calmly. He didn't get a drop of water on him."

...

The two dragons started fighting intensely with the Heaven Fire Butterflies. The atmosphere grew tense.

Zhang Ruochen sighed inwardly. Rumors were scary. Some exaggerated his abilities, making him into an undefeatable god. Others made him sound horrible and did everything they could to put him down.

Of course, the most surprising thing was that the Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies and dragons had nothing to do with him, but they were actually fighting over him.

They flew out of the ship and released their Holy Qi, turning into their original forms.

Roar!

The two dragon cultivators transformed into silver dragons that were dozens of miles long and flew into the clouds. Instantly, the sky turned silver. The clouds seemed to be made out of silver and the sight was magnificent.

Heavy dragon Qi whooshed through the sky, like thousands of dragons were flying.

Nine Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies transformed into nine huge clouds. They released heavenly fire of different colors, burning the entire sky into a sea of fire.

Boom!

Following a string of explosions, only a few breaths passed and the two silver dragons screamed. They rushed out of the sea of fire and fled to the horizon.

The heavenly fire wrapped around the two silver dragons, seeping into their flesh from the cracks between the scales.

They were two powerful silver dragons, but they now became two fiery snakes. They ran in panic and their cries traveled thousands of miles.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. The Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies are quite terrifying. Even true dragons lose after angering them.

One must know that the True Dragon Body was the strongest under the Five Elements Chaotic Body and True God Body. The dragon race also had natural talents, so the two dragons were definitely able to kill a first step Saint King.

The nine Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies put away their fire and shrunk back to palm-sized butterflies. They flew back and landed on the cloud ship.

“Two stupid dragons dare to refute me,” the butterfly with golden and white specks said. “If we weren’t in the Truth Heavenly Domain, I would’ve crushed them into mush and buried them in my garden as fertilizer.”

The other cultivators on the ship had witnessed the power of the butterflies. They all grew fearful and tried to stay away from them.

After that, the nine butterflies started chattering nonstop again, but they stopped discussing Zhang Ruochen. Instead, they talked about the recent happenings in the Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

“I heard an auction in the Heaven World sold a Five Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. It was bought by a mysterious figure with 24,000,000 saint stones.”

“I heard too. I heard that he was Deity Changsheng from True Martial Field.”

“He’s too rich. He can pay millions of saint stones so easily. My entire fortune is probably only one percent of that.”

“That’s nothing. Back when Deity Shiqing pursued Fairy Tianchu from the Nine Angels Beauty Scroll, he gifted her a heaven divine pill, the Kunxu Pill. It’s worth more than 50 million saint stones. Anyway, those deities and descendants of gods are all extremely rich and big spenders. We can’t compare.”

“Princess, do you know that Fairy Tianchu even rejected the Kunxu Pill? So enviable.”

“There’s no helping that. Fairy Tianchu is from an ancient civilization too. She probably has a bigger fortune than Deity Shiqing. Plus, there are countless prides who pursue her. Why should she choose such a big guy?”

...

The Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies were filled with gossip. They went from the legends of deities and fairies to the private life of some disciple of the Truth Godly Palace. It was like they knew everything.

But Zhang Ruochen only believed half of what they said.

After all, they'd exaggerated Zhang Ruochen's abilities too much and made it sound legit too.

When they were almost at the Heavenly Capital Saint Market, one of the butterflies saw that Zhang Ruochen was alone, so she flew over. "Hey, human, is it your first time going to the Heavenly Capital Saint Market? You have to be careful!"

"Careful of what?"

"There are many scammers in the market who fool first-timers. If you want to buy something or sell a certain treasure, you must go to a reputable saint store. It's best if you go to the saint store of a top world, so you don't get scammed."

Zhang Ruochen was curious. "How do you know it's my first time here?"

The butterfly looked quite proud. "Cultivators who go to the Heavenly Capital Saint Market either go to buy things or sell something they just got. Either way, it means they have something very valuable or many saint stones. Thus, very few cultivators go alone. It's easy for them to catch the attention of those from the Demonic or Evil Way. Only ignorant cultivators like you would go alone."

"I see," Zhang Ruochen said. "Thanks for your reminder."

"You're welcome, you're welcome," the butterfly said. "Since we boarded the same cloud ship, we're friends. Friends obviously wouldn't scam friends. If you trust me, follow me to Hundred Flower Palace. It's run by Thousand Pistil Field, number 175 on the Thousand Field Merits Rank."

A butterfly had so many ways!

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but smile, but he didn't reply.

In the distance, the other eight Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies laughed. They seemed to be laughing at this one for failing to get a customer.

"You don't trust me?"

Panicking, the butterfly went in for the kill. “Don’t you know that the master of the Hundred Flower Palace is Ji Fanxin, the Hundred Flower Fairy from the Nine Angels Beauty Scroll? If you go with me, you might be able to meet this legendary figure.”

The Hundred Flower Fairy, Ji Fanxin, was very famous in the entire Heaven World. She was like a goddess who was also very strong. Countless deities and heirs pursued her.

It was because of her that the Hundred Flower Palace could keep growing their business in the Heavenly Capital Saint Market. In fact, they were about to catch up to the stores run by the top ten worlds.

Of course, the so-called “meeting of Ji Fanxin” was just a ploy to scam Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Fanxin was the owner of Hundred Flower Palace, but she focused on cultivation and never cared about business matters. Even many Deities couldn’t meet her. It would be even more impossible for a nameless human to meet her.

Zhang Ruochen knew what the Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly was planning, but he still put on a thoughtful expression.

Ji Fanxin indeed is a nice trademark. Her credibility can’t be off. Instead of looking aimlessly, why don’t I visit the Hundred Flower Palace? Maybe I can buy Saint King dragon and elephant souls.

“Okay,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I’ll go to Hundred Flower Palace with you.”

The Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly immediately smiled as if her trick had worked. She flew back to the butterfly group and started bragging.

The other cultivators on the ship looked at Zhang Ruochen as if he was stupid. Someone even laughed softly and said, “Another guy who was tricked to going to Hundred Flower Palace. He really thinks that he can meet The Hundred Flower Fairy.

“It’s not really a scam. Hundred Flower Palace has quite good credibility and abilities. They just can’t compare to the heritage of saint stores run by the top ten worlds.”

A while later, the ship passed through a cloud. As he looked forward, the Heavenly Capital Saint Market appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s vision.

Chapter 1578 - Moon Goddess Dojo

Heavenly Capital Saint Market was built on Heavenly Capital Mountain, which floated in the air, piercing through the clouds. Nobody knew how vast the mountain was.

Even the part of the mountain that was showing outside the cloud looked towering and forceful. There were many strange-looking buildings, including castles, palaces, temples, and towers built among the saint light, many of which Zhang Ruochen had never seen or heard of before.

He saw booths set up by all sorts of creatures the second he stepped into the saint market. There were gourds that were holding saint pills, glowing battle swords, giant golden Ganoderma, and spiritual snakes...

A slender man with goat horns was walking ten Luosha females with a Saint-binding Chain and shouting the price.

A monk with three eyes carrying a Space Rain Saint Flower that was thirty thousand years gold was standing outside a golden temple, seeming to attract customers.

“There’re products of all sorts,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Nine Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies were flying around Zhang Ruochen. One of them said, “Only monks from top-tier powerful fields could set up saint shops in Heavenly Capital Saint Market, others can only establish booths.”

“Although there might also be some real valuables in the booths, the buyers’ safety can’t be guaranteed. Chances are the valuables they buy will be seized the second they leave Heavenly Capital Saint Market.”

Zhang Ruochen saw all sorts of monks in the market, but most of them were saints. He rarely met anyone who was a saint king.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen stopped walking and looked to a black palace on his right.

That palace was engulfed in thick evil mist, giving out gloomy forces. He could even hear the sound of ghosts and beasts from the palace.

There was a stone tablet that was forty feet tall outside the evil mist, and there were four words on the tablet, ‘Yin and Yang Palace.’

Beside the tablet stood four seductive women wearing revealing saint blouses, showing their shoulders, bellies, and smooth legs.

There were some monks going in, but they were all covering themselves with masks and clothes as if they didn’t want anyone to recognize them.

The nine Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies all chuckled seeing Zhang Ruochen stopped at the tablet.

The princess of Demonic Butterflies said, “Yin and Yang Palace isn’t a place to stay. I heard that there’s a large group of evil and ferocious people who have collected precious females from all over the universe and are doing secret illicit trades. That evil man who was walking a group of Luosha females is one of the great beings from Yin and Yang Palace.

“Although Yin and Yang Palace has a horrible reputation, there’re still many monks who want to get inside to get themselves a treat. Are you tempted too, haha?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Only a very limited number of people are allowed to enter Truth Heavenly Domain. How did they bring so many beautiful women to Heavenly Capital Saint Market?”

Before the princess spoke, another Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly said, “The stronger a large field is, the better say its monks have in Truth Heavenly Domain. Those large fields can cooperate with the godly disciples from Truth Godly Palace and sign some contracts, then they can bring lots of slaves and goods to Heavenly Capital Saint Market. Those captured beauties are all just goods to sell.”

Another Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly added, “Those slaves and goods can’t leave Heavenly Capital Saint Market, which is the rule set by the godly disciples.”

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t attracted by those four seductive women. Instead, he was drawn to the godly statue beside that stone tablet.

The godly statue was seven hundred and twenty feet tall, and it was an ethereal woman with her blouse waving in the air, and the light emanating from that statue was holy.

It was the Moon Goddess’s statue.

However, none of the monks who walked by this place would be awed by the statue of the Moon Goddess when they thought of the trades going on in Yin and Yang Palace. Instead, they might want to blaspheme it.

“Is this the dojo of Moon Goddess?”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and couldn’t help clenching his fist.

The princess of Demonic Butterflies said, “That’s right. Only powerful Gods are able to set up dojos in Heavenly Capital Saint Market, and Moon Goddess was one of them. Only the large fields that have dojos can set up a saint shop in Heavenly Capital Saint Market, as in only top-tier large fields can establish saint shops.

“However, after the fall of Guanghan Field, Moon Goddess’s dojo was occupied by those great beings from the evil way. I’m not sure whether they’re trying to desecrate the innocent and pure Moon Goddess or not. I can’t believe they’re doing such disgusting trades in the dojo. Moon Goddess is my idol.”

The Moon Goddess charged Merits Godly Palace to save Zhang Ruochen on the Merit Star, and she lost the prizes meant for Guanghan Field’s creatures.

After that, Zhang Ruochen had much greater respect for the Moon Goddess, so he was infuriated by how the monks from the evil way blasphemed the Moon Goddess.

The skinny man with goat horns on his head walked to Zhang Ruochen, walking Luosha females wearing revealing clothes. He chuckled and said, “Human, do you want to get in and take a look? If you like human beauties, we just captured a saintess from an ancient race in a large field. If you like other types of girls, we have saintesses from the fox race, snake race, and even dragon race.”

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the slender man with goat horns, and he felt a pain in his eyes, which seemed to be tearing his saint soul apart.

Although he couldn’t confirm his cultivation, he was sure that the man with goat horns was definitely someone stronger than a third-step saint king, meaning he was a great being from the evil way.

The princess of Demonic Butterflies transmitted her voice to Zhang Ruochen. “Let’s leave here now. Yin and Yang Palace is guarded by Yin and Yang Field, ranked three hundred and seventy-second, Black Demon Field, ranked eighty hundred and ninety-first, and Thousand Devil Field, ranked fourteen hundred and fiftieth. There’re many people from the evil way gathering inside, and besides, the godly disciples from Truth Godly Palace are also involved in Yin and Yang Palace.”

All the nine Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies hated this place, and they were also worried that their guest might be tempted by the man with goat horns, so they were trying to get Zhang Ruochen out of here.

Zhang Ruochen tried to stay calm to not show his anger, leaving with the nine Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies.

“I’ll fight to get back Moon Goddess’s dojo after Blackie arrives.”

Blackie’s proficiency in formations would be of great help to Zhang Ruochen.

And besides, he needed to go buy the dragon soul and elephant soul at saint-king level to improve his strength, after which he would be able to handle any powerful being from the evil way.

That slender man with goat horns stared at Zhang Ruochen and whispered to himself, “He was so angry, and he’s powerful as well. Where does that human kid come from? And who’s his nemesis?”

The people from the evil way in Yin and Yang Ocean were demonic, and they had countless nemeses, so that man with goat horns didn’t overthink it. He walked the Luosha females back to Yin and Yang Palace like they were animals.

Hundred Flower Palace was a dojo of ‘Datura Flower Goddess’ from Thousand Pistil Field. Many talents from Thousand Pistil Field came here to comprehend the pictures of the Way of Truth.

If Yin and Yang Palace was hell, then Hundred Flower Palace was heaven.

The palaces were towering, glowing with saint light. There were spiritual flowers of all colors planted all around the palaces. One could smell the fragrance the second they walked in.

The princess of Demonic Butterflies shouted after she walked into Hundred Flower Palace, “Uncle Fairy, we’re back, and we bring a guest with us.”

A middle-aged man with a purple hat walked out, and he looked overbearing. He asked, “Did you guys cross the first level of the ocean domain in Truth Godly Palace?”

“It’s not that easy to cross the first level of the ocean domain. I fell into the ocean when I got to the exit of the first level. I didn’t even get to fight the guard,” said the princess of Demonic Butterflies.

The other eight Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies all shook their heads. Obviously, none of them crossed the first level, and they performed worse than Heavenly Demonic Princess.

The middle-aged man shook his head, sighing, about to scold them.

The princess of Demonic Butterflies said, “Uncle Fairy, receive our guest first. This is a very important guest. Treat him nicely.”

And then, the princess of Demonic Butterflies flew away with the other eight Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies, receding into the colorful spiritual flowers. The princess said, "We're going to comprehend the pictures of the Way of Truth."

The middle-aged man sighed, and then, he looked to Zhang Ruochen.

The middle-aged man had met enough people not to regard Zhang Ruochen as a special guest. After all, real special guests would have lots of monks following them, like those deities. They always had ostentation wherever they went.

Perhaps it's just a dumbass who was tricked by them. It must be his first time in Heavenly Capital Saint Market, the middle-aged man thought.

However, the middle-aged man didn't treat Zhang Ruochen with slack. He smiled and introduced himself. "I'm Fairy Extreme King from Thousand Pistil Field, and I'm living in Truth Heavenly Domain temporarily and responsible for the businesses conducted by Hundred Flower Palace."

Zhang Ruochen observed Fairy Extreme King before. He was a Fairy Extreme King of bees who was as powerful as Su Jing.

Zhang Ruochen walked to a chair, and sat down as if there was nobody around. He picked up a teapot, filled it with tea made of saint flower pedals and said, "Since you're in charge of Hundred Flower Palace, I don't need to waste time looking for other people. Let's talk here!"

He's someone exceptional.

Fairy Extreme King was an eighth-step saint king. Even though he had reined in his forces already, a normal half-step saint king would be so intimidated that he would quiver in front of him. Instead, Zhang Ruochen was calm and carrying himself at ease.

Fairy Extreme King was originally going to ask someone else to receive Zhang Ruochen, but now, he changed his mind as he wanted to meet this young man himself. He wanted to see whether he was really a force to be reckoned with, or just someone reckless and arrogant.

Chapter 1579 - The Fairy Extreme King

Chapter 1579: The Fairy Extreme King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“I want to buy a Saint King dragon soul and a Saint King elephant soul. Does Hundred Flower Palace have this?”

Zhang Ruochen stunned The Fairy Extreme King as soon as he spoke.

The Fairy Extreme King was quite shocked, but with his cultivation and experience, he obviously wouldn't show it. Searching his face, he asked, “Are you serious or are you joking?”

Zhang Ruochen swiped his finger across his spatial ring and took out a storage bag. He placed it on the table and pushed it to The Fairy Extreme King.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen's spatial ring, The Fairy Extreme King's eyes brightened. He knew that this was a valuable spatial treasure.

With growing anticipation, The Fairy Extreme King opened the storage bag and saw that it was filled with saint stones. He estimated it to be between one and two million stones. It was a great fortune. It wasn't something a regular half-step Saint King could afford.

Seems like those girls got lucky. This really is a rich person.

The Fairy Extreme King was happy inside, but his expression didn't waver. Instead, he grew solemn. “Saint dragon and elephant souls are easy. We can kill them easily without

causing a commotion, but it's thousands of times harder to hunt Saint King dragons and elephants. I would risk my life too.

“So, only someone above the seven step Saint King level can hunt a Saint King dragon or elephant without any risks and take their saint souls.

“But you'll need to pay quite a lot of saint stones to ask a seven step Saint King for help.”

Zhang Ruochen was prepared for this. “How many?”

“One Saint King dragon soul is ten million saint stones. A Saint King elephant soul is eight million saint stones.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned. This price was higher than he'd expected.

A weaker Saint King's entire fortune might not even be worth ten million saint stones.

But what was a Saint King?

In Kunlun's Field, a Saint King could be the leader of an ancient sect with millions of disciples and control an area that spanned millions of miles.

Of course, a Saint King dragon and elephant soul couldn't be gotten by a regular force. It was normal for the price to be high.

Seeing him hesitate, The Fairy Extreme King was worried that he would lose this big client. He hurriedly said, “Saint Kings are powerful figures in any major world, especially with dragons. They're a great force with many impressive figures. If you killed one, the chain reaction would be big. You could infuriate Supreme Saints, dragon kings, and even dragon gods. Very few saint stores would dare to give you a price.”

“Let me consider it.”

As people said, you should compare a product from different stores. Zhang Ruochen naturally wouldn't only ask for the Hundred Flower Palace's price. He decided to go look at other stores first.

Sensing his intent, The Fairy Extreme King chuckled. “There are only a handful of stores in the entire Heavenly Capital Saint Market who would dare to take this business. In the past century, the Hundred Flower Palace has been trying to develop and make more friends in the trade, so we would always give the lowest price. If you go ask another store, they’ll only give you a higher price.

“I have a list of all Heavenly Capital Saint Market stores here. I’ll give it to you for free. If you think our price is reasonable after asking, you can come back.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t put up an act. He took The Fairy Extreme King’s pamphlet, picked up his storage bag, and walked out of Hundred Flower Palace.

“Who exactly is he? He’s young, but he’s very strong and composed. He’s also very rich. Is he a low-key deity or god’s grandson?”

The Fairy Extreme King looked at the young human’s back. He’d used all sorts of tactics earlier, but he couldn’t see through Zhang Ruochen. It was clear that he had an incredible treasure that could hide his aura.

After thinking for a long while, the Fairy Extreme King still couldn’t get to a conclusion. He could only shake his head and return to his store.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t use the Fairy Extreme King’s list. Instead, he went straight to the stores by the top ten worlds, and asked for their prices.

The stronger a world was, the more credible they would be.

The top ten saint stores all had different prices.

For some, a dragon soul cost up to 20 million saint stones and an elephant soul was 15 million saint stones.

Buddha Field didn’t even sell dragon and elephant souls.

There was a store whose price was similar to the Hundred Flower Palace, but it was still two million saint stones more.

“It seems that the Fairy Extreme King’s price was indeed low.”

After comparing everything, Zhang Ruochen returned to Hundred Flower Palace.

The Fairy Extreme King seemed to have guessed that he would return. He had already prepared steaming flower tea and welcomed him to an ancient VIP room with a smile. “So, I didn’t give a bad price, right?”

Zhang Ruochen sipped the fragrant tea. The scent actually lifted his low spirits. It was like drinking honey that reenergized him.

This can actually affect a cultivator’s mood. This tea isn’t bad.

After praising the tea inwardly, Zhang Ruochen said straightforwardly, “How long will it take for me to receive the dragon and elephant soul?”

“No store in the Heavenly Capital Saint Market has Saint King dragon and elephant souls at hand,” the Fairy Extreme King said seriously. “I must send the message to Thousand Pistil Field. If they have supplies, you’ll be able to have them within half a month. If not, I’ll have to send a strong cultivator to hunt. It would take more time, but they’ll definitely send it to Hundred Flower Palace within a month.”

He was actually this confident in hunting a Saint King dragon or elephant.

Seems like the status of Hundred Flower Palace in Thousand Pistil Field is similar to Martial City of Kunlun’s Field, Zhang Ruochen thought. It controls the economic lifeline of the entire world and must be filled with strong cultivators.

“I don’t have so many saint stones with me,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Can I use other treasures to exchange for saint stones.”

“Of course.”

Chuckling, the Fairy Extreme King continued, “No one would bring so many saint stones with them for no reason. Actually, we would rather cultivators use treasures to barter. What kind of treasure would you like to exchange?”

Zhang Ruochen had a lot of treasures, but most of them were very useful to him. He couldn’t sell them.

“I’ve collected too many treasures and I’m afraid they won’t fit. I need a bigger place to exchange.” Zhang Ruochen prepared to get rid of the Blue Dragon Dynasty’s treasury and the things stolen from Zuling Field.

There were too many of them, but they weren’t very valuable, so they weren’t useful to Zhang Ruochen. They filled up the spatial ring like trash.

The Fairy Extreme King was taken aback. This room was so large but it wasn’t big enough?

How many treasures did he have?

The Fairy Extreme King could tell that Zhang Ruochen wasn’t a jokester, so he led him deeper inside Hundred Flower Palace. They arrived at a saint martial field.

He had also invited an appraiser just for this. The expert was waiting at the side of the field.

The expert seemed a bit old and had a jade headpiece. However, his hair was a pile of green leaves. Evidently, he was a plant cultivator.

His Spiritual Power was very strong. Zhang Ruochen met his eyes, but he couldn’t gauge his level.

Zhang Ruochen took out his Gold Light Ribbon and poured Holy Qi in. Then the Golden Light Ribbon flew up, hovering dozens of feet in the air.

Whoosh!

Treasures flew out of the bag and landed on the martial field. It included many rune scrolls, translucent saint jades, bottles of unknown pills, all sorts of leather, bone, and blood from beasts, and other random things.

Soon, the field that was dozens of meters wide was piled with treasures.

The Fairy Extreme King and the appraiser were frozen. How could they have expected that Zhang Ruochen had collected so many low-grade treasures? There were at least a few hundred thousand.

Did he rob a major sect's treasury?

Zhang Ruochen didn't think that it would be so magnificent after pouring everything out. Coughing dryly, he said, "This is about one-third of what I have. Calculate how many saint stones this is worth."

The Fairy Extreme King couldn't help but ask himself again, Who exactly is this human cultivator?

While the appraiser was appraising the treasures' value, the Fairy Extreme King observed the items. He wanted to find any trace to deduce Zhang Ruochen's identity.

It wasn't normal for a young and rich guy to appear out of nowhere.

Only the outer ring of the Hundred Flower Palace had pavilions closely packed to act as exchange venues.

The deeper you went, the thicker the Holy Qi. The dirt also became red soil with saintly light with many saintly flowers planted in it. It looked like a beautiful sea of flowers.

The Way of Truth image left behind by the Datura Flower Goddess was deep within the sea of flowers. The prides of the Thousand Pistil Field all gathered there to cultivate.

The people in the trading places were either strong cultivators like The Fairy Extreme King who came to the Truth Heavenly Domain temporarily, or were low-class servants.

Ji Fanxin, the Fairy Baihua, had come to the Truth Heavenly Domain to study the Way of Truth. She already crossed the sixth level of sea and reached the seventh level. She was the leader of her generation in the Thousand Pistil Field, so she was naturally the master of the Hundred Flower Palace.

Right now, the elegant Ji Fanxin was walking in the sea of flowers with a basket woven from purple cloud bamboo, picking flowers. Clouds of pure white mist enshrouded her. She looked like an otherworldly fairy.

Every step she took, specks of light would fly out of her footprints. The specks would sprout into flowers. It was very spectacular, as if she could control the lives of the flora.

A group of Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies and demonic bees flew around her, helping her collect petals while greedily sucking up the light. Their cultivations were also growing.

“It’s so great to follow the fairy. I don’t have to cultivate to improve.”

“Fairy, I’ll follow you for the rest of my life.”

...

Suddenly, a Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly that was flying up high suddenly cried out, “Come look! What is this? Lights of all different colors are shining from the martial field. It looks like many treasures are piled there.”

The butterflies and bees all swarmed up, fighting to fly higher and looking toward the martial field.

“Oh my, so many treasures are there. Did a big client come to the Hundred Flower Palace?”

“Uncle Yao is there, along with Old Qian, and that human... Isn’t that the guy that we pulled here?”

“We really did pull him here.”

“It was all me. I got him here and he has nothing to do with you all.”

The nine butterflies started fighting again, each one wanting to prove that they could take the credit.

Chapter 1580 - Six Desires

Ancient Pill

Fairy Extreme King picked up a rune out of the mountain of valuables.

It was a blue protection rune which could ward off a full-strength attack from a true saint, which was worth twenty thousand to thirty thousand saint stones.

“Based on the materials and the techniques used to make the rune, it comes from Heavenly Rune Sect from Hell Blade Field.”

Fairy Extreme King picked up another bottle that was holding pills. “Purple Glow Pill comes from Purple Emperor Empire from Purple Mansion Field, which are made for the royal members to refine saintly way rules.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't know that Fairy Extreme King loved to read all kinds of books, so he knew a lot even about the weak large fields.

Zhang Ruochen was nervous seeing Fairy Extreme King keep picking up the valuables from the ground as if he were inspecting them. He was worried that he might figure out who he was.

The sinister power was enormous, and he didn't know whether Thousand Pistil Field was involved or not.

Fortunately, Fairy Extreme King only inspected a few of the items before stopping. It seemed he'd lost interest in those valuables.

Qian Liwen, who had great mind power, used his mind tentacles to inspect them, and he immediately assessed the value of all the valuables. “I've assessed those valuables. In total, they're worth between fourteen million and sixteen million saint stones.

“Are you happy with the total price, boy?” asked Fairy Extreme King.

That stuff wasn't of much use to Zhang Ruochen anyway, and he just wanted to get rid of it. He couldn't even bother appraising their actual value.

“I trust the reputation of Hundred Flower Palace,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“Okay, then I'll buy all these valuables with sixteen million saint stones,” said Fairy Extreme King.

Those valuables couldn't be sold at a good price in Truth Heavenly Domain. However, they were precious to the lower-level monks from Thousand Pistil Field.

Zhang Ruochen then sold all the lower-class valuables, except saint weapons, and he earned fifty-two million saint stones.

He seized most of the treasures from Luosha marquises and the monks from Shatuo Heavenly Domain in Zuling Field. They were all saints after all, so the stuff they carried was all treasures.

Zhang Ruochen himself had already had four million saint stones, so he had fifty-six million saint stones in total now, making him richer than lots of saint kings.

It seems I can both earn merits and wealth in the merits battlefield, Zhang Ruochen thought.

After giving Fairy Extreme King the five hundred million saint stones as the down payment, Zhang Ruochen prepared to leave Hundred Flower Palace.

Fairy Extreme King's eyes gleamed as he saw Zhang Ruochen's bag carrying all the saint stones. He said, “There're still many top-tier valuables in Hundred Flower Palace, like upper divine medicinal pills, earth divine medicinal pills, Four Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapons, and Five Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapons. Do you want to buy some, boy?” Apparently, Fairy Extreme King wanted to earn back the saint stones he'd just paid him.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Are there any divine medicinal pills or saint medicines to improve mind power?”

“Of course there are.”

Fairy Extreme King smiled sneakily and walked Zhang Ruochen into the Pill Palace. He took him straight to the third level without even stopping on the first level.

Even the worst pills on the third level in Pill Palace was so pricey that ordinary saints would never afford them.

Zhang Ruochen felt that he’d walked into a divine spot that was made of crystal where thick pill fragrance permeated.

Some divine medicinal pills even made beast-roaring sounds in the boxes. Some of the divine medicinal pills were stored in transparent containers, yet they were giving out bolts of lightning. Some divine medicinal pills were kept in agate vessels, and there were human-shaped phantoms on the vessels.

Fairy Extreme King brought Zhang Ruochen to a place a hundred feet away from an earth divine medicinal pill.

That earth divine medicinal pill was kept in a golden lotus with thirty-six pedals, which made it look like a crystal-clear lotus seed. It gave out sparkling light, and there were six people sitting on top of the pill as if they were six thumb-sized golden arhats comprehending.

“I heard that earth saint pills have intelligence, and they can refine themselves by absorbing the saint Qi from the air.” This was the first time Zhang Ruochen saw earth saint pills, so he was pretty amazed.

Fairy Extreme King smiled. “This Six Desires Ancient Pill collected all the seven emotions and six desires of countless creatures from a human kingdom. It’s a mind power earth divine medicinal saint pill.”

“It collected seven emotions and six desires?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Fairy Extreme King didn’t expect Zhang Ruochen not to know about this.

Fairy Extreme King smiled and said, “The seven emotions and six desires are a part of your mind power. If a person releases his mind power, we can use mind power supreme saint weapon, All Four Void Vase, to collect all the seven emotions and six desires to make a divine medicinal pill to improve mind power.

“Six Desires Ancient Pill is only an earth divine medicinal pill, but Seven Emotions Ancient Pill is a heaven divine medicinal pill.

“However, Seven Emotions Ancient Pill already has tremendous attack power. Creatures who aren’t mind power saint kings will be attacked when they’re less than a thousand miles from the pill. Some of them will be turned into pill slaves, and some will have their mind power crumbled and become madmen. Only people with exceptional mind power can take and refine Seven Emotions Ancient Pill. There is, of course, no Seven Emotions Ancient Pill in Hundred Flower Palace, and we only have one Six Desires Ancient Pill.

“Be careful though, because Six Desires will also attack you, but with your mind power, you don’t need to be afraid of it.”

Fairy Extreme King waved his sleeves, and the light screen around Six Desires Ancient Pill blinked. The boundary was cracked open.

The six golden arhats sitting on the pill all opened their eyes and made a shrill noise.

Even though Fairy Extreme King had warned Zhang Ruochen and Zhang Ruochen used his mind power to defend himself, he was still almost knocked unconscious and felt that his saint soul was about to exit his body.

“Go back.”

Fairy Extreme King pressed his palm down.

The six golden arhats turned into six traces of golden light and flew into the pill, turning into six golden inscriptions on the pill.

“Incredible the Six Desires Ancient Pill,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Fairy Extreme King smiled and said, “Correct me if I’m wrong, you’re mind power has reached level fifty-four already, so if you take this Six Desires Ancient Pill, it’ll definitely reach level fifty-five within ten days, and besides, it’s also beneficial to you when you’re trying to reach level fifty-six.”

“How many saint stones do I need to pay?” Zhang Ruochen was indeed tempted.

Fairy Extreme King said, “Earth divine medicinal pills used to improve mind power are much more expensive than ordinary earth divine medicinal pills. This Six Desires Ancient Pill is worth at least twenty million saint stones in Western Buddha Field, but since you’re already our customer, I’ll sell it to you at eighteen million. How about that?”

He’d spent eighteen million saint stones on the dragon soul and the elephant soul already.

And that Six Desires Ancient Pill was worth another eighteen million saint stones.

“Seems like that Fairy Extreme King really wants to earn all the saint stones back.”

Zhang Ruochen tried to suppress his desire to buy the pill. He shook his head and said, “The Six Desires Ancient Pill is too potent. My mind power will find it very difficult to refine. Is there any mind power divine medicinal pill at a lower grade?”

Zhang Ruochen looked to another direction, and he saw ‘Mind Power Upper Divine Medicinal Pill’ on the table, so he walked toward it.

Fairy Extreme King sighed, followed him and said, “This is an upper divine medicinal pill, Joy and Anger Pill. It’s also made of humans’ seven emotions and six desires, however, there’re many elements lacking in the pill, so it’s downgraded.”

Fairy Extreme King knew that Joy and Anger Pill was more suitable for Zhang Ruochen, but it was much cheaper than Six Desires Pill, so he wanted to earn more saint stones by selling him Six Desires Pill.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be tricked by others, as he had his strong opinion. It wasn’t easy to take advantage of

him.

Zhang Ruochen carefully read the token on the table, which had the instruction of the Joy and Anger Pill.

Fairy Extreme King said, “The Joy and Anger Pill has significant side effects. The monk will become very emotionally unstable before completely refining the pill.”

“Are you saying the side effects will go away after refining the pill?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

“That’s right.”

“How many saint stones a pill?”

“One million.”

“Okay. Give me three pills.”

Zhang Ruochen took out three million saint stones and gave them to Fairy Extreme King, preparing to leave with the three Joy and Anger Pills.

“If you don’t have anywhere to stay in Heavenly Capital Saint Market, you can crash at Hundred Flower Palace as an important customer. You can even go comprehend the pictures of the Way of Truth left by Datura Flower Goddess,” said Fairy Extreme King.

Fairy Extreme King wouldn’t let Zhang Ruochen go easily. After all, he would definitely come back for the Six Desires Ancient Pill after his mind power reached level fifty-five.

However, Zhang Ruochen might purchase Six Desires Ancient Pill from other saint shops if he lived outside.

Fairy Extreme King saw that Zhang Ruochen was a bit hesitant, so he said, “You asked the price of the dragon soul and the elephant soul in other saint shops before, so someone might be onto you already. It’s not going to be safe for you to live outside. Just live in Hundred Flower Palace for now. As a distinguished guest, you’ll be treated very generously.

“And besides, if something happens to you in Hundred Flower Palace, your seniors can easily track it to us. We don’t want such trouble.”

Chapter 1581 - Spiritual Power Saint King

Chapter 1581: Spiritual Power Saint King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“If I live in Hundred Flower Palace, can I study the Way of Truth image left by the Datura Flower Goddess?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Of course.”

“Okay,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I’ll live here temporarily before receiving the dragon and elephant soul.”

The Fairy Extreme King smiled instantly. He arranged a lower Saint maid to take Zhang Ruochen to the residence built just for esteemed guests.

This residence was named Swallow Palace after the bird. From the outside, it was a medium-sized pagoda.

Opening the door, there was a spatial bubble of around 30 miles wide.

The spatial bubble contained a martial practice field, pavilions and pagodas, birds and flowers, and ancient trees and waterfalls. It was beautiful like a paradise hidden away from the world.

“Merely building this spatial bubble would cost many saint stones,” Zhang Ruochen lamented. “The Thousand Pistil World is indeed generous.”

The maid called Swallow smiled with bright eyes. “Sir, you are an esteemed guest, so you deserve this treatment. I am your personal maid. Please let me know if you need anything.

Also, if you don't wish to be disturbed or let outsiders know your secrets, you can activate the Forbid All Formation.”

After explaining some more things that Zhang Ruochen should be aware of, Swallow left.

It was Zhang Ruochen's first time realizing that saint stones were useful. He could buy whatever he wanted. Of course, he could also have a strong Saint as a maid and receive the best treatment.

Those Deities and descendants of gods would definitely have more saint stones. They could purchase upper or even earth grade divine pills to improve their cultivations. This kind of speed was unimaginable to regular cultivators.

Zhang Ruochen carved a communication rune and sent it to Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo before returning to the Hundred Flower Palace. He activated Swallow Palace's Forbid All Formation and started refining three Emotion Pills.

“One million saint stones for one pill. Even a Saint King wouldn't bear to buy one pill. I hope I can use these three Emotion Pills to become a Spiritual Power Saint.”

Zhang Ruochen already calculated that if he could become a Spiritual Power Saint, then he could stabilize the Truth Boat with only his Spiritual Power in the second level of the sea.

When he reached the guardian of the second pass, he would be able to fight with all his might. He wouldn't be restricted like last time.

Next, he entered the Time and Space Crystal. He swallowed one Emotion Pill and started refining it.

The Emotion Pill contained immense power of the seven emotions. Amongst it, “joy” and “anger” were the main ones. He could use these two emotions to temper his spirit.

Sitting cross-legged on the ground, Zhang Ruochen sometimes laughed loudly, sometimes was filled with anger, sometimes cackled eerily, sometimes was furious. His expression was manic and completely out of his control.

With the help of the Divine Fire Jingmie, Zhang Ruochen only used five days to mostly refine one Emotion Pill. When he checked inside, he discovered that his Spiritual Power had indeed improved greatly.

Before, his Spiritual Power was only in the beginning of level 54. Now, it was in the middle or even the later stages. It was an incredible improvement.

If he didn't have the Emotion Pill and only cultivated purely, he probably wouldn't reach this level in a few years.

The only thing that annoyed him was that he only refined 80% of the Emotion Pill in five days.

The other 20% of the pill's power seeped into his entire body, even melting into his saint source and soul. It would be very hard to refine them. He probably wouldn't be able to finish cleaning it out in a few months.

If he couldn't refine it completely, he wouldn't be able to control his emotions.

“You get what you pay for.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed with slight frustration. But this kind of side effect was still manageable. Next, he laughed uncontrollably for 15 minutes before he could start refining the second pill.

...

In another residence formed by a spatial bubble, the Fairy Extreme King, appraiser Qian Liwen, and other important figures of the Thousand Pistil Field were in a discussion.

“The treasures that the human sold to the Hundred Flower Palace include things from each of the Shatuo Seven Fields,” the Fairy Extreme King said. “Many also contain Evil Sha Qi from Hell World. He must've participated in the merits battle earlier, especially the Saints Merits Battle.”

A beautiful woman with a petal in her forehead grew doubtful. “He's from the Shatuo Seven Fields? If he can have so many treasures then he must have a high status. He must be an Heir

or Priest. But even so, he's only a junior from a weak world. Why did you invite us here to discuss him?"

The petal in her forehead wasn't drawn on. She'd been born with it.

A scholar clad in white smiled. "Could the Guardian King think that he doesn't have a backing, yet has so many saint stones...so you want to kill him and steal his fortune?"

The Fairy Extreme King's eyes were serious. "Shang Feng," he said coldly. "I am a Guardian King of the Hundred Flower Palace. When would I ever do such a thing? Plus, do you really think that I could kill an Heir or Priest of a weak world? Even weak worlds have gods. A genius like the Heir or Priest would be important to a god. Who can fool a god?"

The scholar named Shang Feng apologized hurriedly. "It was just a joke. Guardian King, please don't take it seriously."

The beautiful woman with a petal asked, "Then, why do you think so highly of this human? Is there anything special about him?"

"I suspect that he's Zhang Ruochen, number one on the Saints Merits Rank." The Fairy Extreme King revealed his guess.

As expected, everyone present grew solemn when he said it.

"A few days ago," he continued, "I had someone give me the scrolls and information from a dozen important Saints of the Shatuo Seven Fields. None of them match with the human. Thus, I suspect that he used a transformation spell. Coincidentally, Zhang Ruochen changed his features in Zuling Field and fooled all the Luosha marquises. He must be very skilled in transformations."

"If it really is him, then it's quite troublesome," the beautiful woman said.

"Guanghan Field has quite a lot of enemies," Shang Feng said seriously. "Zhang Ruochen must not have a simple reason for coming to the Heavenly Capital Saint Market. Should we tell the Fairy? She's wise and might be able to think of a solution."

Zhang Ruochen was only a half-step Saint King, but his identity was too special. They had to take him seriously.

Merely his status as number one on the Saints Merits Rank could make a god take him seriously.

The Fairy Extreme King shook his head. “She came here to focus on cultivating. We shouldn’t disturb her about these mundane matters. I think that if the human really is Zhang Ruochen and chose to change his features to do business with us, he probably doesn’t want to cause trouble. In that case, we’ll pretend to not know anything. Of course, we still have to be careful, so we aren’t taken by surprise if anything happens.”

“As you say,” everyone there said in unison.

Zhang Ruochen cultivated in the Time and Space Crystal for 20 days in a row. Finally, he refined 90% of the three Emotion Pills. As expected, his Spiritual Power reached level 55. He was now a Spiritual Power Saint King.

When he was trying to enter level 55, the Mysteries of Truth in him helped a lot.

At that time, the pass had been like an unbreachable metal door. But after the Mysteries of Light poured in, the metal door instantly turned into sand. He broke through with a slight push.

After this, Zhang Ruochen realized even more how extraordinary the Mysteries of Truth were.

He exited the Time and Space Crystal and opened his Heavenly Eyes to check his surroundings. The entire world had become stranger, completely different from the world he saw before.

Zhang Ruochen moved his finger. A dozen finger projections appeared, drawing quickly in the air.

In an instant, he drew a time print.

Holding that time print, Zhang Ruochen smiled. “If I send this out, I can take at least 50 years from someone.”

He believed that as his Spiritual Power strengthened, his time prints would be able to cut down 100 or even 1,000 years from

someone's life.

“I wonder if I can carve a time print on the Abyss Ancient Sword.”

If he could, then even if his sword itself couldn't hurt his enemy, the time print that flew out would be able to take decades from their lives.

If he struck a dozen times, then even a Saint King might be killed.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took out the Time and Space Secret Guide. He read the passages with careful attention to detail. Without fail, he found related records in the corner of one page.

However, the guide said that he needed to use time and space agate and water from the river of time. Only then would the time print stay on a saint weapon for a longer time.

Otherwise, it would be shattered the instant saintly power burst from the weapon.

“I don't believe that!”

He took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and placed it on the ground. Then he used a pen and started drawing on the sword. A moment later, a complicated time print appeared on the sword.

Whoosh!

He added Holy Qi into the sword and hundreds of runes emerged on it. The time print shattered, transforming into speck of lights that disappeared in the air.

“It's so unstable. Do I really need to find time and space agate and water from the river of time? I don't even know where to find time and space crystals, let alone those two things.”

Thinking with furrowed features, Zhang Ruochen mumbled to himself, “Seems like I'll have to read more and familiarize myself with Heaven World. Otherwise, I won't know many common things. I won't even know where to find the things that I need.”

Next, he lifted the Forbid All Formation and sent a message to Swallow.

A moment later, Swallow entered the spatial bubble and bowed to Zhang Ruochen. “Sir, how may I help you?”

“Does the Hundred Flower Palace have a library?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“No.”

After thinking for a while, Swallow continued, “But the Fairy Extreme King has collected many scrolls. If you wish, I can ask him. Perhaps you can borrow the books that you wish to read.”

“No need,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Lead me directly to him.”

Chapter 1582 - All Kinds of Rumors

Chapter 1582: All Kinds of Rumors

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Fairy Extreme King was manic about all kinds of books and records. He even built a cave just for his books. He was exhilarated when he learned Zhang Ruochen wanted to read books as well.

“The important secret records, techniques, and saint spells are all sealed in the formation. You can read all the other books you want.”

Fairy Extreme King said this, and then left, as he had some important affairs to attend to. He left Swallow in the cave with Zhang Ruochen.

Book Garden Cave was as large as the Swallow Palace Cave where Zhang Ruochen lived. It had a diameter of a hundred miles, and there were hundreds of palaces and pavilions around the cave with tens of thousands of books.

Zhang Ruochen didn't want others to know what books he read, so he asked Swallow to wait for him outside the cave.

“Ten Thousand Fields Book Room.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at the plaque of an ancient palace. He walked into the palace where he saw all the books and smelled the fragrance.

There were sandalwood signs that were all one foot long with the names of all the large fields on them.

“Western Buddha Field.”

“Heaven Field.”

“Soul Field.”

“Ruiya Field.”

“Guanghan Field.”

...

It didn't only have the eight thousand secular fields in Heaven World, but also have the large fields that had fallen. They all had their respective bookshelves storing records of those fields.

“No.”

Zhang Ruochen was dazed and recalled Fairy Extreme King's strange behavior in Saint Martial Field.

Obviously, Fairy Extreme King was trying to figure out where Zhang Ruochen's valuables came from, and he was experienced enough to tell.

Once he figured out where the valuables came from, it was only a matter of time before he knew who Zhang Ruochen was.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt his heart skip a beat, and there was a great sense of danger.

He had underestimated those creatures who'd lived for more than a thousand years. They'd lived for so long that their experience was far superior to his. They were able to tell where the objects were from with just one look.

“If they really wanted to harm me, they would've done it already. Thousand Pistil Field isn't part of the sinister power I reckon.”

Zhang Ruochen tried to calm himself down with his eyes twitching. He thought, As long as Thousand Pistil Field isn't a part of the sinister power, they won't try to harm me easily. I'm ranked first place on the 'Saints Merits Rank.' If something happens to me, Gods will get involved.

After calming himself down, Zhang Ruochen released his mind power, turning it into thousands of mind power tentacles,

searching for books that were related to ‘Time Long River’ and ‘Time and Space Agate.’

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen found the books he wanted on a shelf storing books about time and space.

These books weren’t treasured books to practice time and space techniques, but instead, they documented some secrets about time and space.

Zhang Ruochen’s mind power was strong enough for him to read and memorize the entire book instantly.

“Time Long River is a legendary river. If I go downstream, I can get to the future, and if I go upstream, I can go back to the past.

“I can only see Time Long River after passing the Door of Time. Nobody knows where the Door of Time is. Some people speculate it’s in Time Godly Palace because the water from Time Long River can be purchased in the saint shops set up in Time Godly Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen was thrilled to find that Time Long River actually existed, and he could go to both the past and the future through the river. It had been unimaginable for him before!

However, everything about Time Long River was only the writer’s assumptions.

It was written in the book that no monks had ever seen Time Long River themselves, so everything was just a rumor. Nobody could confirm the water sold in Time Godly Palace was actually from Time Long River.

However, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t be more excited when he read about Time and Space Agate.

It was said that Time and Space Agate came from an ancient place in the universe, called ‘Ocean Stone Star Fortress.’ It was so mysterious and hazardous that a God who mastered time died there.

It was also the fault zone of time and space, rumored to be the origin of the universe.

Aside from Time and Space Agate, Time and Space Crystal could only be found in Ocean Stone Star Fortress. Large groups of creatures went there to search for valuables every year, and any ore of time and space type was a great fortune.

“I must go to Ocean Stone Star Fortress if I have time.”

As a time monk, Zhang Ruochen couldn't help looking forward to that mysterious universe ancient land.

In the next three days, Zhang Ruochen binge-read all the books in the cave, educating himself about Heaven World and all the secular fields under it. He read thousands of books everyday.

Zhang Ruochen had meant to find some books about ‘Mystery of Truth.’ Unfortunately, he couldn't find anything.

“I'll go look for some books from a hundred thousand years ago. Perhaps I can find out why Kunlun's Field endured such a calamity, and about the sinister power Moon Goddess mentioned.”

Zhang Ruochen released his mind power tentacles again to search for relevant books, yet after half an hour, he still couldn't find anything.

There were many books about Kunlun's Field, yet none of them had information about what happened to Kunlun's Field a hundred thousand years ago.

It seemed Fairy Extreme King didn't collect the real important books, or that they were all sealed in the formation so that ordinary monks couldn't read them.

Zhang Ruochen walked to a shelf with ‘Kunlun's Field’ on, picking out a book.

The book recorded some of the supreme beings from Kunlun's Field who had died a hundred thousand years ago. All of them were famed in Heaven World.

“Saint Monk Xumi, Dragon Lord Jiawang, Demise God Island Leader, Blue Sky Hollow City, Ten Calamity Heavenly Lord...”

Those supreme beings must have all been extraordinary as they were named side by side with Saint Monk Xumi. Even if they might not have been in Saint Monk Xumi's class, they wouldn't be much weaker.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't be more curious, as they all used to be giants in Kunlun's Field, yet he'd never heard of their names and stories as someone who was born and raised in Kunlun's Field.

Was it because he wasn't well-informed enough? Or because some mysterious power concealed all the information about these giants, writing them out of the history books...

Just as Zhang Ruochen was pondering the reasons, he saw someone staring at him, standing across from him.

Although Zhang Ruochen was pondering the books, he still spared a part of his mind power. Ordinary monks wouldn't have been able to get close to him without him realizing it.

That person's mind power must have been superior to his.

Zhang Ruochen was indeed shocked, but he was all the more so when he saw that pair of eyes. It was a pair of beautiful eyes whose pupils were so transparent that they were like two godly ponds. Their eyelashes were long and curved. They looked tame from the surface, yet he could feel them being seductive.

Even Zhang Ruochen, whose mind power had reached level fifty-five, was dazed for a second.

When he fully regained his concentration, that pair of eyes had disappeared. Zhang Ruochen walked around the bookshelf, trying to chase her, yet he didn't see anyone.

"Was that a ghost? Even a Ghost King isn't as fast as I am."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. He sniffed the bookshelf, and he smelled a mesmerizing flower fragrance. The fragrance was very special, as he couldn't tell which kind of flower it was, as if it was a blend of a hundred kinds of flower fragrances.

"The person is gone, yet the fragrance is still here."

He was sure that it wasn't an illusion. Someone had indeed been reading across from him without alerting him.

Zhang Ruochen looked where the person had stood, and he took a book from the shelf, sniffed and thought, The smell on this book is thicker than that on others. This must be the book she just read.

Zhang Ruochen was then dazed by the cover of that book.

There were three words on the cover: 'Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.'

He opened the book as he was very curious.

"Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was born with Kunlun's Field. It's the creature that's reached the top in the Way of Life, and it's also the longest-living creature in history."

Zhang Ruochen held his breath while reading the first line. He immediately skimmed through the book.

At the end of the book, Zhang Ruochen read another piece of important information. "Immortal Bird refines with Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, and it created 'Nine-Circle Life-Death Code.' It can reincarnate and be truly immortal."

Zhang Ruochen closed the book immediately, and he recalled 'Blackie,' as it called itself an Immortal Bird.

"Blackie is a disciple of Divine Sky-Connecting Tree? Not likely. How could someone like Blackie create a supreme technique? Perhaps that Immortal Bird taught by Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was Blackie's ancestor."

But then, Zhang Ruochen had another question. "If 'Nine-Circle Life-Death Code' was created by the Immortal Bird, why would it show up in the royal palace of Sacred Central Empire?"

"Why does Blackie always pretend not to know anything about me giving it to Le? If it really is an Immortal Bird, there's no way it doesn't know about 'Nine-Circle Life-Death Code.'"

Zhang Ruochen felt that he couldn't believe anything Blackie said, and it definitely hid a lot from him.

After leaving Book Garden Cave, Zhang Ruochen's state of mind was in chaos. He sometimes thought about the secrets hidden in Kunlun's Field, and sometimes pondered whether he should go buy a Time and Space Agate and the water from Time Long River or not. And sometimes, that pair of hypnotizing eyes showed up in his mind.

After a long time, Zhang Ruochen cleared his mind and thought, I'll ask Blackie when it comes to Truth Heavenly Domain. I need to go purchase a Time and Space Agate and water from Time Long River to improve my power first.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't help guffawing and facing the sky, after which he left Hundred Flower Palace.

Whoosh!

One of the seven senior great beings from Hundred Flower Palace showed up in front of Hundred Flower Palace like a ghost. He looked at Zhang Ruochen leaving and mumbled, "Where's that boy going? I'll follow him to confirm his identity. Shang Ziyan set a huge price for you. Hopefully, you're Zhang Ruochen."

Chapter 1583 - Task Accomplished

Chapter 1583: Task Accomplished

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Shang Feng's cultivation was very advanced. He was a fifth step Saint King, but his Spiritual Power was at the same level as Zhang Ruochen. He seemed to have reached level 55 not too long ago.

This kind of Spiritual Power obviously couldn't hide from Zhang Ruochen's perceptions.

Zhang Ruochen walked down the street with no change in expression. Deep down, he thought, There's a Hundred Flower Palace cultivator following me. He seems to have a high cultivation too. What exactly are they thinking? Do they want to kill me outside of the palace?

Thinking of this, the feeling of crisis shot up within him. He quickly thought of a strategy.

With his current cultivation, he wasn't a match for the Hundred Flower Palace. It was extremely dangerous to continue staying in the Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

However, he couldn't bring himself to escape immediately. After all, he'd just paid five million saint stones as a deposit. Would it just go to waste?

Whatever. I'll see what the Hundred Flower Palace wants.

Zhang Ruochen had been walking down the street. Now, he used the Spatial Move and vanished.

The next moment, he appeared on a nearby rooftop. He also activated the 12 Buddhist pearls immediately to cover up his aura.

“What? He disappeared just like that? Is he that fast?”

Shang Feng ran forward to where Zhang Ruochen had disappeared from and looked around. He even used his Spiritual Power to check, but he couldn't find a bit of Zhang Ruochen's aura.

“Could it be Spatial Move? I'm even more certain that he's Zhang Ruochen now.”

Shang Feng guessed that Zhang Ruochen had sensed him, so he didn't return to Hundred Flower Palace. Instead, he started strolling through Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

This took up quite some time.

“Could I have been more careful? How can a half-step Saint King notice that I was following him?”

Shang Feng didn't sense anyone following him, so he instantly felt like he'd overestimated Zhang Ruochen. Instead of continuing to stroll, he passed through many streets and came to a quiet alley close to the Yin and Yang Palace.

Shang Feng took out a rune and swiped his finger on it.

Poof!

It immediately started burning and transformed into a streak of firelight, flying into Yin and Yang Palace.

A moment later, demonic mist rose up from the ground and consolidated into a mysterious figure. It seemed like it wasn't a physical body, but the aura that came out of it was extremely strong.

“You actually dare to come see me with your true body. Quite brave.”

A garbled voice sounded from the mist.

Shang Feng seemed very calm. He flicked his fingers and a seed flew out. It landed on the ground and sprouted immediately. Veins and a flower bloomed quickly too.

When the white flower grew, the two of them gradually disappeared from the spot. Even their auras were covered by the faint fragrance.

“What a great hallucination flower,” the man in the mist said. “This move is more powerful than many hallucination masters.”

“It’s just an elementary move. I can’t use it in official situations.”

Shang Feng’s expression turned serious and he continued, “I want to see Shang Ziyun.”

“Is Lord Ziyun someone you can meet easily?” the man in the mist said. “If you have anything important, you can tell me.”

“I’m afraid it’s not the same. I have very important information to sell to him.” Shang Feng’s expression was cold.

“Lord Ziyun isn’t at the Heavenly Capital Saint Market. If you really have something important, I’ll notify him at once. I won’t steal your credit.”

Considering this, Shang Feng said in a low voice, “Zhang Ruochen has come to the Heavenly Capital Saint Market, but only I know where he is.”

“Really?”

The figure inside the mist solidified more. Clearly, this was important to him, because he knew that Zhang Ruochen was the one that Lord Ziyun wanted to kill the most.

If Zhang Ruochen really was in the Heavenly Capital Saint Market, then this information was definitely worth ten million saint stones or even more.

“Ha.”

Shang Feng naturally wouldn’t tell him Zhang Ruochen’s exact location. He just said simply, “Go notify Shang Ziyun. If he can give me a price that satisfies me, I don’t mind telling him Zhang Ruochen’s specific location.”

With that, Shang Feng walked away with his hands behind his back.

Sizzle.

The hallucination saint flower on the ground started burning. The fire went from the petals to the root. A speck of light flew out of the ashes and landed in Shang Feng's hands.

It was the flower's seed.

No one knew if the seed had actually bloomed earlier or if it was a hallucination from the seed.

"You better be careful too. If the Fairy Extreme King or Ji Fanxin senses anything wrong or they learn that you're from the Black Demon Field, you won't live to see tomorrow."

Hearing this, Shang Feng's figure paused. With a hard expression, he scoffed. "None of your business."

Shang Feng and the demonic mist disappeared from the alley.

After a few minutes passed, the space in the alley trembled. Zhang Ruochen appeared out of thin air. He looked up at the Yin and Yang Palace in the distance. "A strong figure from the Hundred Flower Palace is actually from the Black Demon Field. Interesting, interesting... So, does this mean that the Black Demon Field is part of the undercover group?"

From Zhang Ruochen's recent misfortunes, he was mostly sure that Wang Xu's Ruiya Field, King Hun's Soul Field, and this Black Demon Field that was probably related to Shang Ziyan were the undercover force that the Moon Goddess had mentioned.

These three worlds were all in the top 1,000 strongest worlds. Only they were strong enough to make Zhang Ruochen feel pressure.

The worlds that were still hidden went without saying too.

When all these undercover forces were exposed, even a Supreme Saint might feel suffocated from the pressure.

No wonder the Moon Goddess didn't tell Zhang Ruochen just how large the undercover force was. If he couldn't withstand that pressure, he might shrink back, feel despair, have a mental breakdown, or give up on himself.

Now, it was like Zhang Ruochen was rowing a small boat on the river. He could only go forward and couldn't retreat. But chains covered the river, blocking the path. If he continued forward, he would definitely capsize and die.

Right now, he could only break through the chains with determination. Otherwise, he would die from despair.

Next, he changed his features again. He visited the store of the Time Godly Palace and bought a time and space agate with five million saint stones. Then he spent another one million to buy a bottle of water from the time river.

This process was very smooth.

The Saint King managing the store asked Zhang Ruochen if he was a time cultivator and planned on studying in the Time Godly Palace.

Zhang Ruochen just answered, "How can I learn the Way of Time? These things are for my master."

Hearing this, the manager lost interest in Zhang Ruochen and stopped asking.

Time cultivators were indeed rare, but the major worlds all seemed to have some with the inheritance of time. A few time cultivators could be born, so some of the worlds even had ancient sects that cultivated the Way of Time.

It wasn't strange for a time cultivator to appear in the Truth Heavenly Domain.

It would only cause a commotion if a time manipulator appeared.

Zhang Ruochen considered all the pros and cons. In the end, he returned to live in the Hundred Flower Palace.

After entering the Swallow Palace, he immediately activated the Forbid All Formation. Then he took out the egg-sized time and space agate, and a small jade bottle.

"This is really expensive. Such a small piece of time and space agate is actually worth five million saint stones. I can buy an earth class pill with that."

The agate that Zhang Ruochen had was a lower grade, but if he wore it, he could cut the speed of time in half within 30 feet.

He could also form a 30-foot range of chaotic space.

This meant that if he wore this agate, he could have two times the amount of cultivation time. He could also form a chaotic defensive space to automatically undo sneak attacks.

Countless people yearned for such a treasure. It was worth the five million saint stones.

However, Zhang Ruochen was going to pulverize this valuable treasure. The pain went without saying.

After crushing the agate completely, he poured the powder into the bottle of time river water. He shook it a dozen times to mix the two. Then Zhang Ruochen took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and a rune pen.

“This tiny bottle of liquid is worth six million saint stones. It better work, or else it’ll be a total waste!”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath to maintain his best state. Then he picked up his pen, dipped it in the liquid, and started drawing a time print on the sword.

He was scared of wasting, so he was extremely careful and actually finished the time print in one go.

“Let’s try.”

Zhang Ruochen held the Abyss Ancient Sword and poured Holy Qi in. Gradually, runes emerged on the sword. One thousand, two thousand, three thousand...

When 10,000 runes emerged on the sword and it unleashed the complete power, the time print carved on it still didn’t disappear.

“Did I succeed?”

It might have been due to the Emotion Pill’s side effect, but Zhang Ruochen couldn’t push down his joy and let out a loud whoop.

He waved his sword and a time print flew out along the sword Qi, going toward a spiritual crane in the air.

Sword Qi flew above the crane and only the time print hit it.

The crane cried out and it was weakened, falling from the sky.

Zhang Ruochen extended a hand, sending out thick Holy Qi to slow down the crane's falling. In the end, it floated softly to the ground.

Next, Zhang Ruochen split some Spiritual Power to check the crane's condition.

"Its vitality was indeed reduced as if it suffered from a great illness. It lost 60 years of its lifespan." With Zhang Ruochen's current Spiritual Power, he could accurately calculate the lifespan of those with lower cultivation than him.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the time print on his sword. It didn't disappear and only dimmed a little. He could probably use it more than once.

"With the help of the time print, I have a new way to hurt people without a trace."

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel cocky due to this, because it wasn't easy to combine the Sword Way with the power of the time print. He had to keep testing it in battle to use it naturally.

"I must take out Shang Feng. I can't let him tell Shang Ziyang that I'm in the Hundred Flower Palace. Otherwise, with Shang Ziyang's methods, I will suffer from a fatal challenge before I can get the dragon and elephant soul."

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had already learned about the white-robed scholar from Swallow. He knew that he was a fifth step Saint King.

Murderous light flashed past Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He picked up the bottle and placed it in his spatial ring. There was still three-fourths of liquid left.

After coming up with the best plan, Zhang Ruochen finally left Swallow Palace.

Chapter 1584 - Divine Ancient Pluto Reflection Lotus

Chapter 1584: Divine Ancient Pluto Reflection Lotus

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Fairy Extreme King had his own refining cave in Hundred Flower Palace, but he spent most of the time at the penthouse in Pill Palace to check everyday accounts. He also needed to receive the major clients himself to show respect.

All the accounts books in the past five days were put on a bronze desk, showing the booming business Hundred Flower Palace had.

Since the girls came to Hundred Flower Palace, we have twice as many clients as before. Time to ask Thousand Pistil Field to send some more help here, otherwise, I won't even have time to refine.

Fairy Extreme King thought, sat beside the desk, and checked the accounts books. Suddenly, he looked around, alerted and fierce.

He noticed that the inkstone on the desk had been moved by someone else before.

It was a tiny trace, yet it couldn't be hidden from Fairy Extreme King.

Someone came here before.

This room was a confidential place of Hundred Flower Palace, with an eighth-grade formation protecting it. Who could

trespass without people noticing him?

Fairy Extreme King moved away the inkstone after making sure that there were no other creatures around in the room. He saw a note under the inkstone.

He opened the note. “Shangfeng King is a monk from Black Demon Field.”

Fairy Extreme King was shocked and angry after reading the note. He was also confused and said, “Who sent the note? Is it reliable?”

All seven senior great beings in Hundred Flower Pavilion were from Thousand Pistil Field, but they came from seven different powers, representing their own interests.

Shangfeng King came from Shang Butterfly Ancient Clan.

There was only a medium-sized astral domain between Black Demon Field and Thousand Pistil Field, making them almost adjacent to each other.

There were lots of planets with creatures living on them in the astral domain, Void World Lands, and ore stars.

There were many conflicting interests between the two fields, and killing emerged because the grudges against each other got worse, mutually reinforcing one another.

Thousand Pistil Field was much more powerful than Black Demon Field, so Black Demon Field sent some spies to Thousand Pistil Field for revenge.

Shangfeng King was one of the best spies, who managed to become a fifth-step saint king and become a senior in Hundred Flower Pavilion.

“If Shang Feng really is a spy from Black Demon Field, we need to get rid of him now so that he won’t ascend to a more important position, causing more trouble for Thousand Pistil Field.”

Fairy Extreme King stopped thinking about where the note came from. He walked out of the room and sent a message back to Thousand Pistil Field to have people investigate Shang Feng.

If Shang Feng really was a spy from Black Demon Field, he must've left some traces.

...

Zhang Ruochen stood among the flowers with his arms crossed in front of his chest. He looked to the Pill Palace and what Fairy Extreme King was doing, smiling.

It was best to have Fairy Extreme King deal with Shang Feng.

“Hahaha, it is you indeed. Can you still remember me? It was I who brought you to Hundred Flower Palace.” A Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly flew out of the saint flowers, showing up in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen had detected Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly's forces, so he wasn't surprised at all. He smiled. “Of course, I do.”

“I'm Ling Ling, what your name? I heard that you're a major client with lots of saint stones. You must have an incredible background.”

Before Zhang Ruochen knew how to answer that question, the other Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies all flew out and introduced themselves.

“I'm Xiu Xiu.”

“I'm Feng Feng.”

“I'm Jing Jing.”

...

All the Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies except the princess flew out and gathered around Zhang Ruochen.

The Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly named Xiu Xiu blinked her eyes and said, “Why're you here by yourself?”

All the other Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies also stared at Zhang Ruochen as if there was a flower on his face.

Zhang Ruochen answered calmly, “I was meant to comprehend the pictures of the Way of Truth left by Datura

Flower Goddess, but there're so many saint flowers and formations around, so I lost my way.”

“Haha.”

All the Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies smiled and tried to bring Zhang Ruochen there. None of them bothered to ask Zhang Ruochen's name.

Zhang Ruochen had read about Datura Flower Goddess in the Book Garden Cave before, and he knew she was the strongest God from Thousand Pistil Field. Zhang Ruochen certainly wanted to go comprehend the pictures left by such an amazing God.

The eight Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies went through one formation after another.

The longer Zhang Ruochen walked, the more Zhang Ruochen was thrilled by how many saint flowers there were. Once they aged ten thousand years, each of them would be worth a ten-thousand-year-old saint medicine.

There were more than a hundred thousand saint flowers around.

Where did they get so many seeds of saint flowers?

Who nurtured all of them so well that every one of them was blossoming? It was very expensive to get a seed of saint flower, and only less than ten percent of them could sprout. It was very tricky to cultivate them.

Zhang Ruochen then asked the eight Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies from whom he got the answer.

“More than eighty percent of them were planted by Sister Fairy.”

“Sister Fairy follows the Way of Life, so she can make all the flowers blossom with just one thought. As long as she's here, all the saint flowers can grow ten times faster than normal.”

This wasn't the first time Zhang Ruochen heard of Ji Fanxin, Hundred Flower Fairy. He couldn't help wondering, but those Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies told him everything before he even asked.

“Sister Fairy is a Divine Ancient Pluto Reflection Lotus born in the astral sky in the universe. She flowed in the universe without any attachments for tens of millions of years before being discovered by Datura Flower Goddess who admitted her as a disciple and taught her the techniques. She’s the leader of our generation in Thousand Pistil Field.”

Creatures of the plant type didn’t all have eternal lives. Many of them could only live for one year. Only those special ones could live for longer.

A Reflection Lotus that was born ages ago, flowing in the universe and coming to have intelligence, that didn’t practice any techniques but comprehended the ways from the heaven and earth all by itself...

It managed to survive for tens of millions of years, showing how special it was. It was definitely one of the unique flowers in the universe.

The eight Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies brought Zhang Ruochen to the depths of the flowers, in front of a white stone cliff.

There was a jade square that was a thousand square feet under the cliff, and there were different areas on the square where more than a hundred creatures sat. Most of them were absolute saints and half-step saint kings.

This was one of the dojos that belonged to Thousand Pistil Field, which had other dojos in Truth Heavenly Domain.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t surprised, as he’d read in the books that large fields ranked from one hundredth to one thousandth could obtain an opportunity to refine in Truth Godly Palace every day, and after one year, it would have more than three hundred.

And besides, a strong field like Thousand Pistil Field had other methods to get extra opportunities.

Which was why it was normal for Thousand Pistil Field to have hundreds of talents refining in Truth Godly Domain.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen sensed a couple of people glaring at him from the left side of the square.

A half-step saint king wearing Flying Roc Saint Armor said, “Another pursuer here, but his cultivation is subpar. Can’t believe he wants to pursue her.”

A tall and built man was sitting beside, also wearing Flying Rock Saint Armor, moved his fingers and made cracking sounds. He said, “Your highness, I’ll throw that reckless human boy out of Hundred Flower Palace.”

The Golden Roc Prince opened his golden eyes, looked at Zhang Ruochen, and felt strange. He had never seen him before, so he reckoned Zhang Ruochen wasn’t a descendant of a God.

“Go. Break his legs and throw him out.” The Golden Roc Prince looked disdainful.

Two half-step saint kings, one tall and one small, stood up and walked to Zhang Ruochen.

Eternity Deity was sitting beside Golden Roc Prince. He was dashing, dressed perfectly with tidy hair. He chuckled, “The monks who can come here to comprehend the pictures of Way of Truth must be the special guests of Hundred Flower Palace. He at least has trades worth ten million saint stones with Hundred Flower Palace. That human boy is definitely someone exceptional.”

Golden Roc Prince looked overbearing. He sneered, “Ten million saint stones are nothing. Anyone who’s lucky can get that much fortune. Besides, I’ve seen the pictures of the talents on the ‘Saints Merits Rank.’ That human kid isn’t one of them.”

1

“He’s just a half-step saint king who can’t even make it onto the ‘Saints Merits Rank.’ What background can he have?”

“Not everyone has the right to pursue Hundred Flower Fairy. That kind of mediocre man needs getting rid of. We can’t let him bother the fairy like a bug.”

Aside from Eternity Deity and Golden Roc Prince, there were a couple of other royal members. They were either

descendants of Gods, or the princes and princesses from the ancient civilization.

The large fields which the people were from set up dojos and saint shops in Heavenly Saint Market, yet they spent lots of saint stones buying stuff in Hundred Flower Palace to become its special guests so that they could live in Hundred Flower Palace temporarily.

Their true purpose was not to comprehend the pictures of the Way of Truth left by Datura Flower Goddess, but to pursue Ji Fanxin, Hundred Flower Fairy.

Zhang Ruochen's coming here made them feel that there was another monk trying to approach and pursue Ji Fanxin, so they were all hostile toward him.

Chapter 1585 - Thirty-Six Divisions

Chapter 1585: Thirty-Six Divisions

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The eight Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies brought Zhang Ruochen to the white cliff. Flapping their wings, they flew back into the flower sea. They seemed not to want to study the Way of Truth image at all.

“These butterflies are so interesting,” Zhang Ruochen said, chuckling. “They’re so powerful, but they act like little girls.”

But the next moment, two bursts of murderous Qi traveled over. Zhang Ruochen wiped his smile away and looked over.

Two figures in saintly roc armor appeared before him, one tall and one short.

The tall one was 2.3 meters tall. The short one was only 1.5 meters and looked like a dwarf.

They were in human form, but Zhang Ruochen sensed strong beastly auras from them—cruel, aggressive, and bloody. Even though they’d become Saints, the aura didn’t disappear. Instead, it grew heavier.

The taller creature was called Li Hai. Without saying anything, he clenched his hands into claws and his nails turned into golden scythes. He clawed at Zhang Ruochen’s neck.

It was a simple claw, but it carried a strong vortex-like force that pressed outward.

Zhang Ruochen felt air currents from all over, pressing down on him. The density of the air grew and almost turned solid.

So strong. Any other half-step Saint King would be pressed to the ground from this force. Even some stronger half-step Saint Kings would probably be immobilized and even if they didn't die from this creature's claw, they would be disabled.

A strong feeling of fury burst out, burning in Zhang Ruochen like fire.

This guy was lashing out for no reason as soon as he got here. What was this?

All 144 apertures on Zhang Ruochen's body opened up and Holy Qi poured out, breaking apart the air current restriction. He slapped toward Li Hai. Palm force flooded out, along with hot Yang Qi.

"He actually broke free from the air current shackles?"

Li Hai's eyes flashed. He increased the power of his claw and attacked with all his might.

Thud!

The claw and palm crashed and chaotic power flooded out.

There were crackling sounds. The bones of Li Hai's fingers shattered and he flew out as if he was made out of grass.

Affected by the Emotion Pill, Zhang Ruochen's fury exploded intensely. He chased forward, grabbed one of Li Hai's legs, and dragged him back. He slammed Li Hai onto the ground.

With a thud, the defensive formation on the ground trembled.

"Why did you attack me?"

"Why?"

"Who told you to do it?"

"What do you want? What do you want?"

...

With each question, Zhang Ruochen would stomp down, cracking all of Li Hai's bones. He couldn't stay unharmed even with the protection of the roc armor.

Because every time he wanted to activate the armor's defensive power, Zhang Ruochen's foot would land again. All

his saintly power would scatter, unable to gather.

The short and thin creature was called Li Shan. He didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to be this powerful. His little brother was so strong, but he was sprawled on the ground and couldn't climb up.

“Stop!” Li Shan roared.

He activated the roc armor and metallic wings unfurled on his back. With extreme speed, he flew to Zhang Ruochen in the blink of an eye.

Li Shan was much more careful. He immediately activated the armor's defensive force. A golden roc's projection flew out of the armor, protecting him in the shadow.

At the same time, he used a Ten-thousand Saint Weapon and struck Zhang Ruochen's waist like he was sweeping across an army.

This sword's force was much stronger than Li Hai's earlier claw.

Actually, Li Shan and Li Hai were at the same level. Li Hai didn't use the Rules of Truth either. This sword was so strong because he was supported by the roc armor.

“And why are you attacking me?”

Zhang Ruochen extended his right arm and grabbed Li Shan's Ten-thousand Saint Weapon. He pulled forward and easily resolved the sword's power.

“How is this possible?”

Li Shan had a face of disbelief. Before he could retreat, his vision turned black. He was slapped to the ground and his sword was taken away too.

The roc projection that protected him was already shattered.

Holding the saint sword, Zhang Ruochen started hacking down.

“Why did you attack me?”

“What do you have against me?”

...

There were continuous thuds. The saint roc armor sparked and sword Qi seeped inside, leaving gashes of varying depths on Li Shan.

Zhang Ruochen stepped on Li Hai's chest, so he couldn't climb up and fight back. Because of the roc armor, he didn't die, but the frustration in him made him wish he were dead.

More than half of the cultivators on the square were alarmed and looked over in shock.

"Where did this menacing figure come from? He actually flattened Li Hai and Li Shan."

"So aggressive. Is he psychotic?"

"Li Hai and Li Shan took care of many cultivators who wanted to pursue the Baihua Fairy. They're very violent, but I didn't think that they would meet an even more violent fellow. It really is karma."

The Deities were all stunned. Clearly, even they could misjudge. The human was nobody simple.

The Gold Roc Prince was clear about how strong Li Hai and Li Shan were. They had Sub-Complete Body Constitution and could suppress average first step Saint Kings. Otherwise, they wouldn't qualify to stay beside him.

Li Hai getting caught by Zhang Ruochen could be because he was too careful.

But Li Shan had been very careful. Not only did he use a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon, he also used the roc armor's power, but he was still taken down easily by the human.

This kind of figure was either in the top ranks of the Saints Merits Rank or a Saint King.

The Gold Roc Prince would rather believe that the man was the latter—he was a Saint King who had some Spiritual Power treasure and hid his true cultivation to trick others.

"This human is so arrogant. Doesn't he know whose underlings he's beating up?"

Seeing Zhang Ruochen torture Li Hai and Li Shan, the Gold Roc Prince's expression was very cold. But with his status, he wouldn't go punish a nameless figure in his true form. He didn't want to get laughed at by the others.

He yanked out a piece of hair and blew on it. Many Rules of Saintly Way and saintly power melted into the hair along with his breath.

The hair flew up and shone brilliantly, turning into a division that looked identical to him.

Seeing this, one of the Thousand Pistil Field cultivators exclaimed, "Mid-class saint spell, Thirty-Six Division!"

Whoosh!

The Gold Roc Prince's division shook and blurred. The next time it appeared, it was close to Zhang Ruochen.

The light from the division seemed able to illuminate the world. Zhang Ruochen could barely keep his eyes open. It was only a figure, but to Zhang Ruochen, it was like a golden roc that was hundreds of miles long was curled up there.

The aura that emanated from it was countless times stronger than Li Hai and Li Shan. It wasn't on the same level.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to control his emotions, but his mind was still clear.

If you succeeded in cultivating the mid-class spell "Thirty-Six Divisions," you could form a division with just a strand of hair. The division's power was around 10% of the original power.

You could send out the 36 divisions at once to accomplish many things.

Apparently, there was also the Seventy-Two Divisions, which was even more powerful. It was an upper spell. Each division would have 30% of the original power. If the 72 divisions appeared at the same time, they could help the true form kill a stronger cultivator.

The Gold Roc Prince had only tugged out one strand of hair and his division was already so strong. One could imagine that

his true form was ten times more terrifying.

But Zhang Ruochen wasn't afraid. Instead, he released the Unmovable Emperor Ming Saintly Look. He glared back, standing at a stalemate with the Gold Roc Prince.

“Did you tell them to attack me?”

Zhang Ruochen lifted Li Hai and Li Shan, one in each hand, and tossed them toward the Gold Roc Prince. “Control your dogs. If they keep biting people, I'll help you disable them.”

When the other cultivators heard the human speak to the Gold Roc Prince like this, they were all terrified.

No cultivator ever dared to disrespect the Gold Roc Prince.

“Quite brave, but I wonder if his abilities match his courage.” Deity Changsheng looked interested.

Seeing the other Deities look at him like he was a joke, the Gold Roc Prince's division had an icy expression. Murderous Qi surged out. “Kneel down immediately and kowtow to me three times. Then you might be able to get rid of my anger. Otherwise, if my anger erupts, I'll make you regret coming to this world.”

“This is Thousand Pistil Field's dojo,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Can you threaten me?”

“Sometimes, dying is easier. Living is more painful.”

When he said this, the full power of the Gold Roc Prince's division poured out. The overwhelming saintly power wrapped around Zhang Ruochen.

Everything before Zhang Ruochen disappeared. Only rolling gold waves remained, along with the huge gold roc that spiraled above him. Following a deafening cry, the gold roc extended a claw and angry saintly power pressed down.

Instantly, it was like the sky had collapsed.

Thousands of mountains seemed to press down on Zhang Ruochen, almost forcing him into the abyss of death.

Chapter 1586 - Way of Truth Surged

“Eight Poles of Heaven and Earth, Only Me. Break!”

Zhang Ruochen wielded his finger as if it was a sword.

Zhang Ruochen had read ‘Empress Chi Yao’s Sword Eight Notes’ and comprehended the second level of sword intent. He performed that sword intent.

Meanwhile, Divine Fire Jingmie formed sword light, flying out of his fingertip and piercing through the claw of that golden Roc. Suddenly, the golden waves dispersed in the heaven and earth.

The dividing self of Golden Roc Prince was still standing on the square under the white cliff across from Zhang Ruochen, but he looked surprised. “You’ve tamed Divine Fire Jingmie. Who are you?”

What was Divine Fire Jingmie?

It was a flame that could only be born inside a God’s body, and he would only bestow it upon the outstanding descendants.

Gods all had a long life, so they had many descendants. Only the talented ones could get the flames of Divine Fire Jingmie. Even if they obtained them, not every monk was able to tame them. Only the supreme talents could get them.

Golden Roc Prince saw Zhang Ruochen use Divine Fire Jingmie, so he suspected he was a new deity.

There were indeed monks who tamed Divine Fire Jingmie, but they were so rare that it was negligible.

If that human man was indeed a deity valued by a God, Golden Roc Prince needed to rethink his decision.

Zhang Ruochen gradually calmed himself down. He tried to stay low-key, yet he didn’t expect his emotions to be out of

control, or that he'd made himself an enemy of an incredible being.

The side effects of Joy and Anger Pill were screwing him over.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't scared of Golden Roc Prince, as it wouldn't be a big deal to offend him. After all, he also had his trump card as well, so even the true body of Golden Roc Prince wouldn't be able to hurt him. However, he didn't want to expose himself, after which he would have to give up the dragon soul and the elephant soul and flee from Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

Zhang Ruochen had kind of figured out the power of Golden Roc Prince after that exchange of moves, and he was sure that he could deal with the prince.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Why should I tell you? Who do you think you are?"

Golden Roc Prince hated the way Zhang Ruochen reacted. He got angry again and decided to teach him a lesson even if Zhang Ruochen was the descendant of a God.

"Stop! What are you doing? This is a dojo of Thousand Pistil Field. If anyone dares make another attack, he'll be escorted out and never come back to Hundred Flower Palace."

A Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly flew out and separated Zhang Ruochen and Golden Roc Prince's dividing self.

Zhang Ruochen recognized her; it was Demonic Butterfly Princess. He said calmly, "Your highness, I'm also a guest of Hundred Flower Palace, but I was attacked by two madmen. Is this how Hundred Flower Palace treats its guests?"

Demonic Butterfly Princess knew how overbearing Golden Roc Prince was, and she knew what Li Hai and Li Shan had done. She'd been irritated by them for a long time, so she was pleased to see them beaten. She only suppressed that because she didn't want to offend Golden Roc Prince.

Demonic Butterfly Princess said, "They're of Golden Wing Roc Clan from Ocean Cloud Field, not from Thousand Pistil Field."

“I see.”

Zhang Ruochen pretended to be surprised and said, “You guys won’t allow the creatures from other large fields to offend your honored guest, will you?”

“Of course not.”

Demonic Butterfly Princess almost burst out into laughter as she found this the perfect opportunity to expel Li Hai and Li Shan. She then went to question Golden Roc Prince, and asked two monks from Thousand Pistil Field to throw Li Shan and Li Hai out.

Golden Roc Prince looked very serious. He wanted to stop it, but looking at the ethereal woman standing on the edge of the square who was staring at him. He then suppressed his anger and tried to look like a gentleman.

“These two were being reckless and caused trouble to Hundred Flower Palace. They should be expelled from Hundred Flower Palace.”

After saying that to Demonic Butterfly Princess, Golden Roc Prince immediately walked to that ethereal woman and tried to apologize to her. That woman didn’t even want to listen to him. She walked into the square, found a spot, and sat down, starting to comprehend the pictures on the cliff.

Golden Roc Prince knew that the fairy was very disappointed in him, so he got more furious at Zhang Ruochen. He glared at Zhang Ruochen before leaving the square.

Li Hai and Li Shan were dragged out of the palace, and that prince couldn’t just leave them like that, otherwise he would be laughed at by others.

Is she the Hundred Flower Fairy, Ji Fanxin?

Zhang Ruochen stared at that woman in white who was sitting in the light rain, but all he saw was a beautiful shadow.

The light rain formed a phantom of a Divine Reflection Lotus like an aesthetic fairy lamp.

The woman in white was sitting at the center of the phantom of Divine Reflection Lotus. Her hair waved in the air, and she

looked peaceful, regal, and divine. She was someone who could only be appreciated from afar instead of being approached.

“Even someone like Golden Roc Prince behaves himself in front of her. That Fairy Ji is indeed incredible.”

Zhang Ruochen couldn't feel any energy ripples coming from Ji Fanxin, but his instincts told him that she was way more powerful than Golden Roc Prince, and he couldn't rival her even if he used all his trump cards.

Zhang Ruochen then came to an empty spot, sat down, and started to comprehend the pictures of the Way of Truth left by Datura Flower Goddess.

Zhang Ruochen lit up a Honghua Vine before comprehending. He then released saint Qi to form a dome to prevent the scent of the Honghua Vine from getting out.

The monks around them were all tempted by the Honghua Vine.

It was a valuable that could help monks comprehend the ways. They were certainly rich enough to buy a Honghua Vine, but there wasn't a market for it.

“Divine Fire Jingmie and a Honghua Vine. That human man might be a force to be reckoned with.” All the descendants of Gods thought so, so none of them tried to expel Zhang Ruochen again.

Also, they didn't want to look rude in front of Ji Fanxin.

The pictures of the Way of Truth left by Datura Flower Goddess was a flower ocean. Zhang Ruochen saw that the flower ocean looked like that planted by Ji Fanxin.

If so, Ji Fanxin's attainment in the Way of Truth must be extraordinary.

Zhang Ruochen stopped thinking about this irrelevant stuff and devoted his attention to comprehension.

There were more than one hundred thousand saint flowers in the pictures, and those saint flowers looked like light spots,

which reminded Zhang Ruochen of the Visualization Pictures in Truth Godly Palace.

He tried to treat the two saint flowers as two light spots.

“It indeed looks like the second Visualization Picture.” Zhang Ruochen was pleased. If he could comprehend the second picture here, he didn’t need to go refine in Truth Godly Palace.

Perhaps it was because he’d gained one ten-thousandth of the Mysteries of Truth, but Zhang Ruochen could feel the rules flowing around him after immersing himself in the picture.

After three hours, Zhang Ruochen found a way to comprehend the second Visualization Picture. The most important thing wasn’t the two spots, but the ripples coming out of them when they moved.

Those ripples were a Rule of Truth.

He was misled by the first Visualization Picture, so he hadn’t thought of that until now.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly burst into laughter. “I see, I see...” Because of the saint Qi dome, none of the people outside heard him.

However, Zhang Ruochen was sitting in the light dome, sometimes laughing but sometimes yelling in anger, which drew lots of monks’ attention, including the nine Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterflies.

They stopped near Zhang Ruochen, standing in a line and staring at Zhang Ruochen. They cheered when they saw him laugh.

“He laughed again! He laughed harder this time!”

“I thought he was going to yell in anger this time.”

“Does he have a split personality? His emotions are so unstable. It’s kind of surreal.”

“Perhaps he’s gone mad? Do you want to give him a warning so that he won’t get worse?”

“I’m not going to do it. Look at the way he laughs. What if he hits me?”

...

Some monks only found Zhang Ruochen to be mentally ill.

The descendants of Gods all frowned, as none of them wanted to get involved with that seemingly mad man.

Zhang Ruochen spent most of the month comprehending the pictures of the Way of Truth, and it was more efficient than he thought.

He was able to mobilize ninety-eight Rules of Truth, making his saint spell three times stronger.

Zhang Ruochen attributed it to that one one-thousandth of the Mysteries of Truth. After all, he comprehended faster than in Truth Godly Palace.

The benefits of the Mysteries of Truth were so huge that Zhang Ruochen wanted to gain more.

“It should be easy for me to cross the second level of the ocean domain.”

Fairy Extreme King sent Swallow to Zhang Ruochen for good news before he wanted to go try Ocean of Truth again.

“Have the dragon soul and elephant soul at the saint king level arrived in Hundred Flower Palace?”

Zhang Ruochen immediately followed Swallow to Fairy Extreme King.

He was practicing palm techniques during the time also, and as long as he could merge the dragon soul and the elephant soul into his arms, he would reach the initial completion of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

The initial completed eleventh palm could rival an ordinary mid-class saint spell.

Chapter 1587 - Minor Completion

Chapter 1587: Minor Completion

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

It was indeed good news. The Thousand Pistil Field specially sent a fifth step Saint King with a dragon and elephant soul to Hundred Flower Palace.

Apparently, that dragon soul had been killed by a ninth step Saint King of the Thousand Pistil Field in a world with no god yet.

This was also why it was a bit late.

There were more than 8,000 worlds with gods in the universe. There were even more worlds that didn't have gods, so they couldn't be ruled by Heaven Field.

A world like that would be powerless against Hell World and would definitely be destroyed.

If the subordinates of Heaven Field discovered them, they would also be robbed and enslaved. They may also become battlefields. Only worlds with great potential, that had countless treasures, or who submitted to a stronger world could be saved.

The ninth step Saint King went to a world called Void Dragon Field.

More than half of this great world were dragons. There were thousands of dragon races.

Void Dragon Field didn't have a dragon god, so they were far weaker than the powerful Heaven Dragon Field of Heaven

Field.

However, Void Dragon Field had many Supreme Saint dragon kings and were subordinate to Heaven Dragon Field. Thus, going there to kill a dragon Saint King was still very risky.

After taking the dragon and elephant soul, Zhang Ruochen gave the remaining 13 million saint stones to the Fairy Extreme King.

Zhang Ruochen had other plans, so he didn't leave the Heavenly Capital Saint Market. Instead, he returned to the Swallow Palace residence.

“A first step Saint King dragon soul and elephant soul are both very low grade. The Fairy Extreme King indeed isn't willing to give anything extra.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He didn't really care.

When Zhang Ruochen first started refining the Saint dragon and elephant souls, they didn't have high grades either, but they had reached the Absolute Saint Realm now.

The Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm was very strange. The souls that he refined into his arms could actually absorb his Holy Qi and keep strengthening until they reached the peak of the Saint Realm.

However, they could only grow to the Absolute Saint Realm. No matter what Zhang Ruochen tried, he couldn't make them reach the Saint King Realm. Otherwise, he wouldn't have spent so much money on buying Saint King souls.

Even though the souls were only first step Saint Kings now, Zhang Ruochen believed that they would reach the ninth step in the future.

Without thinking further, he took out the purple gourd that held the two souls. He prepared to refine both together.

Roar!

Argh!

The elephant soul was a Motian Elephant King. The dragon soul was a Winged Silver Dragon King.

Freed from the restrictions of the purple gourd, they immediately spiraled up into the sky, transforming into two cruel shadows. The Holy Qi in the entire residence shook and powerful saintly might spread out.

“A mere half-step Saint King wants to refine me?”

“Die!”

The elephant and dragon soul rushed down, attacking Zhang Ruochen.

“Your spirits haven’t been destroyed yet and still carry strong saintly power? Good, very good. Refining you two into my arms will be very beneficial for me.”

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged on the ground and circulated his Holy Qi.

A lot of Divine Fire Jingmie also flowed through his meridians, turning them into rivers of fire.

Just as the dragon and elephant souls were about to hit Zhang Ruochen’s head, he pressed forward, sending out two flaming handprints. He repressed the two souls and started refining them with Divine Fire Jingmie.

Gradually, the souls’ spirits were restricted and they let out low wails.

After refining them into his arms, the two souls grew abnormally violent. They directly swallowed the Absolute Saint dragon and elephant souls. Then their own powers increased greatly and crashed around Zhang Ruochen’s arms, wanting to break free.

Zhang Ruochen’s physical body was now in the Saint King Realm. The bone, skin, muscle, and tendons of his arms were as sturdy as cages. Naturally, they couldn’t break free.

As time passed, the dragon and elephant souls were forced to calm down. They gradually melded with his meridians, Saintly Meridians, blood, and bones until they were indistinguishable.

“Mission accomplished.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his two arms and looked at the saintly light flowing through his skin. He could vaguely see dragon scales and elephant patterns emerging. It was very strange.

He squeezed his left fingers softly. A dragon head poked out of his skin instantly. It reached out dragon claws, releasing shocking might.

Then he opened his right hand. The projection of an elephant king appeared. It was as overwhelming and terrifying as an ancient black saint mountain.

Boom, boom.

Inside Swallow Palace, Zhang Ruochen struck with the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm over and over again. He went from the first to tenth palm and repeated again. Holy Qi flowed continuously through him and his palm force was natural too. It held boundless power and could split the world.

He reached minor completion for the 11th palm, Dragon and Elephant Heaven Pass, and its power multiplied.

Even though he still couldn't add Rules of Palm Way into his palm techniques, the first step Saint King souls made the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm as powerful as a regular mid-level saint spell.

Mid-level saint spells could also be divided into three classes: regular, expert and master.

Mid-level saint spells could only become stronger the more Rules of Saintly Way that you added to it.

Regular mid-level saint spells would reach a bottleneck after adding in 1,000 rules. After surpassing 1,000 rules, you could add more and the spells would still strengthen, but it wouldn't be as dramatic.

Expert mid-level saint spells would reach a bottleneck at 10,000 rules.

However, the limit for master mid-level saint spells was more than one million rules. If one cultivated a master mid-level saint spell to the highest level, then it could counter upper saint spells.

Of course, the differences between these three levels wasn't only in the limit. The power varied greatly too. You could add in the same number of rules, but an expert mid-level saint spell would crush a regular spell.

Most half-step Saint Kings cultivated regular mid-level saint spells.

Expert mid-level saint spells were already rare. Only those Saint Kings with powerful backgrounds could learn them.

As for master mid-level saint spells, there were barely any and they were like supreme techniques. Typically, only the 81 scriptures on the Taiyi Divine Techniques Rank had records of them.

Not only did those scriptures record the ways to cultivate the techniques, they also added top martial techniques and spells that could complement them. Some scriptures even recorded taboo spells. Each scripture's appearance would cause bloody fights.

The Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm was very miraculous. The technique would upgrade with each palm that he cultivated. It wasn't a regular martial technique. If he fully completed the eleventh palm, it might become at least an expert mid-level spell. It could even become a master spell.

“After refining the Saint King elephant and dragon souls into my body, first-step Saint King power was added to both of my arms.”

With Zhang Ruochen's current physical power, he could fight with some weaker second step Saint Kings. Thus, getting a first step Saint King's power wasn't too big of a deal.

He took out two boxing gloves and wrist guards from his spatial ring.

The gloves were fiery red and made out of some unknown material. They were very hot and heavy. The two wrist guards were made out of the same material. Flames were carved on them and they had sharp spikes shaped like two balls of fire.

This was part of the Fire God Armor that Qiu Yu had left behind.

The Fire God had many ancient legends in Kunlun's Field. He was a powerful god.

Apparently, any material that approached the Fire God would get burned to ashes by his body's hot temperature. Only the fire armor wouldn't melt.

The legends said that the Fire God cultivated 3,000 types of flames. He also combined them all together into something more terrifying than the Divine Fire Jingmie—God-Refining Fire.

However, the God-Refining Fire was too destructive, so much so that even the Fire God couldn't control it. In the end, he burned himself to ashes.

The God-Refining Fire killed the Fire God but didn't destroy the armor.

This undoubtedly gave the armor a mysterious veil.

Zhang Ruochen had studied the Fire God Armor before too. It counted as a godly relic. After adding in Holy Qi, it could activate a shred of the Fire God's origin power.

However, the power of the Fire God Armor wasn't as strong as he'd imagined. It wasn't even on the Hundred Saint Blood Armor's level.

In addition, its defensive abilities weren't as strong either. After all, it wasn't a full set. It was incomplete and could only protect his arms.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen kept it in his spatial ring and didn't use it.

Now, his Spiritual Power, Way of Truth, and palm techniques had all improved. Naturally, he wanted to take down the Moon Goddess's dojo—the Yin and Yang Palace.

Evil figures from three strong worlds ruled over the Yin and Yang Palace. It was a pit of snakes and filled with danger.

Before this, any improvement could increase his chances. Thus, Zhang Ruochen started studying the Fire God Armor again.

“When Qiu Yu wore the armor, the power it unleashed was much stronger than the Hundred Saint Blood Armor. Why can't I release its power?”

He studied it for a long while and did all sorts of tests to no avail. In the end, he had to put it away again. He thought that maybe Blackie could help provide answers after it returned.

However, what frustrated him even more was that it was almost one month and Blackie still hadn't come to the Heavenly Capital Saint Market.

Zhang Ruochen decided to wait three more days. If Blackie still didn't hurry over, then he would go take back Moon Goddess's dojo by himself. He could also use these three days to personally investigate the Yin and Yang Palace so he could be completely familiar with it.

Exiting Swallow Palace, Zhang Ruochen planned on going to the Yin and Yang Palace, but he felt something wrong with the atmosphere of Hundred Flower Palace.

Night had just fallen. This should be when the palace was the busiest, but it was cold and quiet now. There wasn't a single customer in sight.

Zhang Ruochen was curious, so he asked Swallow.

“Lord,” Swallow replied, “I don't know what's going on either. This afternoon, the Fairy Extreme King suddenly ordered the closure of Hundred Flower Palace and that they stop accepting customers for now. Even the dojo's defensive formation was activated. It seems like something big has happened. Oh, he also ordered that you should stay in the residence and not come out.”

Chapter 1588 - Encirclement

“I see. That’s good.”

After hearing what Swallow said, a thought hit Zhang Ruochen. He nodded and stopped thinking about going to Yin and Yang Palace, deciding to head back to Swallow Palace Cave.

He didn’t stay in Swallow Palace Cave for a long time. Zhang Ruochen used space power to dodge Swallow and get out of the cave without being noticed.

Zhang Ruochen firstly went to the square to comprehend the pictures of the Way of Truth, but he didn’t see Hundred Flower Fairy, Ji Fanxin, in the square. Instead, he saw two seniors from Thousand Pistil Field sitting at two ends of the square, seeming to protect the young monks who were comprehending the pictures.

Has Fairy Extreme King figured out who Shang Feng is and decided to get rid of him tonight?

Zhang Ruochen thought so. He disappeared from the flower ocean, heading toward the cave where Shang Feng was.

...

Xuanyu Cave.

A saint maiden told Shang Feng, “Lord Fairy Extreme King has closed the gate of Hundred Flower Palace and opened the guarding formation. Something’s about to happen today.”

“I know. Leave me now!”

Shang Feng looked very solemn, which scared that maiden.

Shangfeng King was always very easygoing. What happened to him today?

Shang Feng started to get anxious and tense after the maiden left. He said to himself, “Did Fairy Extreme King figure out who I am?”

Shang Feng had already noticed something strange that had happened lately. Every time he wanted to leave Hundred Flower Palace, he would be stopped by Fairy Extreme King for all sorts of reasons.

He also didn't get any replies for all the messages he sent out.

He always assumed the best and regarded everything as a coincidence. After all, there was no way the monks from Thousand Pistil Field could figure out he was a spy from Black Demon Field.

What happened tonight was just too unusual.

“Did I expose myself when I went see Qiong Ling. I can't sit here and wait for them to capture me.”

Shang Feng walked into a secret chamber in his refining cave and took out a magic pot. He stroked the magic pot's surface, and blood-red inscriptions emerged.

Shang Feng immediately calmed down holding the magic pot.

“If Fairy Extreme King tries to stop me, I'll fight my way out.”

Shang Feng then put the magic pot into his sleeves, turned on the formation of Xuanyu Cave, and walked out.

He immediately stopped walking when he got out of the cave. He saw the light outside, shining up in the sky. There were fifty-four saint lamps floating in the sky, surrounding the entire Xuanyu Cave.

Fairy Extreme King stood under the lamps with his hands behind his back, staring at Shang Feng walking out as if he'd been waiting for a long time.

“Where are you going, Blood Demonic Emperor Son?”

Shang Feng tried to look calm as he wasn't intimidated. He asked, “What are you talking about, Guardian King? I don't understand.”

Fairy Extreme King sneered, looking into the darkness. And then, an old man with a beard walked out, took out a book, and threw it toward Shang Feng.

“What’s the point of quibbling? I’ve discovered everything about you,” said the man with a white beard.

The old man with a white beard was named ‘Shang Gutong,’ and was the fifth-step saint king bringing the dragon soul and the elephant soul to Hundred Flower Palace. Also, he came from the same race as Shang Feng did.

Shang Feng didn’t pick up the book on the ground. Instead, he smiled and said, “Who else is here? Come out, everyone.”

Three beings showed up in the dark, and they were the three seniors from Hundred Flower Palace, Treasure Inspector Qian Liwen, Peony King and Heavenly Fire King.

Heavenly Fire King was a Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly flying in the sky, and his wings covered the sky above them.

Qian Liwen was holding a saint scepter, standing in the distance and looking dim.

Peony King was a curvy and beautiful woman with a peony-shaped ornament on her forehead. She stood at the top of Xuanyu Cave, staring at Shang Feng coldly.

“Now that you’re here, I’ll get rid of you all.”

Shang Feng knew that the other seniors were nothing, but Fairy Extreme King was terrifically powerful. He had to use the magic pot to fight him.

“Let me see how powerful this Blood Demonic Emperor Son is.”

The old man with a beard made a claw shape with his hand, and his saint Qi was released. The entire space turned into a saint Qi ocean, tumbling and making rumbling sounds.

More than a thousand saintly way rules flew out, merging with his claws.

“Empty Ocean Demon-Killing Claw.”

The two sharp claws pierced through the saint Qi ocean, dashing toward Shang Feng.

“Careful.”

Fairy Extreme King sensed a tumbling demonic Qi coming out of Shang Feng. He was dazed, and he rushed out and tried to drag Shang Gutong back.

Unfortunately, when he was only a hundred feet away from Shang Gutong, black demonic Qi gushed out and shattered Shang Gutong's body into pieces.

Fairy Extreme King took out a crimson shield and pushed it forward.

Boom!

The golden shield suddenly turned into a giant fiery shield, protecting Fairy Extreme King from the black demonic Qi.

Fairy Extreme King looked to the giant fiery shield, and he saw Shang Feng holding a demonic pot, from which the demonic shadow of a butterfly flew out.

That demonic shadow was able to kill a fifth-step saint king with just a breath, showing how forceful it was.

“You refined the saint soul of Thousand Universe Demonic Master into a pot for you to use? How evil you are.” Fairy Extreme King clenched his teeth and couldn't be more indignant.

Thousand Universe Demonic Master was a great being from Heavenly Fire Demonic Butterfly clan, and he was one step away from becoming a supreme saint. Even if he was only a battle soul, he was still strong enough to intimidate Fairy Extreme King, an eighth-step saint king.

“Anyone who tries to stop me, die.”

Shang Feng tried to storm out of Hundred Flower Palace, holding Thousand Universe Magic Pot.

“Don't you dare.”

Fairy Extreme King breathed out saint Qi like a storm. Suddenly, all the fifty-four saint lamps released thousand-patterns destruction, suppressing Shang Feng.

It was a set of saint lamps, and they were all high-class thousand-patterns saint weapons. The lamp formation was

strong enough to trap even a ninth-step saint king.

Whoosh!

Shang Feng spit out blood before the lamp formation even touched him.

“Fairy Extreme King is indeed powerful. Even with Thousand Universe Demonic Pot, I’m not his match.” Shang Feng was withholding a lot of pressure. His hair turned into black liquid, and his skin started to melt.

Boom!

The demonic phantom wielded a tumbling attack power behind Shang Feng, crashing the formation of Hundred Flower Palace, making a hole in the formation wall.

Shang Feng was pleased to see that. He said, “Thousand Universe Demonic Master, ward off Fairy Extreme King for me.”

The demonic shadow stepped back, spread its wings, and fought the lamp formation from Fairy Extreme King.

After getting rid of the suppression from the lamp formation, Shang Feng immediately performed a body technique and rushed out of Hundred Flower Palace.

“Stop him! Don’t let him get away!” Fairy Extreme King yelled.

Heavenly Fire King, Peony King, and Qian Liwen all performed attack techniques, trying to hit the hole in the formation and the back of Shang Feng, crashing into the protection dome around him.

Peony King turned into a trace of light, going around the lamp formation and the demonic shadow and rushing toward the formation hole.

After a while, Fairy Extreme King used the lamp formation to suppress the demonic shadow, looking at Peony King coming back, and asking, “Did you kill him?”

Peony King shook his head and said, “He has the seed of Truth and Illusion Saint Flower, so he immediately vanished after

getting out of Hundred Flower Palace.”

“Damn it.”

Fairy Extreme King trampled the ground, shaking half the Hundred Flower Palace.

Qian Liwen sighed. “Who could’ve expected Shang Feng has the saint soul of Thousand Universe Demonic Master. Otherwise, there’s no way a fifth-step saint king like him could break the guarding formation of Hundred Flower Palace.”

The seniors from Hundred Flower Palace didn’t notice that two more people had rushed out before Peony King when Shang Feng rushed out of the hole.

However, the two had used some special skills to cover their forces.

One of them was Zhang Ruochen, who used Buddha beads.

Zhang Ruochen was watching the fight from the distance the whole time. He thought Fairy Extreme King and his team had an absolute advantage over Shang Feng, so he didn’t plan to make an attack at all.

Until he saw Shang Feng escape Hundred Flower Palace, when Zhang Ruochen immediately chased him, as he couldn’t allow him to survive.

As for the other being who was following Zhang Ruochen, even Zhang Ruochen didn’t notice her with his level fifty-five mind power.

...

Shang Feng was severely injured and bleeding like hell. Fortunately, he had the seed of True and Illusion Saint Flower, forming a hollow phantom to cover his body and forces, which was how he tricked Peony King.

“Fairy Extreme King, Peony King, Heavenly Fire King... I’ll avenge myself for today.” Shang Feng’s eyes gleamed with anger, yet his body was hurting him. He picked the roads where only a few were walking and rushed toward Yin and Yang Palace as fast as possible.

Suddenly, Shang Feng stopped, looking at the front. He saw a man in white staring at him fiercely.

“It’s you.”

Chapter 1589 - Killing A Fifth Step Saint King

Chapter 1589: Killing A Fifth Step Saint King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The human who stopped Shang Feng was Zhang Ruochen, naturally.

Shang Feng was very confused. He couldn't help but look down at the hallucination flower in his hand and back up. "The hallucination flower's mirage can fool a seventh step Saint King. How can you see me? How could you discover me?"

Zhang Ruochen held the Abyss Ancient Sword in one hand and the Emperor Yi Bone Staff in the other. "No matter how strong your hallucination is, you're still in the space," he said nonchalantly.

"Space..."

Shang Feng released his Spiritual Power to check around him. After confirming there were no other cultivators, he let out a laugh. "You really are Zhang Ruochen, ha. If you hide in Hundred Flower Palace, you might be able to live a few more days. Why did you come out to die?"

Kaboom!

Boundless and terrifying saintly might poured out of Shang Feng. His body was like a saintly mountain and his eyes were like the sun and moon. Beams of Holy Qi flowed through the space like rivers.

This was a fifth step Saint King's might.

Zhang Ruochen's hair and clothes all fluttered and his body was like a boat in the vast sea. He could get torn apart by Shang Feng's saintly power at any time.

Demonic flames burned in Shang Feng's eyes. "A mere half-step Saint King dares to come kill a fifth step Saint King. Don't you know that no matter how injured a fifth step Saint King is, killing a half-step Saint King is still as easy as crushing an ant?"

"Unfortunately, I'm not an ant."

Zhang Ruochen put up his spatial domain, enveloping hundreds of meters in radius. This area was now isolated from the outside world.

Seeing his abnormal action, Shang Feng grew cautious. He was worried that an accident would happen, so he took the initiative and attacked, striking with a demonic flame claw print.

Even though he was injured, Shang Feng was still very powerful. This claw print was able to kill a second step Saint King.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen circulated his Holy Qi. Over 10,000 runes appeared on his Abyss Ancient Sword and he dragged out a long black streak of light.

"Sword with No Regrets."

Not only did he use his completed Sword Seven, he also added 93 Rules of Truth to double this strike's power.

Boom, boom.

There was a string of explosions.

The mighty force crashed through the spatial domain, shattering the street under their feet. Dozens of shocking sword gashes were left behind.

The Abyss Ancient Sword shattered Shang Feng's claw print, turning it into balls of demonic smoke that landed on the ground. They burned the ground into pits of lava.

However, Zhang Ruochen was also forced back a dozen meters by the claw print. He half knelt onto the ground to lower his core and steady himself.

A shocked expression appeared on Shang Feng's face. Even though he'd casually struck out that claw, a half-step Saint King shouldn't be able to take it.

"No wonder you can be number one on the Saints Merits Rank. You aren't average." Shang Feng grew serious.

Zhang Ruochen stood up slowly and looked at the injury on his right hand. Immense pain came from there.

"The difference in cultivation is still too large," he muttered to himself. "With my physical strength, I still got hurt after facing your attack squarely."

"At least you know that we have a large difference in cultivation."

The saintly power that burst from Shang Feng multiplied countless times. Black demonic flames burned all over him, causing the temperature within the spatial domain to skyrocket. It was a dozen times hotter than boiling water.

Zhang Ruochen naturally wasn't arrogant enough to think that he could fight with a fifth step Saint King.

Earlier, Shang Feng had underestimated Zhang Ruochen, wanting to suppress him with a casual strike. Zhang Ruochen had wanted to test his current strength, so he went squarely against Shang Feng.

Thud!

Zhang Ruochen raised the Emperor Yi Bone Staff and stabbed it into the ground. He held the skull at the top and added in a beam of Spiritual Power.

"Lava Nether Fire Palm."

Shang Feng's demonic flames rose in temperature again, melting the ground underfoot into golden liquid. He formed fist prints and struck powerfully.

Zhang Ruochen's skin stung from the demonic flames.
"Emperor Yi," he uttered. "Awaken!"

Whoosh!

Icy Qi poured out of the Emperor Yi Bone Staff and it stood up, transforming into a huge black skeleton. There was a golden sarira embedded in the forehead, emanating with a divine aura.

Evil and divine forces were interwoven.

The black skeleton slapped forward, sending Shang Feng's palm force flooding back.

Boom!

Shang Feng couldn't block the black skeleton's palm force and stumbled back a dozen steps. He was already hurt. After taking this hit, he couldn't push down the injuries and coughed out blood.

"This... This is King Hun's Emperor Yi Bone Staff..."

Shang Feng's expression grew uncomfortable as he shook his head. "No, his staff isn't so powerful."

"Emperor Yi Bone Staff indeed isn't this powerful, but I embedded a Buddha's sarira, so now, it's this powerful."

Zhang Ruochen held the Abyss Ancient Sword and followed the black skeleton, activating the runes in his sword again.

The Emperor Yi Bone Staff was created from the skeleton and spine of a Supreme Saint. The skull also preserved a shred of the Supreme Saint's soul, so it could unleash the power of a third step Saint King.

But after embedding the Buddha's sarira, the staff was probably comparable to a peak fourth step Saint King now. It was far stronger than Zhang Ruochen.

The black skeleton attacked Shang Feng, striking with a black palm print. The print contained strings of golden Buddhist patterns that contained both just and evil strength.

Shang Feng was forced back again and he felt frustrated.

If the Fairy Extreme King and others hadn't hurt him, his cultivation would be able to suppress the black skeleton and Zhang Ruochen.

Plus, to stop the Medicine King and Heaven Fire King's last attack, Shang Feng had used all his defensive treasures. Now, his injuries would worsen with each hit he took from the black skeleton.

If I kill Zhang Ruochen, the Emperor Yi Bone Staff will just be a dead object.

Shang Feng stopped going up against the black skeleton. He used demonic steps and rushed out from between the skeleton's legs, slapping toward Zhang Ruochen. This palm was at least three times stronger than his previous strike.

No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen was, he would either be injured greatly or killed by this strike.

But, much to Shang Feng's annoyance, Zhang Ruochen didn't face him squarely. Instead, he used the Spatial Move and appeared behind him, hacking down with his sword.

"You want to die?"

Shang Feng slapped backward and hit the Abyss Ancient Sword squarely.

Boom!

It was the sound of metal clashing. Zhang Ruochen flew backward, landing on the black skeleton's head. His entire arm was numb with pain.

It couldn't be helped. Shang Feng's cultivation was too advanced. He could block the Abyss Ancient Sword with his bare hands. This power was indeed far above Zhang Ruochen.

But Shang Feng was even more frustrated. He was a fifth step Saint King, but he couldn't even manage a half-step Saint King. This made him go crazy and he wanted to crush Zhang Ruochen.

Whatever. I must kill Zhang Ruochen even if it affects my injuries.

Earlier, Shang Feng had been worried that he would worsen his condition if he used too much force, leaving incurable injuries, so he restricted his cultivation to below a fifth step Saint King.

Now, he couldn't care about that, because he couldn't kill Zhang Ruochen without using a fifth step Saint King's power.

If he killed Zhang Ruochen and made this great achievement, he would receive a high position in the Black Demon Field. Otherwise, his future would be extremely difficult because he'd infiltrated Thousand Pistil Field for so long and had no connections in the Black Demon Field.

Zhang Ruochen sensed Shang Feng's aura strengthening and immediately moved the black skeleton to attack.

He also opened all 144 apertures. Holy Qi poured out, activating the fifth layer of power of the Hundred Saint Blood Armor.

Whoosh!

One hundred saintly projections flew out, standing all around the spatial domain. They guarded Zhang Ruochen like stars around the moon. Each projection had the power of an Absolute Land Saint.

The Hundred Saint Blood Armor had eight levels of power according to the respective realms: lower, middle, upper, Xuanhuang, Absolute Land, Heaven Pass, True, and Absolute Realm.

With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation, he could only unleash the sixth level. But if he did, it would be like 100 Heaven Pass Saints on him. It would push him down until he was immobile.

But if he unleashed the fifth level and had 100 Absolute Land Saints on him, he could still be very fast.

Boom!

Shang Feng used the power of a fifth step Saint King and stepped forward. An energy wave spread from the ground, making the black skeleton and Zhang Ruochen lose balance.

Boom!

Shang Feng punched the black skeleton in the chest, sending it flying.

Zhang Ruochen took this opportunity to condense the power of the 100 Saints. Like a war god in blood armor, he lifted the Abyss Ancient Sword and cut down on Shang Feng's waist.

"This sword's power isn't bad, but you're still not a third step Saint King. You're nothing more than an ant to me."

Shang Feng pressed down on the blade and actually grabbed the Abyss Ancient Sword, resolving all the power in that strike. Then he waved his arm, slamming the Abyss Ancient Sword and Zhang Ruochen onto the ground.

But before Zhang Ruochen could land, he vanished.

"The Spatial Move again."

Shang Feng sensed small spatial ripples behind him.

His eyes hardened immediately. He took a step forward, stepping on the Abyss Ancient Sword's blade. His overwhelming power crushed down like a mountain.

"Die!"

Shang Feng formed a palm print as fast as lightning and slapped Zhang Ruochen's head.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen vanished again, dodging Shang Feng's fatal attack.

The next moment, he reappeared around 30 feet from Shang Feng. He knelt on the ground, panting for breath. The previous attacks had been extremely dangerous. If he'd been half an instant slower, he would've gotten killed.

Even with his precise calculations and escaping with the Spatial Move after each attack, he still got injured internally from Shang Feng's palm force.

The black skeleton climbed up and returned to Zhang Ruochen's side. His ghostly eyes stared at Shang Feng across

from him.

Right now, Shang Feng felt his body turning extremely weak, as if he'd aged 200 years. This weakness felt even worse than his injuries.

“How can this be?”

Terror filled Shang Feng's eyes. His body trembled and he couldn't steady himself.

Different from him, Zhang Ruochen was filled with vibrant battle intent. He raised his Abyss Ancient Sword. Staring at the time print on it, he said smoothly, “It's the power of time.”

His earlier strikes hadn't meant to kill Shang Feng. Instead, he put many time prints onto Shang Feng to cut down his lifespan and weaken him.

The end was imminent, so Zhang Ruochen revealed this secret.

“Emperor Yi, go. Kill him,” Zhang Ruochen said indifferently.

Chapter 1590 - Hundred Flower Fairy, Ji Fanxin

Both the feebleness and the injuries made it difficult for Shang Feng to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Seeing the black skull dashing toward him, Shang Feng was shocked.

He was nowhere near strong enough to ward off an evil demon like that.

Run.

He had to run.

No matter how upset he was, he had to run now.

Whoosh!

A cluster of demonic Qi gushed out of Shang Feng's body, turning into thousands of blood-red demonic butterflies, flying in the dark.

The black skull crashed into the group of butterflies, extended a black bony hand, and grabbed the largest demonic butterfly and tore a wing down.

The blood-red demonic butterfly yelled in agony, knowing he couldn't make it safe today, and shouted, "I'll bring you down with me, Zhang Ruochen..."

Just before the blood-red demonic butterfly was about to blow up his saint source, that black skull roared with excitement and pierced through his skull, digging his saint source out.

Shang Feng's saint soul wasn't dismantled, and the butterfly tried to fly out of the saint source and run away.

However, that blood-red butterfly was caught by the exhilarated black skull right after it flew out. The skull swallowed the butterfly, and the green ghost fire refined Shang Feng's saint soul.

Zhang Ruochen had never expected something like this to happen. He rushed forward to see what the black skull was doing. “It’s refining Shang Feng’s saint soul...”

“The skull is sealing the fragmented soul of a supreme saint, which has turned into an evil spirit. That evil spirit is swallowing Shang Feng’s saint soul to make itself stronger.” With Buddha sarira, Zhang Ruochen was confident enough to control that evil spirit.

After hesitating for a while, Zhang Ruochen didn’t stop it, as he wanted to see what was happening next.

Shang Feng’s saint soul was struggling to get out, yet another stronger soul power was suppressing him.

After fifteen minutes, the black skull managed to refine and absorb Shang Feng’s saint soul completely, and its evil sha Qi got stronger. It glared at Zhang Ruochen with its ghostly eyes as if it wanted to challenge him.

“Its forces have surged. Seems like it can rival a fifth-step saint king, but I’m your master, and you’re nowhere near enough to fight me yet.” Zhang Ruochen controlled the Buddha sarira with his hands.

Suddenly, the sarira on the black skull’s forehead gleamed with golden light, covering it completely and purifying its evil sha Qi.

Howl!

The black skull yelled, trying to fight back.

Zhang Ruochen snorted, flipping his hand. Suddenly, the sarira became extremely heavy, suppressing the black skull to kneel on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t retract his mind power until he purified most of the evil sha Qi of the black skull, and then, the black skull turned back into a white bone saint scepter.

Zhang Ruochen then grabbed Shang Feng’s saint source.

The saint source that was as large as a fist looked transparent, giving out blood-red demonic light like a heavy ruby.

Inside the saint source was a cauldron as large as a thumb.

Seeing the cauldron, Zhang Ruochen looked pleased.

It was a rules saint weapon formed by Shang Feng, which was priceless to half-step saint kings and lower-class saint kings.

Normally, the rules saint weapons would dissipate the second the saint kings died, which meant nobody could gain their rules saint weapons. However, Shang Feng didn't have time to dismantle his rules saint weapon before he died, which benefited Zhang Ruochen.

A rules saint weapon left by a fifth-step saint king was immensely valuable.

Zhang Ruochen put away Shang Feng's saint source and started to search the body of Shang Feng. He found three valuables, a seed of Truth and Illusion Saint Flower, a pair of blood-red boxing gloves, and a black demonic pot.

That pair of boxing gloves was a Second Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon.

Because of that pair of boxing gloves, Shang Feng managed to ward off the Abyss Ancient Sword with his hands.

However, Zhang Ruochen had the boxing gloves formed by Hundred Saint Blood Armor, so he wasn't even using the boxing gloves from the Fiery God Armor. He then put the gloves into his space ring after refining the saint Qi inside.

The seed of True and Illusion Saint Flower was interesting. After he infused his mind power and saint Qi inside, he could create illusions, and he was able to change the illusions with just one thought.

Even a monk like Zhang Ruochen who had never practiced illusion techniques could become an illusion master after gaining it.

“Shang Feng said that the illusion created by the seed of True and Illusion Saint Flower can trick a seventh-step saint king. If so, that seed would be more valuable than the pair of boxing gloves.”

Zhang Ruochen then picked up the magic pot, and after studying it, he found that the magic pot looked like a secret treasure with lots of ancient inscriptions on, including sealing inscriptions, forbidden law inscriptions, and divine fire inscriptions.

“Shang Feng released the saint soul of Thousand Universe Demonic Master from this magic pot, but his saint soul is probably not Fairy Extreme King’s match. He’s probably been suppressed already.”

Without the saint soul of Thousand Universe Demonic Master, the magic pot was useless.

The evil spirit in Yi Emperor Bone Scepter was only a fragmented soul of supreme saint ‘Yi Emperor,’ so its power was significantly less than Thousand Universe Demonic Master. If the bone scepter sealed the complete saint soul of a supreme saint, Yi Emperor Bone Scepter would’ve been much stronger.

If so, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be able to handle Yi Emperor Bone Scepter.

Zhang Ruochen put away Shang Feng’s corpse, leaving it for Carnivorous Holy Flower.

And then, Zhang Ruochen immediately left and headed toward Yin and Yang Palace.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t know that someone had been staring at him from the darkness when he killed Shang Feng.

After he left, a woman in white walked out and whispered, “He’s Zhang Ruochen, Time and Space Descendant. He’s just a half-step saint king, yet he managed to kill a fifth-step saint king. No wonder he dared rival Golden Roc Prince.”

That woman in white had rushed out of Hundred Flower Palace to kill Shang Feng, but she accidentally figured out Zhang Ruochen’s identity.

Any monk would be interested in the person ranked first on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’, including that woman in white.

...

The dawn didn't make Heavenly Capital Saint Market bustle less; instead, there were more monks on the streets.

The statue of the Moon Goddess was erected outside Yin and Yang Palace. She looked ethereal, yet the monks going in and out of Yin and Yang Ocean didn't find that statue holy. Instead, they smiled sneakily.

Especially the couple of sexy ladies standing beside the statue. Their bodies and looks completely ruined the divinity of the godly statue.

Monks who were wearing capes or masks, or were using their saint power to cover their bodies kept walking into Yin and Yang Palace. All of them were careful as they didn't want to be recognized by people they knew.

Zhang Ruochen turned into Shang Feng using Traceless 36 Changes, put on a mask and observed in the dark for a long time. He didn't walk toward Yin and Yang Palace until he realized there were no flaws in his camouflage.

However, a breeze blew him away right when he stepped on the street.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. He immediately mobilized his saint Qi, trying to get out of the breeze, yet the breeze felt like threads, sometimes soft and sometimes tight. He couldn't get out at all.

After spinning in the air for a while, Zhang Ruochen found himself back in the dark again, standing beside a wall of Yin and Yang Palace.

“Who's there?”

Zhang Ruochen immediately triggered Hundred Saint Blood Armor, and blue Divine Fire Jingmie emerged on his palm.

A woman in white wearing a veil was standing with her back toward him. She was engulfed in light rain, and the light spots looked like those from a nebula, covering her entire body.

Even the back was already breathtaking, looking like a beautiful shadow in a picture, looking mysterious and indiscernible.

“Ji Fanxin.”

Zhang Ruochen had seen Hundred Flower Fairy, Ji Fanxin, before, so he immediately recognized who she was.

Zhang Ruochen was astounded. How did Ji Fanxin find him?

Zhang Ruochen was very cautious. He not only used Buddha beads to cover his forces, but also changed his face eight times until he looked exactly like Shang Feng. Zhang Ruochen would in no way believe Ji Fanxin bumped into him by accident.

The only explanation was that she'd been following Zhang Ruochen since he left Hundred Flower Palace, yet he hadn't noticed her at all.

Zhang Ruochen felt cold thinking about that.

It would be very easy for her to kill him.

Zhang Ruochen didn't calm himself down until after a long time. He put away his Hundred Saint Blood Armor and Divine Fire Jingmie, as she could've done it a long time ago.

“Why're you trying to stop me from going to Yin and Yang Palace?” said Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Fanxin didn't turn around. She said, with her melodious voice, “I'm stopping you from committing suicide.”

“How so?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ji Fanxin said, “You really thought you'd be completely safe after changing your face and hiding your forces? Did you see that black bronze mirror on the gate of Yin and Yang Palace? That's Yin and Yang Mirror which can tell all the camouflage. No monks can sneak in without being noticed. Your picture has been sent to Yin and Yang Palace, and many horrific powerful beings are waiting for you.”

Zhang Ruochen looked to Yin and Yang Palace, and he indeed saw a black bronze mirror at the top right corner on the gate.

Zhang Ruochen was confident of his Traceless 36 Changes, yet he still hadn't perfected the techniques yet. He wasn't sure whether he could trick Yin and Yang Palace.

Yin and Yang Palace is a horrendous place which has offended many large fields, yet it's still in Heavenly Capital Saint Market. It's indeed way more complicated than I thought. Lucky that Ji Fanxin told me, otherwise...

Zhang Ruochen then realized how horrible his enemies were, and if he wasn't always careful, he would be annihilated.

"Why did you save me? The grudge between me and Yin and Yang Palace seems to have nothing to do with Thousand Pistil Field, and we've never met each other before. Why did Hundred Flower Fairy, who has always turned people down, help a human stranger?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

"Who told you it has nothing to do with Thousand Pistil Field?"

Ji Fanxin turned around, and she looked to Zhang Ruochen with her beautiful eyes.

Seeing that pair of beautiful eyes, Zhang Ruochen immediately recalled the woman he'd met in Book Garden Cave. He said with surprise, "It's you."

Chapter 1591 - Thousand-person Corpse Ditch

Chapter 1591: Thousand-person Corpse Ditch

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Back when Zhang Ruochen had been reading scrolls about Kunlun's Field in the Book Fragrance Library, he'd seen through the bookshelf a pair of eyes that left a deep impression. However, she hadn't seemed to want to interact with him at all back then. She'd put down the book and vanished.

Now, seeing Ji Fanxin's spirited eyes, Zhang Ruochen immediately recognized that the woman who'd read about the Divine Sky-connecting Tree was her.

Zhang Ruochen was still quite composed, so he calmed down quickly. Various questions rose up within him.

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen took the lead and asked, "What does this have to do with the Thousand Pistil Field?"

Other cultivators all tried to kiss up to Ji Fanxin or pretend to be gentlemanly. They tried their best to find a chance and get closer to her. However, Zhang Ruochen's eyes were natural and even seemed guarded against her. His question went straight to the point too.

Ji Fanxin felt more relaxed interacting with someone like him.

"This isn't the place to speak. Come with me."

Ji Fanxin's body scattered into a rain of light. Then the specks of light vanished completely before Zhang Ruochen.

He was taken aback, but he quickly smiled. Sniffing softly, he followed Ji Fanxin's light fragrance and walked out of the Heavenly Capital Saint Market. He reached the edge of Heavenly Capital Mountain.

Heavenly Capital Mountain was a hovering saint mountain. Standing at the edge was like standing at the side of a bottomless cliff. Before him was a vast sea of clouds. Above him were countless dazzling stars.

The surroundings were silent. It seemed that very few cultivators would come here.

Zhang Ruochen stopped. Looking at the sea of clouds and stars, he couldn't help but praise, "I didn't think that I could see such a beautiful sight at Heavenly Capital Mountain."

"The beautiful scene is only the appearance. Who knows what ugly truth is hidden under the thick clouds?"

A rain of light appeared out of thin air and reformed Ji Fanxin's beautiful figure.

She'd used an unknown tactic earlier to disappear without a trace. Zhang Ruochen couldn't sense her even with spatial power. If she hadn't purposely left behind a scent, Zhang Ruochen might not have been able to follow her here.

He couldn't figure it out, but he didn't ask.

After all, Ji Fanxin was able to be the leader of a strong world. It was normal for her to have extraordinary tactics.

She wouldn't tell others about her hidden cards.

Ji Fanxin wore a veil and only revealed a pair of sparkling eyes. She was as beautiful as a fairy under the starlight. "The Yin and Yang Palace is ruled by the Evil Way cultivators of three worlds. They use their powerful forces and cruel ways to capture beautiful girls from the various worlds. They use the girls as objects, slaves, and prostitutes to sell in exchange for saint stones and benefits.

"Many prides of the Thousand Pistil Field have been captured and imprisoned in the Yin and Yang Palace. They're turned into tools for those demons to make money."

“You’ve been to the Yin and Yang Palace?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ji Fanxin shook her head. “No.”

“Then, how do you know that the prides of the Thousand Pistil Field are imprisoned there?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t believe that any man in the world would tell Ji Fanxin that they’d gone to the Yin and Yang Palace, so he asked out of curiosity.

“Follow me.”

Ji Fanxin jumped off of the Heavenly Capital Mountain and disappeared in the sea of clouds.

Zhang Ruochen unfurled his dragon wings and chased quickly. He flew in the clouds for a long while before finally landing on the ground. He stood at the edge of a ditch with thousands of corpses.

They were all female corpses.

They included women from every race—human, fox, snake, dragon, Luosha, Immortal Vampires and more. Some had already decayed; others were still complete. Their bodies were uncovered and ravaged as if they’d suffered inhuman torture before death.

Zhang Ruochen covered his nose, not wanting to smell that sharp odor. “These corpses?”

“All from the Yin and Yang Palace.” Ji Fanxin’s eyes were sad yet cold. “The corpses of the girls who disappeared from the Thousand Pistil Field can be found here.”

There was a formation outside the thousand-corpse ditch, but Ji Fanxin had used her inscrutable Spiritual Power to open a crack in the formation. This was how she and Zhang Ruochen could enter.

Otherwise, other cultivators might not discover the ditch even if they were close by, let alone break in.

But Zhang Ruochen was still doubtful. “Why doesn’t the Yin and Yang Palace destroy all these corpses? There isn’t any

advantage in leaving them here, right?”

“These girls were at least Half-Saints when they were alive,” Ji Fanxin said. “Many were even Saints. Their physical bodies are so strong. How can they decay so quickly?”

“It does seem to be a problem.”

Zhang Ruochen opened his Heavenly Eyes and looked at the corpse ditch again. He finally sensed something wrong. Holy Qi and Blood Qi kept spreading out of the corpses and converging at the bottom of the ditch.

It was like...something was swallowing up the last bit of value that they had.

“What is that?”

Zhang Ruochen reached out a hand and grabbed in the air. He wanted to see what secret was in the bottom of the ditch.

“Don’t move.” Ji Fanxin stopped Zhang Ruochen. “One Evil Way figure of the Yin and Yang Palace is using their remaining power and Blood Qi to refine a very evil weapon.”

“In that case, why not take away the weapon and destroy this place?”

“If we destroy this, they’ll only try harder. They’ll kill more girls and create another thousand-corpse ditch elsewhere. Plus, if we take away the weapon now, it’ll alarm them.”

Zhang Ruochen thought for a long while. Then he pulled his saintly power back and said, “No, no. Since these girls are the money-makers of the Yin and Yang Palace, they’re either sold or used to serve the male cultivators. How could they turn into corpses and be abandoned here to refine that weapon?”

Ji Fanxin clearly didn’t know either. “Perhaps we’ll only know if we search the Yin and Yang Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen walked to a more recent corpse in the ditch. He pressed a finger to the corpse’s right wrist and fell silent.

Then he walked to another corpse and checked her closely too.

He checked a dozen corpses of different races before finally stopping. “I know the reason!”

“What is it?” Ji Fanxin asked.

“Their Yin Qi has been emptied completely,” Zhang Ruochen said seriously. “They must’ve died from the exhaustion of yin.”

“What does that mean?” Ji Fanxin asked curiously.

Seeing her otherworldly and goddess-like features, Zhang Ruochen was suddenly at a loss for words. He didn’t know how to explain.

If the Deities and others who pursued her knew that Zhang Ruochen was going to tell the pure Fairy Baihua about the exhaustion of yin, they would probably bring a group of strong cultivators to beat him up.

Ji Fanxin stared at Zhang Ruochen. “If you keep a secret from me, I’ll definitely keep secrets from you too. This doesn’t help anyone.”

“Okay, I’ll tell you. The so-called exhaustion of yin is when a woman continues to have sex with men and goes against the limit. They use up all the yin in them and die.”

Because of the Emotion Pill, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t really control his emotions. When he said these words, he actually leered and studied Ji Fanxin closely.

“Shameless.”

Ji Fanxin shot a cold look at him and transformed into a streak of light, disappearing from the edge of the corpse.

“So unlucky. This side effect can happen at any time but just had to affect me now.”

Zhang Ruochen was embarrassed and felt humiliated. He rubbed his face and chased after Ji Fanxin when he recovered.

Ji Fanxin had returned to the edge of Heavenly Capital Mountain. She didn’t leave in anger and seemed to have been waiting for Zhang Ruochen.

“Sorry, I... It was the side effect of the Emotion Pill.” Zhang Ruochen was at the edge of the cliff. He looked awkward.

Ji Fanxin's unique aura was like an orchid. She was extremely calm and serene. Putting distance between her and Zhang Ruochen, she said, "It's okay, it's not important. After all, we're not close and won't have any deep exchanges."

Zhang Ruochen could tell that the gap between him and the Baihua Fairy was getting larger. He was frustrated. Clearly, she'd been the one who wanted to know. How come it seemed like she'd gotten offended?

Zhang Ruochen believed that he hadn't teased or blasphemed her.

After a long silence, Zhang Ruochen saw that Ji Fanxin didn't plan on speaking, so he asked, "I'm curious. With your cultivation and abilities, why don't you break into the Yin and Yang Palace and save those girls of the Thousand Pistil Field? Plus, you have so many pursuers. If you just ask or give them some rewards, they'll attack the Yin and Yang Palace immediately."

"It's not that easy."

Ji Fanxin shook her head and continued, "The interests behind the Yin and Yang Palace are very complicated. Not only does it pertain to the direct disciples of the Truth Godly Palace, it even involves some terrible forces. Those Deities aren't idiots. If you ask them to attack the Yin and Yang Palace, they'll definitely compare the pros and cons first."

"So, they're too scared?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ji Fanxin fell silent. She didn't reply to Zhang Ruochen, because even she had weighed the pros and cons for a long time and still hadn't done anything. Even she was intimidated by the Yin and Yang Palace's own power and the forces behind it. She didn't dare to act impulsively.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes brightened. "I got it! Actually, you don't dare to attack the Yin and Yang Palace either, so you found me. You know that if there's someone in the entire Truth Heavenly Domain that dares to break into the Yin and Yang Palace, it would be Zhang Ruochen, number one on the Saints Merits Rank."

Chapter 1592 - All the Devils

Chapter 1592: All the Devils

Ji Fanxin gave an ambiguous answer. She said apathetically, “You’re a priest chosen by Moon Goddess. It’s your duty to fight Yin and Yang Palace, but...”

“But what?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Fanxin said, “Even without that sinister power, it’s almost impossible for you to conquer Yin and Yang Palace by yourself.”

Zhang Ruochen was indeed confident, but he wasn’t arrogant. He asked humbly, “Can I ask you a question? Who are the evil beings in Yin and Yang Palace?”

“I can just tell you. You can estimate them yourself.”

Ji Fanxi started to talk. “If you go attack Yin and Yang Palace, ‘All Lives Equal’ will definitely be enacted. The biggest threat to you are the saint-king great beings and the young talents on the ‘Saints Merits Rank.’

“Let me tell you about the saint-king great beings first.

“Yin and Yang Palace is under the control of monks from three large fields. The most powerful field is Yin and Yang Field, and it’s ranked three hundred and seventy-second on ‘Ten Thousand Fields Merits Rank.’

“The leaders of Yin and Yang Palace are Queen Ling and King Flame. Both of them are extremely powerful, much stronger than Shang Feng when he was in his prime. I can easily defeat either of them, but if they teamed up and performed their combined technique, Yin Yang Life-Death Formation, I could barely rival them even if I use all my techniques.”

Ji Fanxin’s real body was a Divine Ancient Pluto Reflection Lotus, which was a rare creature in the universe, yet even she couldn’t guarantee she’d defeat Queen Ling and King Flame, showing how strong they were.

Ji Fanxin continued. “The second large field is Black Demon Field, ranked eight hundred and ninety-first on the ‘Ten Thousand Fields Merits Rank.’

“The leader of Black Demon Field is Qiong Ling. He’s as powerful as Queen Ling and Flame King, and he’s very close with Shang Ziyan from Merits Godly Palace. I heard Qiong Ling absorbed lots of power of merits to refine his demonic body, and he’s mysteriously powerful.

“The third large field is called Thousand Devil Field, ranked fourteen hundred and fiftieth. Its leader is Xie Cheng, who is a wicked and ghastly man. I rarely heard of him fighting anyone, so it’s difficult to assess his abilities, but he’s been making evil saint weapons at the bottom of the corpse pit.”

The leaders of large fields had to be ranked top one thousand on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ before they became saint kings.

And now, Queen Ling, King Flame, Qiong Ling, and Xie Cheng had been saint kings for a long time, and each of them was immensely powerful. Without ‘All Lives Equal,’ nobody under supreme saints could suppress them.

Zhang Ruochen pictured the four great beings in his mind; although he’d never met them before, he felt stressed just thinking about them.

Zhang Ruochen stroked his chin and asked, “Who’s on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’?”

Ji Fanxin said, “Two of them are threats to you. Blue Fang from Yin and Yang Field and Zhan Yu from Black Demon Field.

“Blue Fang is ranked seventy-third on ‘Saints Merits Rank,’ and he’s passed the third level of the ocean domain. He might cross the fourth level of the ocean domain before he becomes a saint king.

“Zhan Yu is ranked nine hundred and seventieth on the rank, and he’s just as powerful as Blue Fang.

“Aside from those two, the Song siblings from Thousand Devil Field are also a huge threat. None of them are on the ‘Saints Merits Rank,’ but they all have complete body

constitution. If the four of them team up, even Blue Fang and Zhan Yu can't fight them."

Zhang Ruochen knew that those who got into the 'Saints Merits Rank' were almost all at the same level. Blue Fang and Zhan Yu were probably only a bit weaker than Wang Xu.

In a one-on-one fight, that power gap would be fatal.

However, if it was a group fight, the power gap meant nothing. They were as much a threat to Zhang Ruochen as Wang Xu was.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I want to know the information about those people, including their techniques, saint spells, the saint weapons they use and their personalities. The more detailed, the better."

"No problem. I'll give it all to you tomorrow."

Ji Fanxin was about to leave, but she hesitated and said, "Actually, you don't need to go attack Yin and Yang Palace. You can refine in Truth Heavenly Domain for another five or six years, and you'll have a better shot when you become a third-step saint king."

Zhang Ruochen said, "I won't do something I can guarantee succeeding in. I'll make a plan after I become a saint king."

Ji Fanxin could tell Zhang Ruochen was very rational. She nodded and said, "I need to warn you again that the biggest threat in Yin and Yang Palace isn't those great beings from the evil way; instead, it's the formation in Yin and Yang Palace and the attack runes held by those people from the evil way.

"Everyone knows Zhang Ruochen's in Truth Heavenly Domain, so they know you'll go attack Yin and Yang Palace. They would've prepared everything already. Even if you enact 'All Lives Equal,' they'll probably kill you with one attack rune.

"Actually, I don't think you stand a chance against them. If you go attack Yin and Yang Palace now, you'll definitely get killed."

“If so, why did you show up and tell me so much about it?” asked Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Fanxin stared at Zhang Ruochen for a long time before she said, “There’s not another person in Truth Heavenly Domain who’s as arrogant and reckless as you are. Perhaps because of that, I still have some hope for you.”

Zhang Ruochen was kind of speechless. He didn’t know what he’d done that made Hundred Flower Fairy have such a bad impression of him.

Was it because of his performance in Zuling Field?

Or was it because he killed lots of great beings from Cloud Field right after he came to Truth Heavenly Domain?

Zhang Ruochen was sure that he’d thought everything through before his actions, and he wouldn’t do it unless he could guarantee the success. How was he reckless and arrogant?

Zhang Ruochen resented how aloof Ji Fanxin was, not to mention her disdainful attitude toward him. He was very emotional, and he said, “Actually, there’s something else I need to tell you.”

“What?” asked Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen said hostilely, “The half-saint and saint females have lots of Yin Qi in their bodies. They shouldn’t be stripped of all their Yin Qi just because they have too much sex with men. Perhaps there’s another reason why they died.”

Ji Fanxin was easily triggered on this subject. Her face immediately blushed, and she gave Zhang Ruochen a glare, vanishing in the dark like light rain as if she were fleeing.

Zhang Ruochen recalled the look Ji Fanxin gave him. She was indeed glaring at her, but she was also embarrassed and shy.

Zhang Ruochen had a sense of joy from revenge.

Soon, Zhang Ruochen adjusted his emotions and became calm again. He thought about what Ji Fanxin told him and whispered to himself, “The formation in Yin and Yang Palace and the attack runes those monks from the evil way have are indeed a big problem for me. Even if I use the space power, I

won't be able to dodge them all. I need to have another protection valuable or two.”

Zhang Ruochen was able to mobilize the space power, and together with his strong body constitution and Hundred Saint Blood Armor, he never needed protection valuables.

However, it would be very dangerous for him to go to Yin and Yang Palace this time, so he needed to be better prepared.

Bang!

Just as Zhang Ruochen turned around, he felt like he hit an invisible wall. Lots of lightning gushed out, covering his head and almost knocking him off Heavenly Capital Mountain.

However, the lightning was all weak, so Zhang Ruochen wasn't injured, but felt awkward.

Zhang Ruochen crushed the mind power wall and said angrily, “How can a fairy be so petty?”

He knew it was Ji Fanxin who had just messed with him.

Ji Fanxin stood on a sycamore tree that was hundreds of feet tall, and she smiled smugly seeing how awkward and irritated Zhang Ruochen was.

To Ji Fanxin, who had been wandering in the quiet, dark, and cold universe for ages, this was the first time she played someone like this, so she found it amusing.

“Falsehood Bead made by Western Buddhist Field can help you with Yin and Yang Mirror.”

Ji Fanxin vanished from the sycamore tree after saying that.

Zhang Ruochen gradually calmed himself down, going back to Heavenly Capital Saint Market. He thought, Joy and Anger Pill has such side effects, and I'm very emotional now. Hope that's not going to make me make big mistakes.

Zhang Ruochen went to a saint shop opened by Time Godly Palace, but he couldn't find the treasure he wanted.

There was only one Time and Space Agate in that saint shop, and he'd already purchased it. They asked Zhang Ruochen to keep waiting.

And then, he walked to the saint palace opened by Western Buddhist Field, going to purchase the Falsehood Bead mentioned by Ji Fanxin.

He needed to inspect Yin and Yang Palace before attacking it, so he needed to buy a Falsehood Bead, and besides, Western Buddhist Field was the best at making defense runes, so he could buy a couple more there.

The saint shops set up by Western Buddhist Field all looked spectacular. There were towering Buddhist towers, golden temples and a palace engulfed in golden Buddhist light.

This wasn't the first time Zhang Ruochen came to the saint palace, so he walked in with no problem.

Chapter 1593 - Unfounded Pearl and Pagoda Rune

Chapter 1593: Unfounded Pearl and Pagoda Rune

After Zhang Ruochen revealed that he wanted to buy the Unfounded Pearl, the Western Buddhist Field immediately placed high importance on him. An Arhat with long white eyebrows personally came out to welcome Zhang Ruochen.

In the Western Buddhist Field, monks in the Saint Realm were called “Saint Monks.”

Saint Kings were known as “Arhat.”

Supreme Saints were known as “Bodhisattva.”

Gods were known as “Buddha.”

“My monk title is Jingtai. I am a disciple of Bodhisattva Bianji. Greetings.” Luoshan Jingtai put his hands together and smiled benevolently.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't sense Arhat Jingtai's cultivation but felt that his abilities were even more advanced than Shang Feng. He couldn't help but lament that saint stones were a great thing. Even an advanced Arhat would smile at you if you had it.

“I heard that you wished to purchase Unfounded Pearls?” Arhat Jingtai asked.

“Indeed,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“What a coincidence. We happen to have imported a pair, but someone bought one a few days ago. Now, there is only one left.”

Arhat Jingtai clearly wasn't a prude monk. He emphasized the two words “only one” and even smiled while studying Zhang Ruochen's expression.

Clearly, if Zhang Ruochen had a nervous expression, he would probably double or triple the price he had in mind.

“Take me to see it,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly. “If the Unfounded Pearl really is as miraculous as people say, I won’t mind buying it to play with.”

Arhat Jingtai was a bit disappointed. He felt that Zhang Ruochen was a rich Supreme Saint’s descendant and probably only came to see the Unfounded Pearl because he heard of its miracle powers.

If he stated too high of a price, he’d probably scare Zhang Ruochen away.

After all, only cultivators who desperately needed the Unfounded Pearl would buy it for a high price. Usually, no one would ask about it for years.

Arhat Jingtai obviously didn’t reveal what he was thinking inside. While leading Zhang Ruochen in, he explained, “The Unfounded Pearl is a Bodhisattva level item. It’s a pearl made from the unfounded thoughts that you want to rid from your mind.

“If you wear the Unfounded Pearl, your unfounded thoughts will be automatically absorbed into the pearl and you can maintain a clear and pure saintly heart. A cultivator tormented by demonic thoughts will quickly become safe after wearing the Unfounded Pearl.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled without commenting. “How much is it?” he asked.

“Something created by a Bodhisattva is priceless,” Arhat Jingtai said seriously. “It’ll be at least 30 million saint stones.”

Zhang Ruochen fell silent and didn’t continue to ask.

After coming to a treasure room, Arhat Jingtai took out the Unfounded Pearl and placed it in Zhang Ruochen’s hand.

It was the size of a marble, but it was very colorful. It seemed to be made out of various colors and looked quite multifarious.

Merely thoughts could condense into such a pearl. One must admit that Bodhisattvas were quite powerful.

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen returned the Unfounded Pearl to Arhat Jingtai. Chuckling, he said, "If it can only chase away heart demons and absorb unwanted thoughts, then I can choose another treasure. Those won't be more than one million saint stones. Why should I buy the 30-million-saint-stone Unfounded Pearl?"

With that, Zhang Ruochen started walking out with his hands behind his back.

"Wait," Arhat Jingtai quickly called out to stop him. "The Unfounded Pearl is worth 30 million saint stones. Clearly, it has other powers. Actually, it's also a Spiritual Power saint weapon."

"It's not like I've never seen Spiritual Power saint weapons before."

Zhang Ruochen acted like he didn't care, but he still halted.

Holding the Unfounded Pearl, Arhat Jingtai stood before Zhang Ruochen and smiled. "Not only can the Unfounded Pearl activate Spiritual Power attacks, it can also activate Spiritual Power defenses.

"If you stimulate the Unfounded Pearl with Spiritual Power, the unfounded thoughts will fly out of it and into the enemy's body, disrupting their mind. It can attack one person or an entire group.

"When activating its defensive powers, the Unfounded Pearl can block more than half of the opponent's Spiritual Power attacks, as long as they're not Supreme Saints."

Zhang Ruochen thought of the Yin Yang Mirror.

That mirror was like a Spiritual Power detection method. If he used Spiritual Power defenses to block half of the mirror's power, then it would be much easier to sneak into the Yin and Yang Palace.

"It seems like the Unfounded Pearl is quite a nice treasure," Zhang Ruochen said. "But the price..."

"The price can be discussed," Arhat Jingtai said with a smile.

"Ten million saint stones," Zhang Ruochen said.

Arhat Jingtai quickly shook his head back and forth. “No, no way. The lowest I’ll go is 25 million saint stones. That’s my bottom line.”

Next, Zhang Ruochen and Arhat Jingtai bargained for a long time. Finally, they agreed on 15 million saint stones.

Evidently, even a Buddhist Arhat didn’t have bottom lines.

After the exchange, Arhat Jingtai kept sighing. “Sir, you really took advantage of me this time.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t believe that Arhat Jingtai would sell the Unfounded Pearl at a loss, but it was indeed an incredible treasure. It could actually defend against Spiritual Power attacks.

This was why Zhang Ruochen didn’t feel like he’d been cheated even though he spent 15 million saint stones.

“Earlier, while bargaining with you,” Arhat Jingtai continued, “you claimed that you wished to buy other treasures from the Western Buddhist Field. You weren’t lying, right?”

“Of course not,” Zhang Ruochen said seriously. “I wish to buy defensive and offensive rune scrolls.”

Rune scrolls were very expensive. Knowing that he had another chance to make saint stones, Arhat Jingtai smiled pleasantly. “Come, follow me to the rune technique palace.”

Arriving at the palace, he brought Zhang Ruochen directly to the second level. “The rune scrolls in the first level are for Saints,” he said. “I believe you wouldn’t want them. The rune scrolls on the second floor are for Saint Kings. Each one is worth cities and the average cultivator won’t be able to afford it.”

After entering the second floor, Zhang Ruochen noticed sensitively that there were many formations. If he forcefully took a rune scroll, he would immediately get attacked by the formations.

He walked near the center of the second floor and saw a wooden tablet with Sanskrit words written on it. “Defensive rune scroll, Pagoda Rune.”

“The Pagoda Rune is one of the most popular defensive rune scrolls of the Western Buddhist Field.”

Arhat Jingtai followed him over. He extended a hand and pressed on the wooden tablet. Buddhist Qi poured out of his palm.

Poof!

The formation was opened and a rectangular jade shelf appeared behind the tablet.

There were seven golden scrolls on the shelf. Each one was three inches long. There was a pagoda drawn on each scroll and they were surrounded by Buddhist words.

Each scroll differed in the amount of levels the pagoda had. The light that shone from the scrolls had different densities too.

Arhat Jingtai introduced them to Zhang Ruochen. “This is a first level Pagoda Rune. It can stop a first step Saint King’s attack and be used multiple times until it shatters.

“A second level Pagoda Rune can stop a second step Saint King’s attack...

“A seventh level Pagoda Rune can stop a seventh step Saint King’s attack and be used multiple times.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes stopped on the seventh level Pagoda Rune. He was very interested. “How much does one cost?”

Arhat Jingtai instantly smiled his trademark smile with crinkled eyes. “Forty million saint stones. No bargaining.”

How much was 40 million saint stones?

Many Saint Kings who’d lived for more than 1,000 years wouldn’t be able to produce ten million saint stones at once. Forty million saint stones was enough for you to ask a ninth step Saint King to do something for you.

“It’s this expensive? No wonder most cultivators don’t have high-level defensive runes. Even a Deity might not be able to spend 40 million saint stones.”

After buying the Unfounded Pearl, he only had ten million saint stones left. How could he afford a seventh step Pagoda Rune now?

Arhat Jingtai could obviously tell that Zhang Ruochen couldn't afford it, so he started explaining how much the other Pagoda Runes cost.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen realized that even if he spent all his saint stones, he could only afford a fourth level Pagoda Rune and stop a fourth step Saint King.

He didn't buy it immediately. Instead, he had Arhat Jingtai show him some offensive rune scrolls.

“The Light-burning Rune is a one-time rune scroll. After activating it, it's comparable to a third step Saint King's full power attack. It costs four million saint stones.

“The Buddhist Light Rune is also a one-time rune scroll. Once activated, it's comparable to a fourth step Saint King's full power attack. It costs ten million saint stones.”

...

The more Zhang Ruochen saw, the more numb he felt. These runes were quite powerful but...too expensive!

Just imagine. He could pay all his savings but only receive one rune scroll. This was enough to stop countless Saint Kings.

Thinking back, he'd really profited from getting Gu Songzi to make those three Tiangang Purple Fire Runes for him!

After all, those were comparable to the Buddhist Light Rune and each one should cost ten million saint stones. Using one rune scroll was like spending an entire treasury. Millions of saint stones would turn to ashes at once.

Zhang Ruochen thought of the two Tiangang Purple Fire Runes that he'd used already and wanted to cut his hands off. He'd been so wasteful!

No wonder a rune master is of equal status with a Supreme Saint. I finally understand why now... I must be lifelong friends with Gu Songzi.

Thankfully, Gu Songzi was stuck in the Shatuo Heavenly Domain and was too poor to buy materials for making rune scrolls. If he was as rich as other rune masters, it wouldn't be so easy for Zhang Ruochen to ask him to make rune scrolls.

Seeing how Zhang Ruochen wasn't replying, Arhat Jingtai asked, "Sir, which rune scroll would you like to buy?"

After a pause, Zhang Ruochen finally said, "I have limited saint stones with me, but I recently received a rules saint weapon. Could you appraise it and see how many saint stones it can be exchanged for?"

With that, Zhang Ruochen took out a tripod-shaped rules saint weapon and handed it over.

Someone would actually sell a rules saint weapon?

Arhat Jingtai was taken aback. Then he quickly accepted the small tripod and started studying it to see what grade it was.

Chapter 1594 - Blackie Arrived

Chapter 1594: Blackie Arrived

“It’s a fifth-grade rules saint weapon left by a fifth-step saint king. It’s a rare treasure!”

Jingtai Arhat was thrilled. He thought for a while and said, “I can pay you thirty million saint stones for it. Do we have a deal?”

Thirty million saint stones was a reasonable price, but seeing how much Jingtai Arhat loved the saint weapon, Zhang Ruochen decided to raise the price.

Rules saint weapons were like Honghua Vines; there was no official market for them. They could only be spotted in auction, and a fifth-grade rules saint weapon would be worth way more than thirty million saint stones.

Normally, a fifth-grade rules saint weapon was worth thirty million saint stones.

After a bargain, Zhang Ruochen sold the fifth-grade rules saint weapon for thirty-four million saint stones.

Without hesitation, Zhang Ruochen bought a seventh-grade Pagoda Rune with forty million saint stones.

Jingtai Arhat handed the seventh-grade Pagoda Rune to Zhang Ruochen and said, “You can only use the seventh-grade Pagoda Rune ten times. Every time you use it, it’ll form a seventh-grade Pagoda Tower which can ward off the attacks from a seventh-step saint king, but it’ll only last for three breaths of time.

“You need to wait for an hour to use it again. If you use it again within an hour, it can still form a tower-shaped defense, but it’ll harm the rune significantly, after which you’ll probably only be able to use it five times.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that he needed to use the seventh-grade Pagoda Rune reasonably. After all, he basically spent hundreds of saint stones every time he used it.

“Do you want to buy some attack-type runes?” Jingtai Arhat asked with a smiley face.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a while and said, “Are there any cheap attack-type runes? A rune that can rival the full-strength attack of a second-step saint king.”

“Of course, we have that.”

Jingtai Arhat recommended Zhang Ruochen look at a rune called ‘King Kong Demon-Taming Rune,’ which can form a King Kong Demon-Taming Mallet, rivaling the full-strength attack of a second-step saint king.

It was also very cheap, worth only one million saint stones.

“I’ll buy it!”

Zhang Ruochen looked pleased. He spent all the four million saint stones he had on four King Kong Demon-Taming Runes.

Once ‘All Lives Equal’ was enacted, all the monks’ cultivation would be suppressed to half-step saint king, where Zhang Ruochen was now.

Even the strongest ones on the ‘Saints Merits Rank’ could only show power at second-step saint king.

King Kong Demon-Taming Runes were strong enough to kill his enemies, or to break out of an encirclement. He didn’t need to spend so many saint stones on Lamp-Lighting Rune and Buddhist Light Rune, and also, Zhang Ruochen didn’t have that many saint stones to spend.

Zhang Ruochen bought a lot of products, so Jingtai Arhat gave him a gift before he left the saint shop.

Frozen Rune.

The rune could freeze his enemy completely, which sounded good, but it only worked on monks under saint kings.

It was almost useless to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen infused it with saint Qi.

Whoosh!

The Frozen Rune shrunk to the size of rice, hiding under the fingernail of Zhang Ruochen's index finger.

"If I give it to other saints, it can be a treasure for ambush."

Zhang Ruochen looked at his fingernail, stopped smiling and thought, After 'All Lives Equal', all the monk's cultivation will be under saint kings. Can Frozen Rune freeze those saint kings after that?

Zhang Ruochen really wanted to test it. If it worked, Frozen Rune would be worth more than King Kong Demon-Taming Rune during a battle.

However, it was impossible to have a trial fight with a saint king with his cultivation being suppressed as a half-step saint king.

It seemed there was no chance for him to test it.

Zhang Ruochen could never test the Frozen Rune during a battle, otherwise his enemy could kill him if it failed.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the saint shop, sighed and forced a smile.

"I meant to have eighteen million saint stones to buy Six Desires Ancient Pill to improve my mind power to level fifty-six. Can't believe I've spent all of them so soon."

The side effects of Joy and Anger Pill hadn't gone yet, so he couldn't take Six Desires Ancient Pill. Otherwise, he would've spent the saint stones on it to improve his mind power.

Gradually, Zhang Ruochen thought, Yin and Yang Palace is a treasury, and once I conquer it, I'll have as many saint stones as I want.

Zhang Ruochen didn't go back to Hundred Flower Palace. Instead, he chose a dojo beside Yin and Yang Palace to crash.

On the morning of the second day, Ji Fanxin came to the dojo and found Zhang Ruochen. She gave him all the information

she had on the evil-way monks from Yin and Yang Palace, but he didn't know how she'd found that information.

It took Zhang Ruochen only fifteen minutes to finish all the books. He closed his eyes, and he could see those monks from the evil way, some of them looked ferocious, some of them were smiling sneakily and some looked seductive.

Zhang Ruochen looked serious, as if he was thinking about something.

Ji Fanxin stood beside the windows, looking at Yin and Yang Palace from afar, and said, "You've finished reading all the information about Yin and Yang Palace. Are you still going to attack Yin and Yang Palace now?"

"It's be very dangerous for me to attack Yin and Yang Palace, but I need to go inspect it myself to decide whether I'll do it or not."

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen looked at the index finger of his left hand and smiled. "I've gained a Frozen Rune recently, and I want to test it. Can you help me with it?"

"How?" asked Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen then told her what he was thinking of.

Ji Fanxin looked more serious and asked, "Why do you want to freeze me?"

"No, I just want to test..."

"Don't even think about it."

Ji Fanxin stopped Zhang Ruochen from talking. "I reckon you should think about how to break the formation in Yin and Yang Palace. If you can't solve that problem, you're committing suicide if you go attack Yin and Yang Palace."

Just as Zhang Ruochen was thinking, he heard a shrill voice. "It isn't a question. Now that I'm in Heavenly Capital Saint Market, I'll handle all the demons."

A black owl flew to the window and spoke arrogantly.

Ji Fanxin's meeting with Zhang Ruochen was a top secret, and no monks could know about it. Otherwise, it'd bring trouble to

Hundred Flower Palace, even Thousand Pistil Field.

Ji Fanxin was dazed, noticing that an owl had heard their conversation. She formed a pink pedal using her fingers and wielded it.

Bang!

That owl screamed in pain and fell off the tree.

“Don’t attack it. I called that bird here.”

Ji Fanxin didn’t hear that until she had already attacked Blackie.

Ji Fanxin was a very decisive person, and she attacked faster than the speed of sound.

“Your bird?” asked Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen felt a bit awkward. He dry-coughed and said, “It’s my help.”

Ji Fanxin also felt there was a pun in that sentence. She turned around and thought, Why did he raise a bird.

Ji Fanxin then frowned and asked, “Why didn’t you tell me earlier? That bird might’ve been killed by my attack already. Don’t blame me for...”

“Ah! It hurts so bad, Zhang Ruochen. Where do you know this girl from? She’s so cruel!”

That owl stumbled across the door and sat down across from Zhang Ruochen.

However, it wasn’t injured at all.

Which was to Ji Fanxin’s surprise, so she immediately turned around and looked at that owl. Yet she couldn’t figure out that bird’s cultivation with her mind power.

“Let me introduce you. This is Ji Fanxin, the renowned Hundred Flower Fairy, and this is an Immortal Bird, called Blackie...” said Zhang Ruochen.

Blackie didn’t like the name ‘Blackie’ at all. It immediately corrected him. “Don’t listen to him. I’m Massacre Emperor.”

Hearing the term 'Immortal Bird', Ji Fanxin's eyes glinted as she was pondering something.

"Now that Blackie's here, I can go inspect Yin and Yang Palace with it now." Zhang Ruochen didn't want to wait.

Ji Fanxin said, "I'll go with you guys."

"You? Going to Yin and Yang Palace?" Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

Ji Fanxin took out a Falsehood Bead and held it in her palm, she asked, "Why can't I?"

"Didn't you say I wouldn't stand a chance? I thought you're not going to risk it with me, and besides, you know what Yin and Yang Palace is like. Aren't you afraid you'll be offended by that?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Ji Fanxin had bought a Falsehood Bead, which meant she'd prepared to go to Yin and Yang Palace.

Zhang Ruochen had a much better impression of Ji Fanxin now; at least she wasn't using Zhang Ruochen for the risk.

Ji Fanxin shot Zhang Ruochen a glare and said, "Do you really think you're the only one in Truth Heavenly Domain who has the guts to go attack Yin and Yang Palace? You're really underestimating all the heroes in the world."

She then said, "I reckon you don't camouflage yourself as Shang Feng if you're really heading to Yin and Yang Palace, because there're definitely some great beings from the evil way who're close to Shang Feng. They're definitely smart enough to tell the flaws in your disguise."

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "I don't mind it that much. I can just turn into any man I want, but I do wonder...are you turning into a man as well, Hundred Flower Fairy?"

Ji Fanxin was also proficient in a transformation technique, but she was also reluctant to become someone of a different gender, and that was the reason why she still hadn't gone into Yin and Yang Palace to inspect it yet.

Blackie sneered, "Do you want to become a cat?"

Ji Fanxin formed a pedal with her fingers again, and Blackie was so scared that it closed its mouth and shrank into itself.

Ji Fanxin looked to Zhang Ruochen with her starry eyes and said, “Not just men can enter Yin and Yang Palace. I can pretend to be your maiden and follow you in.”

“I reckon it’s okay for a maiden to enter Yin and Yang Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen stroked his chin, smiled and said, “I guess you have to put up with it now.”

Ji Fanxin wanted to enter Yin and Yang Palace because she wanted to go look for a senior sister she was close with. When Ji Fanxin still had primitive cultivation, she helped Ji Fanxin a lot, and they were close like real sisters.

However, that senior sister went missing in Truth Heavenly Domain a couple of months ago, so Ji Fanxin suspected that her senior sister was captured by the creatures from Yin and Yang Palace and held captive.

Ji Fanxin definitely needed to go in to search for her because of that, and it seemed the only one who could help her was Zhang Ruochen.

She didn’t have any other choice.

Chapter 1595 - Euphoria Underground Palace

Chapter 1595: Euphoria Underground Palace

Ji Fanxin didn't hide it from Zhang Ruochen. She told him about going to the Yin and Yang Palace to find her senior sister.

That was her most important goal. Saving the other prides of the Thousand Pistil Field was the second goal.

Going into the Yin and Yang Palace to investigate is still very dangerous. If I go with someone as strong as Ji Fanxin, I'll be able to escape even if we're exposed. It'll be much better than going by myself.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen agreed to Ji Fanxin's conditions. They would cooperate temporarily and help each other.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen's figure wavered and turned into a tall silver-haired man with a pair of dragon horns and a mask. His robe had been chosen carefully. It was a flying dragon saint robe.

Ji Fanxin, on the other hand, became extremely ugly and weak. Her skin was dark yellow and she also wore a mask. She followed closely behind Zhang Ruochen.

The two walked toward the Yin and Yang Palace's gates one after another.

Walking under the Yin Yang Mirror, Zhang Ruochen felt strong Spiritual Power flood toward him. However, half of it was stopped by the Unfounded Pearl. The remaining Spiritual Power wasn't enough to see through his Traceless 36 Changes.

After entering the Yin and Yang Palace safely, Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin were both relieved.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took out the Mercury Gourd and released Blackie.

“It’s only a few formations. Leave it to me.”

Blackie was very fast. He flew into the darkness as a dark shadow and vanished quickly.

“How did you bring that Immortal Bird in? Spatial treasure?” Ji Fanxin asked Zhang Ruochen with Spiritual Power.

Zhang Ruochen obviously wouldn’t tell her about something like the Mercury Gourd. After all, they hadn’t known each other for too long. He couldn’t reveal all his hidden cards.

“So what if I have a spatial treasure?” Zhang Ruochen answered vaguely. “Would you want to go in?”

“Of course not.”

Ji Fanxin would rather disguise herself as Zhang Ruochen’s servant than go into the spatial treasure and have him bring her into the Yin and Yang Palace. What if Zhang Ruochen trapped her in there?

In the end, Ji Fanxin was also guarded against Zhang Ruochen.

There was no day or night in the Yin and Yang Palace. After walking in, the sky above was hidden with heavy demonic clouds and no shred of light could be seen.

In the dojo created by the Moon Goddess, there were many pavilions, pagodas, flowers, and tall lover trees. Many spiritual lanterns were dispersed throughout. The dim light made everything look dreamy.

There were quite a lot of cultivators here. Most wore masks or bamboo hats like Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin.

Of course, some who didn’t seem to care about their reputations walked in boldly and strode toward the pavilions and pagodas. They seemed to be regulars.

An Absolute Saint in gray clothing noticed Zhang Ruochen. After studying Zhang Ruochen for a long time, he finally walked over and smiled. “Lord, it’s your first time at the Yin and Yang Palace, right?”

“Indeed,” Zhang Ruochen said. “And you are?”

The gray-robed man cupped his hands in greeting. “I am Chang Fengxu, a cultivator of the Black Demon Field. I am a receptionist here. How may I help you?”

Zhang Ruochen put on a cold and proud expression. “Before coming to the Truth Heavenly Domain, I heard from some senior brothers that the Yin and Yang Palace is a rare paradise, so I wanted to come see.”

Chang Fengxu guessed that Zhang Ruochen was the descendant of some dragon Supreme Saint and had a high status. Smiling, he said, “I’m not bragging, but you won’t be able to find many places like the Yin and Yang Palace in the entire Heaven Field. But would you like to buy a clean slave or just play around?”

“What kind of play?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Not only does the Yin and Yang Palace have Wine and Flesh, we also have the Euphoria Underground Palace. Each has a different kind of play...”

Then Chang Fengxu started describing it to Zhang Ruochen in detail. Some of his words were so vulgar and dirty that even Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brows.

The “ugly girl” Ji Fanxin standing behind him tried hard to control her emotions, but Zhang Ruochen could sense that her breathing quickened. Cold Qi spread from her.

Chang Fengxu was very smart and sensed something wrong. He glanced at Ji Fanxin and smiled meaningfully. “Lord, your servant seems easily embarrassed. You shouldn’t have brought her here.”

“Just a little girl,” Zhang Ruochen said. “How can she bear the things you’re saying? It’s normal for her to be embarrassed.”

Chang Fengxu was still suspicious. “Why do I feel like she’s not a little girl? Judging from her eyes, she seems unhappy with you. Lord, a servant like that needs to be punished and trained.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t dare to punish Ji Fanxin, but he still had to put up the act. Eyes turning cold, he glared at Ji Fanxin

and uttered, “Why are you standing so far from me? Do you want me to sell you to the Yin and Yang Palace?”

Ji Fanxin thought that Zhang Ruochen was being reckless and ground her teeth in anger, but she still forced it down. Taking small steps, she walked to Zhang Ruochen’s side with a lowered head as if she’d gotten scolded.

Zhang Ruochen knew how strong Ji Fanxin was, so he didn’t continue to reprimand her. Instead, he said to Chang Fengxu, “Do you know my status? Why would I play with the leftovers from others? Take me to the Euphoria Underground Palace. I wish to buy some pretty Saint slaves.”

“You must be an esteemed guest to qualify to enter.”

“How do I become an esteemed guest?”

“If you pay one million saint stones, you can purchase the esteemed guest status,” Chang Fengxu said.

Zhang Ruochen only had a few thousand saint stones left. How could he produce one million?

Suddenly, he got an idea. He looked at Ji Fanxin and said, “Xin’er, I left my saint stones with you. Take one million out immediately.

Ji Fanxin was still pretending to be timid. She lowered her head and stared at the ground, but she’d already beaten Zhang Ruochen up many times in her mind. When she suddenly heard the nickname “Xin’er,” she was even more furious.

Her calm heart almost broke down.

“You can’t even afford one million saint stones?” Ji Fanxin asked with Spiritual Power, clenching her teeth.

“Nonsense,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I’m helping you find people. It should be you who pays.”

Ji Fanxin worked to squeeze out a smile. She took out a storage bag and handed it to Zhang Ruochen. “Lord, here are the saint stones that you need. They’re all inside.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded in satisfaction and checked the storage bag. There were indeed one million saint stones. He tied it up

again and tossed it to Chang Fengxu.

“Congratulations on becoming an esteemed guest of the Yin and Yang Palace. Please accept this Yin Yang Badge.”

Chang Fengxu finally smiled comfortably after taking the saint stones. He handed a metal badge to Zhang Ruochen and led him and Ji Fanxin toward the Euphoria Underground Palace.

Along the way, Zhang Ruochen sent a beam of Spiritual Power to secretly check the structures, formations, Evil Way cultivators’ auras, and position of fatal tactics in the Yin and Yang Palace.

It was alright if he didn’t check. But after checking, he was instantly shocked.

There were ten large pavilions in the dojo. Each one had a strong Saint King aura. There was a formation around each formation with densely-packed formation runes interweaving on the surface.

In addition, Zhang Ruochen also discovered that the dark clouds overhead hid many Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. They were activated by formations, so they clearly weren’t one or two Yao weapons. They were probably terrifying. Any cultivator who dared to cause trouble here would be killed instantly.

The Yin and Yang Palace isn’t just a place for finding pleasure. It’s a fatal place. If these killing mechanisms are all activated, probably even Ji Fanxin will get killed.

Zhang Ruochen was terrified. He worked hard to calculate how he could avoid these fatal mechanisms if he really wanted to attack the Yin and Yang Palace.

There should be some safer places. After all, the Evil Way cultivators would be worried about getting hurt too.

Ji Fanxin clearly discovered these features too. Her eyes grew serious and she became more careful.

A while later, they reached the entrance of the Euphoria Underground Palace.

There was a man with a dark face guarding the entrance. He was a half-step Saint King.

The man sat cross-legged on the ground and was cultivating. Strands of Divine Fire Jingmie snaked around his body, going between the 144 apertures.

He's actually using Divine Fire Jingmie to refine his apertures. All 144 can withstand the fire too. He's probably not any weaker than me.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked inside. Then he studied the man and quickly realized his identity. He must be Qing Liaoya, 73 on the Saints Merits Rank.

Chang Fengxu bowed respectfully toward the man. "Senior Brother Qing, an esteemed guest wishes to go to the Euphoria Underground Palace. Can you please open the door?"

Qing Liaoya looked up. Scanning Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin with a pair of fiery eyes, he laughed. "You have such an ugly woman with you. No wonder you came to the Yin and Yang Palace."

He can see through our masks, Zhang Ruochen thought. As expected of Qing Liaoya. He's quite powerful.

Qing Liaoya pressed down on the jade stone beside him and the underground palace's gates opened. Chang Fengxu, Zhang Ruochen, and Ji Fanxin walked inside.

Thud!

The heavy stone gates closed again.

Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin were shocked. They both looked back hurriedly.

Zhang Ruochen even attacked like lightning and slammed a palm on the stone door. Rings of energy waves rippled on the surface, forcing Zhang Ruochen back a dozen steps.

Chang Fengxu chuckled. "Lord, no need to panic. The stone door must be closed for safety concerns. If an accident happens, no one will be able to afford the consequences."

“There are so many strong cultivators here,” Zhang Ruochen said. “How can there be accidents?”

“There are some very powerful girls imprisoned in the Euphoria Underground Palace,” Chang Fengxu said. “Some are even in the Saint King Realm. If they escape, they’ll definitely cause a ruckus. This is why we added the stone door and put down formations. Even a seventh step Saint King shouldn’t dream about breaking through the door.”

“There are Saint Kings imprisoned here?” Zhang Ruochen was taken aback.

“Of course. And more than one. This is the Yin and Yang Palace, after all. As long as you can afford the saint stones, you’ll definitely see a new world, haha.”

Chang Fengxu led Zhang Ruochen across stone steps and toward the heart of the Euphoria Underground Palace.

Chapter 1596 - : Queen Lian

Chapter 1596: Queen Lian

There were creatures of all races captured in Bliss Dungeon, including all the talented females from all the large fields. Each of them was pretty-looking, and even the weakest of them were half saints.

Some of them were held in iron cages, while some were held in prisons. They were presented like products for guests to choose.

Outside each of the iron cages and prisons a jade token was inlaid, which recorded the information of all the talented women, age, race, identity, cultivation, body constitution and so on.

Zhang Ruochen followed Chang Fengxu and walked past all the iron cages and prisons, and he noticed a blood-red slave mark on all their foreheads which sealed saint Qi and cultivation.

They all looked dead inside and would only look hostile when they saw Zhang Ruochen and Chang Fengxu.

They used to be the females of their times. Some were the princesses of an empire, some were saintesses of an ancient sect, and some were daughters of supreme saints. Many monks pursued them and regarded them as Goddesses, but now, they were only menial slaves.

One could only imagine how resentful, angry, and desperate they were.

Zhang Ruochen sighed inside, but he forced a smile and said, "They're full of grievances, aren't they?"

"So what? With the slave mark, all their cultivation and power is sealed, so they can't even kill themselves. They're under complete control of slave masters." Chang Fengxu smiled.

Hearing the name 'Slave Master,' the females in the prisons around Chang Fengxu all shivered, looking scared.

Ji Fanxin walking behind Zhang Ruochen couldn't look more solemn, and she only got more and more belligerent as she walked past all the female slaves. She'd seen seven talented females from Thousand Pistil Field.

As the leader of the generation from Thousand Pistil Field, Ji Fanxin wanted to save them from everything.

"Calm down. Don't expose yourself. The formation sealing the dungeon is very powerful, even you with your cultivation can't break it." Zhang Ruochen transmitted his voice to Ji Fanxin, as he worried that Ji Fanxin couldn't control her emotions.

Walking deeper into the dungeon, Zhang Ruochen finally saw a talented female who was a saint king, trapped in a tower-shaped building.

Her information was outside the tower-shaped building. "Ruler Field, Queen of Snake Race, Queen Qingluo. She's refined for twelve hundred years, and she's a third-step saint king, worth forty million saint stones."

That queen of the Snake Race had a human head and a snake body, with a slave mark on her forehead.

Zhang Ruochen then noticed Ji Fanxin had gone to another tower-shaped building by herself.

That fairy is such a headache. Doesn't she know she's supposed to be my maiden, yet she isn't even following me around. Isn't she worried that she'll be noticed by the powerful beings from Yin and Yang Palace?

Zhang Ruochen immediately followed Ji Fanxin, shot her a glare and said, "Do you want to kill us both?"

Ji Fanxin stood outside a tower-shaped building without moving at all. It seemed she didn't hear the voice transmission from Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen noticed something unusual, so he looked to the tower-shaped building.

There was a saint-king female held inside, and she was bound by a crimson iron chain. He couldn't see her face because she was lying on the ground.

However, her information was recorded outside the tower-shaped building.

“Thousand Pistil Field, an emperor daughter from Peony Clan. Danling King, a fourth-step saint king.”

Is she Ji Fanxin's senior sister?

Zhang Ruochen saw Ji Fanxin's fingers glowing with saint light as that thought came into his mind. She was about to attack the tower-shaped building.

Nobody would be able to control their emotions seeing someone close beings tortured like that. She wanted to save her.

“No.”

Zhang Ruochen noticed Chang Fengxu was walking toward her direction, so he grabbed Ji Fanxin's hand and dragged her in his arms, with one hand pressing on her back.

Ji Fanxin would've never expected Zhang Ruochen to be so bold that he touched her, and even grabbed her tightly.

This was preposterous!

Just as Ji Fanxin was about to struggle out of Zhang Ruochen's grasp, she heard Chang Fengxu's voice. “Are you interested in that emperor daughter from Peony Clan, Mister?”

There was another person following Chang Fengxu.

They were only ten steps away from Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin.

Ji Fanxin was shocked. She immediately regained her rationality, retracted her saint Qi and let Zhang Ruochen hug her.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen was built enough to cover her completely, so the other two didn't notice anything strange.

“I warn you... Don’t be so reckless, otherwise you’ll regret it when we get out.” Ji Fanxin acquiesced and leaned on Zhang Ruochen’s chest.

Zhang Ruochen held her waist, turned around and stared at Chang Fengxu with a smile. He asked, “This emperor daughter doesn’t have a price yet, does she?”

Chang Fengxu said, “That girl refined with Datura Flower Goddess before. She has tremendous mind power, so even with the slave mark, we still can’t suppress her completely. We’re now frittering away her willpower, and will only sell her after the slave mark can completely control her.”

“Ahh...”

The emperor daughter in the tower made a blood-curdling scream.

Everyone looked to the building.

That emperor daughter whose hands and feet were bound had woken. However, the second she moved a single muscle, the iron chain released a great amount of flames and lightning, hitting her body.

That emperor daughter from Peony Clan screamed in agony and passed out again.

Such a torture would crush even a saint king. All her willpower and drive would wither away, and in the end, she would be rendered nothing but a product, a slave.

Zhang Ruochen noticed that Ji Fanxin was shaking, and she was about to tear up.

She was Hundred Flower Fairy who was always regal and divine. She’d been living in a fantasy forever, and she had always been praised. Everyone she met was a monk who adored her, so this was the first time she saw something so evil.

Actually, Yin and Yang Palace was crueler than she imagined.

There was a man in gold standing beside Chang Fengxu. “A saint king who’s become a walking dead person is no fun. I’m interested in that emperor daughter as well. Name your price!”

Chang Fengxu looked conflicted. He said, “I can’t make a decision. Let me tell Her majesty, Queen Lian.”

Chang Fengxu walked to the bottom level of Bliss Dungeon. Zhang Ruochen, Ji Fanxin, and the man in gold stayed outside the tower-shaped building.

The man in gold was wearing a mask, and he had treasures that covered his forces and cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t tell his cultivation, but he could sense that he was definitely a saint king.

“Are you also interested in that emperor daughter from Peony Clan?” The man in gold stared at Zhang Ruochen and smiled disdainfully.

Zhang Ruochen said, “She’s a pretty slave, also a saint king. Of course I’m interested in someone I can’t buy somewhere else.”

The man in gold was irritated. He said, “I suggest you not compete against me. I’m better than you, in both wealth and power.”

“Haha.”

Zhang Ruochen rarely met someone so reckless. He sneered without arguing back.

However, Zhang Ruochen felt that the man in gold looked kind of familiar when he looked at him. Had he met that man before?

After a short while, Bliss Dungeon became extremely cold. Even Zhang Ruochen shivered.

To his surprise, a beautiful and seductive woman showed up near him, and she was almost as pretty as Ji Fanxin.

Even the man in gold didn’t notice that bewitching woman, so he was startled and couldn’t help stepping back.

“Queen Lian,” said the man in gold with respect.

Was she one of the leaders in Yin and Yang Field, Queen Lian?

Zhang Ruochen looked at her, yet that Queen Lian didn't look extraordinary in any way, except her ethereal appearance. She didn't have powerful saint might, nor did she have overbearing eyes. She looked like an enchanting girl with no power.

Many men would go try to get her if they didn't know her identity.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he was intimidated by her, so he was on guard the whole time.

If he tried to make a move, he would be annihilated instantly.

However, Queen Lian seemed interested in Zhang Ruochen. She kept staring at him with her green eyes after arriving, which scared Zhang Ruochen. He wondered whether she had seen through his disguise or not.

After a long while, Queen Lian looked to the man in gold and said, "You've been our customer for a long time. I'll give you a reasonable price, sixty million saint stones."

This was a huge price. Not even a ninth-step saint king could easily afford that.

It was out of the man's budget, so he hesitated.

Ji Fanxin pinched Zhang Ruochen's waist with full strength as if she was about to tear his flesh off.

Zhang Ruochen said with pain, "I'll pay for it!"

Chapter 1597 - : Feeding Demon With Body

Chapter 1597: Feeding Demon With Body

Queen Lian, the golden-robed man, and Chang Fengxu were all shocked. They all looked over at Zhang Ruochen.

Not everyone was able to shell out 60 million saint stones.

Zhang Ruochen obviously didn't have 60 million saint stones, but this wasn't his problem.

He looked over at Ji Fanxin and said, "Xin'er, take it out!"

This time, Ji Fanxin didn't have any objections. She touched her spatial bracelet. Light flashed and a delicate box appeared in her hands. She handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

He obviously wouldn't think that 60 million saint stones fit in that box, nor would he think that Ji Fanxin would carry so many saint stones with her.

This must be a priceless treasure.

Six Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon, Water Moon Saint Goblet.

Ji Fanxin's gentle voice sounded in Zhang Ruochen's ears.

Zhang Ruochen was slightly shocked. Ji Fanxin was willing to take out something like a Six Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon to save her senior sister. She was so selfless.

If she wasn't desperate to save her senior sister, how could she give something like the Water Moon Saint Goblet to the Yin and Yang Palace?

Taking the box, Zhang Ruochen pressed on the surface and broke the layer of light seals. After opening the box, dazzling light shone out immediately, illuminating the Euphoria Underground Palace like the sun.

Queen Lian and the golden-robed man both had great vision, so they recognized it immediately. “A Six Yao Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon,” they said in unison.

“Okay, deal.” Queen Lian agreed without even thinking.

After all, with her status, she only had one Five Yao weapon. She’d used up all her savings to buy it too.

If she could receive this Six Yao weapon—Water Moon Saint Goblet—then she would become more powerful.

“Wait.” The golden-robed man seemed to have made an extremely important decision. He took out a box too and said, “I had my eyes on the lady from the Peony Race first. She should be mine. I have a heaven grade divine pill here, Bodhi Asking Buddha Pill. It’s not any weaker than the Six Yao weapon.”

“A heaven divine pill?”

All of the cultivators present were tempted.

After all, even a Supreme Saint would be tempted by a heaven divine pill, so it was much more shocking for a Saint and Saint King.

He can even produce a heaven divine pill. Who exactly is he?

Zhang Ruochen had never seen a heaven divine pill before, so he was slightly excited.

The Fairy Extreme King had once mentioned the Seven Emotions Ancient Pill, a heaven divine pill. Apparently, that pill had very strong offensive abilities. Any creature that was within 300 miles would be attacked with Spiritual Power.

The Bodhi Asking Buddha Pill was at the same level, so it must be very powerful too.

Queen Lian clearly knew how valuable the pill was. It was even more expensive than the Six Yao weapon, so she chuckled. “Are you truly willing to use the heaven divine pill to buy that Peony Race lady?”

“No, I’m only keeping the Bodhi Asking Buddha Pill at the Yin and Yang Palace temporarily. If you give me one month’s

time, I'll return with 60 million saint stones and exchange for the pill.”

The golden-robed man would never use the Bodhi Asking Buddha Pill to buy a slave. Even he would have trouble getting a second one.

Disappointment colored Queen Lian's eyes. Laughing, she said, “So you're only keeping it here temporarily? I thought you would actually be willing to pay with a heaven divine pill. Between 60 million saint stones and a Six Yao weapon, I'll obviously choose the latter, ha.”

She walked to Zhang Ruochen and smiled mesmerizingly at him while taking the box.

Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power seemed to have been swallowed up by some invisible power. He fell into a hallucinatory world. Only he and Queen Lian were in this world.

“No, it's a charm spell...”

Zhang Ruochen hurriedly woke up and took several steps back. He avoided Queen Lian as if she were a scorpion.

His face under the mask was covered in cold sweat. He felt his scalp going numb.

Charm spells were a type of Spiritual Power attack.

Just then, the Unfounded Pearl had blocked most of Queen Lian's charm spell, but Zhang Ruochen had almost fallen into it.

One could imagine how terrifying Queen Lian's Spiritual Power was.

Ji Fanxin knew how powerful Queen Lian was. Earlier, she saw Queen Lian release a charm spell on Zhang Ruochen, so she wanted to use Spiritual Power to help him. But before she did that, Zhang Ruochen had already cleared his mind.

He's only a half-step Saint King, but his mind is already so strong. Ji Fanxin was quite impressed.

Queen Lian was also surprised. She didn't think that the charm spell that she was so proud of couldn't even manage a half-step Saint King. Her curiosity multiplied.

"Queen Lian," Zhang Ruochen said, a bit annoyed, "are you trying to trick an esteemed guest of the Yin and Yang Palace to steal this Six Yao weapon? Aren't you afraid of ruining the palace's reputation? No one will want to come anymore."

"Little boy, I just wanted to play with you."

Queen Lian's gentle hand caressed Zhang Ruochen's chest. Her curvy frame was half-pressed onto his body.

Earlier, there was some distance between Zhang Ruochen and Queen Lian. But now that she was against him, Zhang Ruochen couldn't avoid her anymore.

He kept retreating, but Queen Lian stuck to him like a petal that couldn't be brushed off.

Sensing the huge difference in cultivation, Zhang Ruochen was naturally terrified and tense.

"Why are you so nervous? Am I that scary?"

Queen Lian's eyes were gentle, but she still grew suspicious. She felt that Zhang Ruochen's reaction wasn't normal.

He'd come to the Yin and Yang Palace and even used a Six Yao weapon to buy a slave. How come he seemed to be scared of women?

Zhang Ruochen was worried that Queen Lian would grow suspicious, so he relaxed and smiled wryly. "I'm just afraid that I'll be turned into your Yang medicine."

He'd read about Queen Lian before and knew that her cultivation technique was unique. If she continued to steal Yang Qi from men, then she could improve quickly.

Queen Lian wrapped an arm around Zhang Ruochen's neck and forced him to the wall. Fluttering her lashes, she murmured, "I don't care. You have so much Yang Qi in you. You have thousands of times more than others. What are you afraid of? Can't you give me some?"

No matter how pretty Queen Lian was, Zhang Ruochen wasn't interested in her at all. Instead, he felt disgusted and wanted to push her aside.

But if he did, he would probably be buried in the Yin and Yang Palace today.

He looked over at Ji Fanxin.

But Ji Fanxin just shook her head lightly and turned back, no longer looking at him and Queen Lian.

What? She'll let me feed the demon with my body to save her senior sister? Zhang Ruochen was speechless.

In the distance, the golden-robed man was unhappy. "Queen Lian, can't you reconsider? I can raise the price to 65 million saint stones."

"Leave," Queen Lian growled.

"What did you say?"

Fury rose in the golden-robed man's eyes and he clenched his fists tightly.

But when Queen Lian glared at him, the man's heart quivered. He realized that Queen Lian was a very terrifying figure. He relaxed his fists and left the Euphoria Underground Palace without another word.

Chang Fengxu knew that Queen Lian had her eyes on this dragon race man, so whoever disturbed her now would be in trouble.

Thus, he left the palace too and chased after the golden-robed man to apologize. After all, that man was very powerful too and couldn't be offended.

Oh no, my powerful and rich Yang Qi is fatally attractive to Queen Lian. I'll probably have to feed the demon with my body today as a compromise.

Zhang Ruochen hated Queen Lian, but he couldn't repress his emotions.

"Great, no one will bother us now! Come with me."

With alluring eyes, Queen Lian dove into Zhang Ruochen's arms and hugged his waist with an ivory arm. She led him into the depths of the palace.

Zhang Ruochen looked back at Ji Fanxin with sharp eyes.

He used his eyes to tell Ji Fanxin to start acting. With her cultivation, she could probably injure Queen Lian heavily without alerting anyone.

If they had Queen Lian as a hostage, they should be able to make it out of the Yin and Yang Palace.

Ji Fanxin lowered her head to think carefully for a moment. Finally, she had a solution. If she attacked impulsively, they would only have a 20% chance of making it out successfully.

They still hadn't undone the formation in the Yin and Yang Palace. If she attacked now, it would be suicide.

Queen Lian was also strong in Spiritual Power, so Ji Fanxin didn't send a telepathic message. Instead, she raised her head and shot a look at Zhang Ruochen, as if saying, Don't worry. Queen Lian will only take some of your Yang Qi. She won't kill you.

Seeing Ji Fanxin's eyes, Zhang Ruochen was completely despaired. He let out a long sigh.

At the bottom of the Euphoria Underground Palace, there was a Yin and Yang pool.

The two pools were the same size—both 130 feet wide—and shone with blue and red light respectively. Strands of Yin Qi and Yang Qi converged from all directions and landed in the Yin and Yang pools, liquifying constantly.

The Yin Qi and Yang Qi are coming from the top. Could it be...

Zhang Ruochen thought of the female corpses in the ditch. They'd all died from exhaustion of Yin. Could it be that their Yin Qi was gathered here?

There was so much Yin and Yang power gathered in the pools. To a cultivator from the Yin and Yang Field, this was the best cultivation land.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen observing the pools, Queen Lian smiled. “Dear, the existence of the Yin and Yang pools is the biggest secret of the Yin and Yang Palace. You can’t tell anyone about it!”

She was confident in her allure. If she and Zhang Ruochen made love once, he would definitely fall in love with that feeling and listen to her from now on.

She leaned toward Zhang Ruochen again. Suddenly, she seemed to have heard a telepathic message. She stopped instantly, expression growing serious.

After a moment of hesitation, she smiled again. “A large figure has come to the Yin and Yang Palace. I must go meet him. Wait here for me. I’ll be back soon.”

Whoosh!

She flashed and vanished from Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

He let out a long sigh and was very relieved. Obviously, he wouldn’t continue to wait here. He raced out immediately.

...

Ji Fanxin’s senior sister, Pill Spirit King, was already being released from the pagoda structure. Chang Fengxu and Ji Fanxin were doing the exchange.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, they were both surprised.

“It already...ended?”

Chang Fengxu found it unbelievable. He was a half-step Saint King, after all. No matter how fast he was, it had only been 15 minutes.

Ji Fanxin also thought that Zhang Ruochen had already done it with Queen Lian, so she pursed her lips with an apologetic expression.

Zhang Ruochen had a serious expression and sent Spiritual Power to Ji Fanxin. Don’t ask anything. Don’t say anything. Let’s get out of here first.

After a while, the two brought the unconscious Pill Spirit King out of the Euphoria Underground Palace. Qing Liaoya, who’d

been guarding the entrance, had already left.

The Evil Way cultivators were all walking toward somewhere hurriedly. It was the grandest pavilion.

All the demons were moving together.

This commotion was like an emperor had arrived. It seemed that an incredible figure truly had come to the Yin and Yang Palace.

Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin took this chance to leave with the Pill Spirit King.

Chapter 1598 - The Identity of the Man in Gold

Chapter 1598: The Identity of the Man in Gold

After walking out of Yin and Yang Palace, both Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin were relieved.

Ji Fanxin looked at Zhang Ruochen and apologized. "Sorry. It isn't that I didn't want to ambush Queen Lian, but there's almost no chance for us to get out of Yin and Yang Palace. It isn't worth the risk."

Zhang Ruochen looked solemn. He didn't say a word because he was in a bad mood.

One of the reasons was that Ji Fanxin didn't help him when he needed it the most, but the bigger reason was that he had realized the gap between him and great beings like Queen Lian. He didn't even stand a chance against her, no matter how many trump cards he had.

Their cultivations were too different.

Zhang Ruochen's greatest enemy, Shang Ziyan, was at least as powerful as Queen Lian, if not stronger.

Fortunately, he was cautious enough after coming to Truth Heavenly Domain, otherwise, he would be powerless if he ran into Shang Ziyan.

"I must become a saint king as soon as possible."

Zhang Ruochen felt that time was pressuring him.

Ji Fanxin didn't know what Zhang Ruochen was thinking of, and she still thought he looked so serious because of Queen Lian.

After a while, she took a rectangular box out of her space bracelet and handed it to Zhang Ruochen. "It was my fault this time, and I owe you a huge favor. This is a Masculine Flower

that's fifty thousand years old. It should make up your masculine Qi once you refine it."

Zhang Ruochen stopped thinking by himself after hearing that. He saw Ji Fanxin looking at him with comfort and concern, which suppressed his anger completely.

No wonder she's a young leader of a large field. She has so many treasures.

A Masculine Flower that was fifty thousand years old was very rare, and it was tremendously valuable, which could help Zhang Ruochen refine the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

Zhang Ruochen took the rectangular box and put it in his space ring. He then said, "Not so fast. Queen Lian received a message before she could start. She said it was someone prominent. Do you know who that is?"

Ji Fanxin thought for a bit and said, "It's got to be someone exceptional if Queen Lian took it so seriously. I need to go check who's come to Heavenly Saint Market."

Suddenly, Ji Fanxin looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, "Why did you take my Masculine Flower if your masculine Qi wasn't absorbed?"

Zhang Ruochen had no intention of giving the flower back. He said, "Why did you give them a Six-Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon, Water Moon Saint Cup knowing I'm going to attack Yin and Yang Palace? Didn't you just make them stronger?"

Ji Fanxin felt sorry about what she did to Zhang Ruochen. She didn't keep asking for the Masculine Flower back. Instead, she said, "I messed with Water Moon Saint Cup so that Queen Lian won't be able to refine it in a short time. It'll take her at least three years to completely have Water Moon Saint Cup under her control. And, if she isn't careful enough, the trick I did to Water Moon Saint Cup will injure her seriously."

Zhang Ruochen was thrilled.

Ji Fanxin had fully prepared before going to Yin and Yang Palace, and she had some skills and tricks.

She behaved that way in Yin and Yang Palace probably because of how much she hated that place. Also, she really cared about Queen Danling's safety.

After all, Ji Fanxin didn't have any family growing up. Queen Danling was probably the closest person to family she had.

After the journey in Yin and Yang Palace, they knew each other better. Although Zhang Ruochen behaved recklessly during a crisis as if he was putting her down, she might have been trapped without Zhang Ruochen going with her instead of saving Queen Danling.

Without a doubt, Zhang Ruochen was calmer and able to think more clearly in the most dangerous environment, which was something she should learn.

Ji Fanxin thought and said, "You should know better about Yin and Yang Palace after getting in yourself. What's your next plan?"

"It has nothing to do with you, does it?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to tell Ji Fanxin his plan at all.

After all, he wasn't that close to her.

If it were Ling Feiyu, she would've attacked Queen Lian without a second thought, and on the contrary, Ji Fanxin was hesitating thinking about the costs and benefits.

This was the difference between real friends and acquaintances.

Since they were only acquaintances, he couldn't tell her everything.

Ji Fanxin frowned and realized she'd left a bad impression to Zhang Ruochen, but she would do the same thing if it happened again.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen leave, Ji Fanxin sighed, moved her mind power and yelled, "Who is it? Get out."

Zhang Ruochen, who was walking away, stopped.

Ji Fanxin had better mind power than he did, so perhaps she'd found something irregular.

Zhang Ruochen released mind power and space domain, and he found that the space around them was covered by a strange power. His mind power only reached three hundred feet away.

“Someone used a treasure like Glass Sky-Sealing Dome to block me and Ji Fanxin. Did the powerful beings from Yin and Yang Palace notice our identity and catch up with us?”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his saint Qi, and then, he wielded a space crack to break the seal.

“Can’t believe it’s that ugly maid who found me. Is she also a great being?”

They then heard a familiar laugh.

And then, the man in gold wearing a mask walked out of the dark. He had broad shoulders, showing up in front of Zhang Ruochen and Ji Fanxin.

Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised. “It’s you. Do you still have your eyes on Queen Danling?”

The man in gold looked to Queen Danling and smiled, “I wanted to buy Queen Danling to be my slave, but I’m more curious about you now. How can a half-step saint king have a Six-Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon? You have more treasures, don’t you?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “So what? They are mine. Are you going to seize them?”

“Of course. This is the law of nature! And besides, you did two things today that deserve execution. Do you really think you can get out of here alive?”

Obviously, the man in gold was a powerful being, and he sounded overbearing.

“What did I do that deserves execution?”

The man in gold said, “Firstly, you shouldn’t compete with me for the slave, which made you deserve death the most.

“Secondly, you exposed a valuable like a Six-Yao Ten Thousand Patterns Saint Weapon when you’re still so weak. Do you really think you can survive that?”

Since he had said he would kill Zhang Ruochen, he wouldn't just stand there and wait for it to happen. He drew a line with his right hand and tore a crack that was five feet long in the space, wielding it toward the man in gold.

“You're a space monk...”

The man in gold was shocked. He immediately performed a sophisticated body technique, surging to the sky like a trace of golden light and dodging the space crack.

The black skull seemed to have guessed that he would surge to the sky. He slapped the head of the man in gold with a ghost claw.

The black skull was as powerful as a fifth-step saint king, and its claw looked like five bone mountains diving, crushing the ground and exerting lots of pressure on the man in gold, forcing him to show his real power.

“Roc Wings Spread.”

A pair of golden wings emerged from the back of the man in gold. The light shone upon the sky and land as if he was an ancient roc. The saint might descended on the ground.

Boom!

The man in gold waved his palm, clashing with the claw print from the black skull, knocking the black skull back.

The man in gold stood in the sky with his wings spread, looked to Zhang Ruochen like a Golden Roc Godly King and said, “Now that you know who I am, give me that bone scepter, then I can give you a fast death.”

Zhang Ruochen was dazed first, then he smiled. “It's Golden Roc Prince. Interesting, interesting. Seems like it's not my fight today. I can just stand by and enjoy the show.”

Zhang Ruochen then picked up Yi Emperor Bone Scepter, stepped aside with no intention of continuing to fight. He said, “He's your pursuer, then you can deal with him.”

Golden Roc Prince had a solid background and identity, and he was a grandson of a God. Besides, he was also very powerful

himself. Even if the half-step saint king practiced Way of Time, he should at least be scared of him.

Also, why did he say something that didn't seem to make sense at all?

Just as Golden Roc Prince was confused, he looked to the ugly girl near him, dazed.

That ugly girl suddenly became an ethereal woman, engulfed in light rain. It was Hundred Flower Fairy, Ji Fanxin, the girl from his dreams.

Chapter 1599 - Skull

Chapter 1599: Skull

With the Gold Roc Prince's identity, status, and cultivation, he'd seen every type of beauty.

The reason why he tried so hard in pursuing the Fairy Baihua was partly because he indeed fell in love at first sight and was mesmerized. But more important, the Fairy Baihua wasn't only pretty. She was also the leader of the younger generation of the Thousand Pistil Field. She was qualified to become a god and had the strong support of the Datura Flower Goddess. She had the stunning ability to make divine medicine grow ten times faster.

The God Roc Prince was a top pride of the Gold Roc Race. He was the grandson of a god, the son of a Supreme Saint, and had a very high status.

However, the Gold Roc Race's bloodline was very strong. There were many strong Deities and princes. A few of them were at his level.

If he could get the Baihua Fairy, then he could have his grandfather—the god—place importance on him. He would receive more resources and surpass the others to become the future ruler of the Gold Roc Race.

He could only improve his status by possessing a powerful wife.

But after countless years of pursuit, everything was destroyed in an instant.

Hundreds of thoughts flashed past the Gold Roc Prince's mind. Suddenly, he realized something and a pleasantly surprised expression appeared on his face. "Oh, it was you. That's great. Now I'm relieved! I'd planned on using all my saint stones to rescue the Pill Spirit King and bring her back to Hundred Flower Palace. Haha, seems like it was unnecessary."

“Oh?” Ji Fanxin asked. “Would you really have brought Senior Sister back?”

“Of course,” the Gold Roc Prince replied seriously. “I knew early on that she is like a sister to you. I would rescue her even if I had to give up my life.”

Actually, he'd wanted to buy the Pill Spirit King because he couldn't get Ji Fanxin and wanted to use her as Ji Fanxin's replacement to fulfil his desires.

He'd never thought about bringing the Pill Spirit King to the Hundred Flower Palace to get on Ji Fanxin's good side. Not only would doing that offend the Yin and Yang Palace, the fact that he went to that place would probably leave a bad impression for Ji Fanxin.

He wouldn't gain anything.

Now, he had no choice but to say that.

Ji Fanxin naturally didn't believe him. “But,” she said coldly, “I heard before that you're a regular guest of the Yin and Yang Palace.”

The Gold Roc Prince was speechless. He didn't know how to refute it.

“Senior Sister had been missing for months,” Ji Fanxin continued. “You couldn't have just known, right? Why didn't you go save her before? Why did you never tell me and instead let her be tortured for so long?”

The Gold Roc Prince finally realized that he couldn't fool Ji Fanxin anymore, so he stopped pretending. “Since you are ungrateful, then I have nothing more to say. But if news spreads that you broke into the Yin and Yang Palace with Zhang Ruochen, I'm afraid the Hundred Flower Palace and Thousand Pistil Field won't stay at peace.”

His words carried a heavy threat.

The Gold Roc Prince wasn't stupid to be this aggressive. In the fight earlier, he'd already guessed Zhang Ruochen's identity.

At the Gold Roc Prince and Ji Fanxin's level, they obviously knew some secrets. They knew that Zhang Ruochen was a troublesome figure and his enemies were terrifying. Anyone who got too close to him would bring bad luck to themselves.

The Gold Roc Prince wanted to threaten Ji Fanxin with this. He might be able to use this to go home with the beauty.

Ji Fanxin fell silent. She studied the Gold Roc Prince who was hovering in the air.

The Gold Roc Prince smiled. He was half-sure that Ji Fanxin would give in.

However, what he received was overwhelming murderous intent. Strong spiritual power crashed toward him in waves.

Oh no, Ji Fanxin wants to kill me.

Flapping his wings, the Gold Roc Prince escaped rapidly as a streak of golden light.

He was very fast, but Ji Fanxin was even faster. She struck with a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. Three layers of saintly light poured out. They were purple, green, and blue, and wrapped the saint weapon like three types of flames.

The might that radiated from the weapon caused the air to become 10,000 times heavier. Even Zhang Ruochen couldn't breathe from the weight.

Such terrifying cultivation. She activated the complete Third Yao power of a Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon in an instant. Zhang Ruochen had a deeper understanding of Ji Fanxin's abilities now.

After all, with Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation, he would need half a breath's time to activate the complete First Yao power of the Abyss Ancient Sword. If he wanted to activate the complete Second Yao power, it would take a dozen breaths' time.

Who would give you the time to accumulate power for ten breaths in a fight?

If he wanted to use half a breath's time to activate the First Yao power, he'd have to grasp every chance to succeed too.

But Ji Fanxin had instantaneously activated the Third Yao power. Zhang Ruochen's cultivation was nothing compared to her.

“You released the Third Yao power so quickly from the Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon...”

The Gold Roc Prince's expression changed drastically.

Before, he already knew that Ji Fanxin was very strong, but he didn't think that she was this shockingly powerful. She was much stronger than him.

If he'd known, he wouldn't have threatened her. With what he'd done for her before, he wouldn't have gotten in trouble if he just feigned ignorance about Zhang Ruochen's identity.

But it was too late for regret!

The Gold Roc Prince took out a ring-shaped Ten-thousand-pattern Saint Weapon and activated the complete Second Yao power. He wanted to block the gold hairpin-shaped weapon flying over from the back.

Thud!

As soon as they touched, the Gold Roc Prince's ring-shaped weapon was sent flying. His hands were torn apart by the gold hairpin's saintly power and became bloody.

With a boom, the hairpin slammed into the Gold Roc Prince's chest.

Just as he was about to get killed, divine patterns emerged on his skin and blocked the gold hairpin. He was only sent flying and suffered light injuries.

“I have a god's patterns carved into my body. It can protect me. You can't kill me. When I escape, it'll be your turn to beg me, haha!”

The Gold Roc Prince laughed maniacally. He spread his wings again and escaped into the distance.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, blinding divine light illuminated the surroundings, blinding the Gold Roc Prince's eyes. Blood flowed out of his

eyes. Terrifying heat started burning the Spiritual Qi in the air.

Bearing the pain in his eyes, he looked down and saw that a huge fire lotus had bloomed under him.

“Is this Ji Fanxin’s true form, the Reflection Lotus?”

Feeling terrified, he flew with his fastest speed.

But even as he’d flown far away and perhaps even flew out of Heavenly Capital Mountain, the fire lotus still hadn’t disappeared. It seemed to be boundless and stretch to the horizon. He couldn’t escape at all.

A while later, the divine patterns on him faded from the flames of the fire lotus. Finally, they disappeared completely.

Without the protection of the divine patterns, he was no longer Ji Fanxin’s match.

The Reflection Lotus just shook lightly and the power that was released tore the Gold Roc Prince into pieces. He transformed into a rain of blood.

After that, Ji Fanxin was finally slightly relieved. She looked toward Zhang Ruochen.

But there was no trace of him anymore.

While she was fighting the Gold Roc Prince, Zhang Ruochen had used a spatial crack to pierce the spatial seal here. He escaped and left this place.

Clearly, the treasure that the Gold Roc Prince used to seal the space was far weaker than the Glass Heaven Cover.

Zhang Ruochen naturally chose to leave immediately.

Because Ji Fanxin might kill him too.

She could only cut off all ties by killing Zhang Ruochen and preventing him from using this to threaten her in the future.

Ji Fanxin might not be such a heartless person, but Zhang Ruochen had to be careful. He couldn’t let her grasp his fate.

After Ji Fanxin left, Zhang Ruochen finally made a circle and returned to the surroundings of the Yin and Yang Palace.

“The Yin and Yang Palace is very strong, with dense formations and many strong cultivators. If I attack it with my current cultivation, I’ll most likely die. I should wait until I reach the Saint King Realm, comprehend the three images in the Truth Godly Palace and be better prepared before battling the top cultivators of the Evil Way.”

He would attack the Yin and Yang Palace sooner or later.

But he only had one life, so he had to be careful.

Changing his appearance, he put on a loose black robe and strode toward the Yin and Yang Palace. He prepared to bring Blackie out and then leave the Heavenly Capital Saint Market immediately, returning to the Mirror Fragrance Cliff Dojo.

Before he reached the gates, he was still standing in the middle of the street, when a black shadow burst out of the gates.

It was Blackie.

“Hey, Blackie, how come you came out now?”

Zhang Ruochen called out to Blackie with Spiritual Power.

Blackie recognized Zhang Ruochen in the loose black robe and instantly grew overjoyed. “Zhang Ruochen,” it said hurriedly. “Come with me. Come now.”

“You didn’t answer my question yet.” Zhang Ruochen felt that Blackie wasn’t being normal.

“Follow me out of Heavenly Capital Saint Market and I’ll tell you.”

Afraid that Zhang Ruochen would remain here, Blackie extended black feathers and wrapped around Zhang Ruochen, wanting to take him away forcefully.

This way, Zhang Ruochen grew even more suspicious. “What exactly happened?” he asked seriously. “Did you find something out in the Yin and Yang Palace?”

“Listen to me and leave now. When have I ever hurt you?” Blackie was panicking.

Just then, footsteps sounded from the Yin and Yang Palace and a dozen strong cultivators from the Evil Way walked out. Each

of them held a bloody head in their hands. They strung chains with metal hooks through the mouths of the heads and hung them from the gates of the Yin and Yang Palace.

Seeing the hanging heads, something exploded in Zhang Ruochen's mind. It was as if he was struck by lightning. His eyes widened.

“Second Senior Brother, Third Senior Brother, Fifth Senior Sister, Granny...”

The dozen heads were the second disciple of Sword Saint Xuanji, Zhu Hongtao, third disciple Wan Ke, fifth disciple Ling Shu, and Zhang Ruochen's servant from 800 years ago, Granny Baisu...

The other heads were all old members of the Sacred Central Empire. Each of them were Saints who'd fought alongside Zhang Ruochen at the headquarters of the Demonic Sect. They were his most loyal group of cultivators.

Chapter 1600 - Reason

Chapter 1600: Reason

Half an hour ago.

Because of an important being's coming, all the evil beings in Yin and Yang Palace stopped comprehending the pictures of the Way of Truth or stopped doing whatever they were doing, heading toward the most towering Senwei Palace.

There were hundreds of great beings gathering in Senwei Palace.

The weakest ones were absolute saints, and some were powerful saint kings who represented the best of their large fields. They were all wild and intractable, but now, they were all sitting in their seats, behaving themselves.

The leaders of Yin and Yang Palace, 'Queen Lian' and 'King Flame,' the leader of Black Demon Field, 'Qiong Ling' and the leader of Thousand Devil Field, 'Xie Cheng,' sat in the main seats. Above them sat a silver-haired man wearing three-colored armor.

That man looked twenty years old, wearing a three-feather crimson hat, looking regal, contrary to the hostile evil beings in the palace.

If Zhang Ruochen were here, he would've recognized him, Shang Ziyan, the leader of Merits Godly Palace.

Behind Shang Ziyan were 'Fire Soul Girl,' 'Wood Soul Girl' and 'Mud Soul Girl,' looking like three maidens walking out of a beautiful scroll.

Wang Xu, who was ranked the seventh on the 'Saints Merits Rank,' was sitting near Shang Ziyan with a smiley face, tasting a saint wine called 'Heavenly Nobility.'

'Qiong Ling,' the leader of Black Demon, stood up, looked around the devils and said, "Ziyan's coming to Yin and Yang

Palace is top secret. If anyone dares say a word to others, I'll make his life a living hell."

Qiong Ling was known to be ruthless and cruel. That assertion intimidated all the evil beings sitting down there.

Shang Ziyan said, smiling, "Don't be so serious, Qiong Ling. I came here to meet them myself. Even if someone else learns about it, it'll be my fault, not theirs.

The beings from the evil way weren't stupid. They knew that it would end horribly for them if someone exposed the secret, even though Shang Ziyan had claimed all the responsibility.

Shang Ziyan then said, "Actually, I came to Yin and Yang Palace because I heard a calamity is coming, so I accepted Qiong Ling's invitation to help you with it."

Boom!

Shang Ziyan had just dropped a bomb on Senwei Palace.

"A calamity? What does he mean? Why didn't I know?"

"Yin and Yang Palace has been in Heavenly Capital Saint Market for tens of thousands of years, and there were enemies attacking it once in a while, but they all failed. We did run into some grave dangers before, but we survived all of them."

"Yin and Yang Palace is prominent with a great many powerful beings. We even have 'Massive Heavenly Net Formation' to protect us. How are we going to suffer from a calamity?"

...

All the evil beings were discussing, only prominent beings like Queen Lian, King Flame, and Xie Cheng remained calm, as they'd figured what calamity Shang Ziyan meant.

Qiong Ling stood up and said, "About twenty days ago, I received news from a spy from Black Demon Field that Zhang Ruochen arrived in Heavenly Capital Saint Market."

"Zhang Ruochen? The person from Guanghan Field who's ranked first on the 'Saints Merits Rank'?" a half-step saint king with a crocodile head asked.

“Correct.”

Hearing Qiong Ling’s answers, the monks from the evil way who hadn’t received the news beforehand were all nervous.

Zhang Ruochen’s reputation preceded him now. He took back Jingxiang Cliff Dojo right after he came to Truth Heavenly Domain, killing dozens of great beings from Cloud Field, including Bai Ran who had complete body constitution, and King Yi, who was a fourth-step saint king.

Almost everyone was intimidated by Zhang Ruochen.

Now that Zhang Ruochen had arrived in Heavenly Capital Saint Market, he would definitely aim at attacking Yin and Yang Palace as the priest of the Moon Goddess.

Some of the powerful beings from the evil way had known beforehand, so they still looked chill.

Blue Fang, who was ranked seventy-third on the ‘Saints Merits Rank,’ sneered, “Are you trying to scare us, Lord Ziyang? Zhang Ruochen’s indeed a force to be reckoned with, but how can he himself bring a calamity to Yin and Yang Palace?”

A saint king from the evil way followed. “Even if Zhang Ruochen has the godly power from Moon Goddess, after ‘All Lives Equal,’ there’re still many powerful beings who can take him down themselves.”

“Besides, there’s Massive Heavenly Net Formation in Yin and Yang Palace. Even a seventh-step saint king will be trapped here, not to mention a half-step saint king like him.”

All the monks from the evil way nodded.

If they were only half-step saint kings, they would have a legit reason to fear Zhang Ruochen.

However, they were saint kings who had refined much longer than Zhang Ruochen. Even if their cultivation was only at half-step-saint-king level, their saint spells and comprehension of the Way of Truth far surpassed Zhang Ruochen’s. They didn’t need to be intimidated by Zhang Ruochen at all.

A fourth-step-saint-king creature from the Scorpion Race grimaced and said, "I heard Zhang Ruochen killed King Yi from Cloud Field because of the help of a powerful sword warrior. After 'All Lives Equal', Zhang Ruochen's just as powerful as King Yi. I'm able to suppress him myself."

"If he actually arrives at Yin and Yang Palace, I'll take care of him. Leave him to me."

Shang Ziyan didn't keep talking after the discussion of all the monks from the evil way. "Sounds like you don't know the power of a Time and Space Manipulator."

Everyone immediately became speechless after Shang Ziyan started to talk.

Shang Ziyan said, "You guys all think it's only been a month since Zhang Ruochen's last battle, but to Zhang Ruochen, who has the time power, he might've refined for several months, or even several years already. Even I can't figure out his power now."

Being reminded of Zhang Ruochen's identity as a 'Time and Sapce Manipulator,' the monks from the evil way who were fearless all stopped laughing.

Shang Ziyan said, "It's only a matter of time before Zhang Ruochen comes attack Yin and Yang Palace. Perhaps he's not strong enough to conquer Yin and Yang Palace now, but what about in the future? If he refines in Truth Heavenly Domain for another three to five years, even I can't guarantee I could suppress him, not to mention you. Will you still be so light-hearted then?"

"Zhang Ruochen's ruthless. He killed countless saints from the Shatuo Seven Fields in Zuling Field, and he annihilated all the monks from Cloud Field in Jingxiang Cliff Dojo. I heard he even killed the previous heir of Guanghan Field, Wu Hao, to be the leader of his generation.

"If he has his eyes on you guys, he'll definitely slay you all."

All the monks felt a great pressure hearing what Shang Ziyan said, sweating.

The pressure came from Zhang Ruochen.

Queen Lian, King Flame and Xie Cheng were still very calm. They were perceptive enough to see that Shang Ziyan wanted to team up with Yin and Yang Palace to get rid of Zhang Ruochen.

Which was mutually beneficial, so they kept quiet and saw what Shang Ziyan's next plan was.

“We need to get rid of him now. We can't risk him getting stronger.

“Heavenly Capital Saint Market is enormous. It's not easy to find him.

“Zhang Ruochen is great at transforming his look, and he masters space transportation. It's easier to catch a seventh-step saint king than him.”

Qiong Ling said, “I've lost contact with the spy from Black Demon Field. He's probably exposed himself and gotten killed, otherwise, he could've told us where Zhang Ruochen is.”

Shang Ziyan smiled. “We can force him to show up.”

“What plan do you have?”

Whoosh!

Shang Ziyan waved his sleeves, and a cluster of saint light was released. More than ten bloody human heads were put on the desk.

“I came to Yin and Yang Palace bringing gifts for Zhang Ruochen. Let's see whether he's going to claim them or not.”

Shang Ziyan stroked his nose, and he couldn't stand the smell coming out of the human heads. Everyone could tell that he was smiling smugly.

Shang Ziyan spent a lot of energy and time trying to ambush Zhang Ruochen. However, not only did he fail, but also he got King Hun, Golden Soul Girl, and Water Soul Girl killed by Zhang Ruochen.

After that, he spent a great amount of money hiring Heavenly Kill, the most prominent assassination organization in Heaven

World, to kill any monk related to Zhang Ruochen.

Although those monks all stayed in Shatuo Heavenly Domain and we're protected by supreme saints from Kunlun's Field, the assassins from Heavenly Kill spread everywhere. Even Gods weren't able to kill them.

At the start, the seniors from Kunlun's Field didn't have any defense, so Heaven Kill easily killed several saints. Even saint kings and supreme saints were hit, some of them being severely injured.

Which alerted Empress Chi Yao, antagonizing her.

She killed more than fifty assassins from Heavenly Kill in one day by herself, including a supreme saint.

Gods could do whatever they wanted to assassins from Heavenly Kill in their own fields.

However, they couldn't take actions after leaving the saint domain of their own fields.

The counteraction intimidated Heavenly Kill, stalling their actions.

However, Heavenly Kill was an organization that had assassinated a God before, so instead of giving up, they became more careful. They stopped sending supreme saints and saint kings, and instead, they sent out half saints and saints to sneak into Shatuo Heavenly Domain to carry out their mission. Their forces were feeble enough not to alert a God.

The assassination went from killing in public to being underground.

The monks from Kunlun's Field also became very cautious, so the assassins from Heavenly Kill found it way harder to succeed.

Blackie, Nine Heavenly Maiden, and Qing Xiao told Zhang Ruochen all of this three days later in Jingxiang Cliff Dojo.

Three days ago, Zhang Ruochen got so furious that he almost lost his mind seeing the heads hanging outside Yin and Yang Palace.

Before Zhang Ruochen took actions, Blackie sealed all his meridians and took him back to Jingiang Cliff Dojo.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the ground, bound by a Saint-binding Chain, and said as calmly as possible, "Let me go."

Blackie shook its cat head and said, "I can't. The side effects of Joy and Anger Pill in your body haven't gone yet. Who knows that you're going to do if I let you go?"

"You're not letting me go either, brother?" Zhang Ruochen looked to Qing Xiao.

The news that 'more than ten heads were hung outside Yin and Yang Palace and beaten' had been spread to the entire Truth Heavenly Domain, not to mention there were saint souls screaming inside the heads.

Expecting Zhang Ruochen to go insane, Qing Xiao and Nine Heavenly Maiden rushed to Jingxiang Cliff Dojo, trying to stop him from doing something stupid.

Even Ling Feiyu, who was completing tasks, came back as soon as possible.

Ling Feiyu was sitting a short distance away, polishing her Heaven-Burier Sword. She was as furious as Zhang Ruochen.

She received news that her father, Ling Xiu, was also attacked, getting severely injured.